

A

T R E A T I S E

C O N C E R N I N G

RELIGIOUS AFFECTIONS.

I N T H R E E P A R T S.

PART I. Concerning the Nature of the AFFECTIONS, and their Importance in RELIGION.

PART II. Shewing what are NO CERTAIN SIGNS that RELIGIOUS AFFECTIONS are GRACIOUS, or that they are NOT.

PART III. Shewing what ARE DISTINGUISHING SIGNS of truly gracious and HOLY AFFECTIONS.

By JONATHAN EDWARDS, A. M.
And Pastor of the first Church at Northampton.

Lev. ix. ult. and x. 1, 2. *And there came a fire out from before the Lord,—upon the altar;—which when all the people saw, they shouted, and fell on their faces. And Nadab and Abihu—offered strange fire before the Lord, which he commanded them not: and there went out fire from the Lord, and devoured them, and they died before the Lord.*

Cant. ii. 12, 13. *The flowers appear on the earth, the time of the singing of birds is come, and the voice of the turtle is heard in our land. The fig-tree putteth forth her green figs, and the vines with the tender grape give a good smell. Ver. 15. Take us the foxes, the little foxes which spoil the vines: for our vines have tender grapes.*

ELIZABETH-TOWN:

Printed by SHEPARD KOLLOCK, for ROBERT HODGE,
No. 237, Queen-Street, NEW-YORK.

M,DCC,LXXXVII.

1787

T H E

P R E F A C E.

THERE is no question whatsoever, that is of greater importance to mankind, and that it more concerns every individual person to be well resolved in, than this, *What are the distinguishing qualifications of those that are in favour with God, and intitled to his eternal rewards?* Or, which comes to the same thing, *What is the nature of true religion? and wherein do lie the distinguishing notes of that virtue and holiness, that is acceptable in the sight of God?* But though it be of such importance, and though we have clear and abundant light in the word of God to direct us in this matter, yet there is no one point, wherein professing Christians do more differ one from another. It would be endless to reckon up the variety of opinions in this point, that divide the Christian world; making manifest the truth of that of our Saviour, *Strait is the gate, and narrow is the way, that leads to life, and few there be that find it.*

The consideration of these things has long engaged me to attend to this matter, with the utmost diligence and care, and exactness of search and inquiry, that I have been capable of: it is a subject on which my mind has been peculiarly intent, ever since I first entered on the study of divinity.—But as to the success of my inquiries, it must be left to the judgment of the reader of the following treatise.

I am sensible it is much more difficult to judge impartially of that which is the subject of this discourse, in the midst of the dust and smoke of such a state of controversy, as this land is now in, about things of this nature: as it is more difficult to write impartially, so it is more difficult to read impartially.—Many will probably be hurt in their spirits, to find so much that appertains to religious affection, here condemned: and perhaps indignation and contempt will be excited in others, by finding so much here justified and approved. And it may be, some will be ready to charge me with inconsistency with myself, in so much approving some things, and so much condemning others; as I have found, this has always been objected to me by some, ever since the beginning of our late controversies about religion. It is a hard thing to be a hearty zealous friend of what has been *good* and glorious, in the late extraordinary appearances,

appearances, and to rejoice much in it; and at the same time, to see the evil and pernicious tendency of what has been *bad*, and earnestly to oppose that. But yet, I am *humbly*, but *fully* persuaded, we shall never be in the way of truth, nor go on in a way acceptable to God, and tending to the advancement of Christ's kingdom, till we do so. There is indeed something very mysterious in it, that so much good, and so much bad, should be mixed together in the *church of God*: as it is a mysterious thing, and what has puzzled and amazed many a good Christian, that there should be that which is so divine and precious, as the saving grace of God, and the new and divine nature, dwelling in the same heart, with so much corruption, hypocrisy, and iniquity, in a *particular saint*. Yet neither of these, is more mysterious than real. And neither of them is a new or rare thing. It is no new thing, that much false religion should prevail, at a time of great reviving of true religion; and that at such a time, multitudes of hypocrites should spring up among true saints. It was so in that great reformation, and revival of religion, that was in Josiah's time; as appears by Jer. iii. 10. and iv. 3, 4. and also by the great apostasy that there was in the land, so soon after his reign. So it was in that great out-pouring of the Spirit upon the Jews, that was in the days of *John the Baptist*; as appears by the great apostasy of that people, so soon after so general an awakening, and the temporary religious comforts and joys of many; John v. 35. "Ye were willing for a season to rejoice in his light." So it was in those great commotions that were among the multitude, occasioned by the preaching of Jesus Christ: *Of the many that were then called, but few were chosen*; of the multitude that were roused and affected by his preaching, and at one time or other appeared mightily engaged, full of admiration of Christ, and elevated with joy, but few were true disciples, that stood the shock of the great trials that came afterwards, and endured to the end: many were like the stony ground, or thorny ground; and but few, comparatively, like the good ground. Of the whole heap that was gathered, great part was chaff, that the wind afterwards drove away; and the heap of wheat that was left, was comparatively small; as appears abundantly, by the history of the New Testament. So it was in that great out-pouring of the Spirit that was in the apostles days; as appears by Matth. xxiv. 10—13. Gal. iii. 1. and iv. 11, 15. Phil. ii. 21. and iii. 18, 19. and the two epistles to the Corinthians, and many other

other parts of the New Testament. And so it was in the great *reformation* from Popery.—It appears plainly to have been in the visible church of God, in times of great reviving of religion, from time to time, as it is with the fruit-trees in the spring; there are a multitude of blossoms; all which appear fair and beautiful, and there is a promising appearance of young fruits: but many of them are but of short continuance, they soon fall off, and never come to maturity.

Not that it is to be supposed that it will always be so: for though there never will, in this world, be an entire purity; either in particular saints, in a perfect freedom from mixtures of corruption; or in the church of God, without any mixture of hypocrites with saints, and counterfeit religion, and false appearances of grace, with true religion and real holiness: yet, it is evident, that there will come a time of much greater purity in the church of God, than has been in ages past; it is plain by these texts of scripture, *Is.* lii. 1. *Ezek.* xlv. 6, 7, 9. *Joel* iii. 17. *Zech.* xiv. 21. *Psal.* lxxix. 32, 35, 36. *Is.* xxxv. 8, 10. *chap.* iv. 3, 4. *Ezek.* xx. 38. *Psal.* xxxvii. 9, 10, 11, 29. And one great reason of it will be, that at that time, God will give much greater light to his people, to distinguish between true religion and its counterfeits, *Mal.* iii. 3. “And he shall sit as a refiner” and purifier of silver: and he shall purify the sons of Levi, “and purge them as gold and silver, that they may offer to the Lord an offering in righteousness.” With *vers.* 18. which is a continuation of the prophecy of the same happy times, “Then shall ye return, and discern between the righteous and the wicked; between him that serveth God, and him that serveth him not.”

It is by the mixture of counterfeit religion with true, not discerned and distinguished, that the devil has had his greatest advantage against the cause and kingdom of Christ, all along, hitherto. It is plainly by this means, principally, that he has prevailed against all revivings of religion, that ever have been, since the first founding of the Christian church. By this, he hurt the cause of Christianity, in, and after the apostolic age, much more than by all the persecutions of both Jews and Heathens: the apostles, in all their epistles, shew themselves much more concerned at the former mischief, than the latter. By this, Satan prevailed against the reformation, begun by Luther, Zuinglius, &c. to put a stop to its progress, and bring it into disgrace; ten times more, than by all those bloody, cruel, and
before

before unheard-of persecutions of the church of Rome. By this principally, has he prevailed against revivals of religion, that have been in our nation since the reformation. By this he prevailed against New-England, to quench the love, and spoil the joy of her espousals, about an hundred years ago. And I think, I have had opportunity enough to see plainly, that by this, the devil has prevailed against the late, great revival of religion in New-England, so happy and promising in its beginning: here most evidently has been the main advantage Satan has had against us; by this he has foiled us; it is by this means that the daughter of Zion in this land, now lies on the ground, in such piteous circumstances, as we now behold her; with her garments rent, her face disfigured, her nakedness exposed, her limbs broken, and weltering in the blood of her own wounds, and in no wise able to arise; and this, so quickly after her late great joys and hopes: Lam. i. 17. "Zion spreadeth forth her hands, and there is none to comfort her: the Lord hath commanded concerning Jacob, that his adversaries shall be round about him: Jerusalem is as a menstruous woman among them." I have seen the devil prevail the same way, against two great revivings of religion in this country.—Satan goes on with mankind, as he began with them. He prevailed against our first parents, and cast them out of paradise, and suddenly brought all their happiness and glory to an end, by appearing to be a friend to their happy paradisaic state, and pretending to advance it to higher degrees. So the same cunning serpent, that beguiled Eve through his subtilty, by perverting us from the simplicity that is in Christ, hath suddenly prevailed to deprive us of that fair prospect, we had a little while ago, of a kind of paradisaic state of the church of God in New-England.

After religion has revived in the church of God, and enemies appear, people that are engaged to defend its cause, are commonly most exposed, where they are least sensible of danger. While they are wholly intent upon the opposition that appears openly before them, to make head against that, and do neglect carefully to look all round them, the devil comes behind them, and gives a fatal stab unseen; and has opportunity to give a more home stroke, and wound the deeper, because he strikes at his leisure, and according to his pleasure, being obstructed by no guard or resistance.

And so it is likely ever to be in the church, whenever religion

gion revives remarkably, till we have learned well to distinguish between true and false religion, between saving affections and experiences, and those manifold fair shews, and glistering appearances, by which they are counterfeited; the consequences of which, when they are not distinguished, are often inexpressibly dreadful. *By this means*, the devil gratifies himself, by bringing it to pass, that that should be offered to God, by multitudes, under a notion of a pleasing acceptable service to him that is indeed above all things abominable to him. *By this means*, he deceives great multitudes about the state of their souls; making them think they are something, when they are nothing; and so eternally undoes them: and not only so, but establishes many in a strong confidence of their eminent holiness, who are in God's sight, some of the vilest of hypocrites. *By this means*, he many ways damps and wounds religion in the hearts of the saints, obscures and deforms it by corrupt mixtures, causes their religious affections wofully to degenerate, and sometimes for a considerable time, to be like the *manna*, that bred worms and stank; and dreadfully ensnares and confounds the minds of others of the saints, and brings them into great difficulties and temptation, and entangles them in a wilderness, out of which they can by no means extricate themselves. *By this means*, Satan mightily encourages the hearts of open enemies of religion, and strengthens their hands, and fills them with weapons, and makes strong their fortresses; when at the same time, religion and the church of God lie exposed to them, as a city without walls. *By this means*, he brings it to pass, that men work wickedness under a notion of doing God service, and to sin without restraint, yea with earnest forwardness and zeal, and with all their might. *By this means*, he brings in even the friends of religion, insensibly to themselves, to do the work of enemies, by destroying religion in a far more effectual manner than open enemies can do, under a notion of advancing it. *By this means*, the devil scatters the flock of Christ, and sets them one against another, and that with great heat of spirit, under a notion of zeal for God; and religion by degrees, degenerates into vain jangling; and during the strife, Satan leads both parties far out of the right way, driving each to great extremes, one on the right hand, and the other on the left, according as he finds they are most inclined, or most easily moved and swayed, till the right path in the middle is almost wholly neglected. And in the midst of this confusion,

confusion, the devil has great opportunity to advance his own interest, and make it strong in ways innumerable, and get the government of all into his own hands, and work his own will. And by what is seen of the terrible consequences of this counterfeit religion, when not distinguished from true religion, God's people in general have their minds unhinged and unsettled, in things of religion, and know not where to set their foot, or what to think or do; and many are brought into doubts, whether there be any thing at all in religion; and heresy, and infidelity, and atheism greatly prevail.

Therefore, it greatly concerns us to use our utmost endeavours, clearly to discern, and have it well settled and established, wherein true religion does consist. Till this be done, it may be expected that great revivings of religion will be but of short continuance: till this be done, there is but little good to be expected of all our warm debates, in conversation and from the press, not knowing clearly and distinctly what we ought to contend for.

My design is to contribute my mite, and use my best (however feeble) endeavours to this end, in the ensuing Treatise: wherein it must be noted, that my design is somewhat diverse from the design of what I have formerly published, which was to shew *the distinguishing marks of a work of the Spirit of God*, including both his common and saving operations; but what I aim at now, is to shew the nature and signs of the *gracious operations* of God's Spirit, by which they are to be distinguished from all things whatsoever that the minds of men are the subjects of, which are not of a saving nature. If I have succeeded in this my aim, in any tolerable measure, I hope it will tend to promote the interest of religion. And whether I have succeeded to bring any light to this subject, or no, and however my attempt may be reproached, in these captious, censorious times, I hope in the mercy of a gracious and righteous God, for the acceptance of the sincerity of my endeavours; and hope also for the candour and prayers of the true followers of the meek and charitable Lamb of God.

S U B.

SUBSCRIBERS NAMES.

A.

- R**EVEREND Burgefs Allifon, A. M. Bordentown, New-Jerfey,
 Mr. Abijah Abbot, New-York,
 Thomas Allen, bookfeller, New-York, 4 books,
 Robert Armftrong, Orange county,
 Thomas Allen, jun. fludent of Harvard College, Cambridge,
 Nathaniel Andrufs, cooper, Newark,
 Shelly Arnett, printer, New-Brunfwick,
 Reuben Ayers, Poundridge,
 Silas Ayers, Morris county,
 Ebenezer Ady, Columbia county,
 Samuel Adams, fchoolmafter, Amwell.

B.

- Rev. Benoni Bradnor, Blooming-Grove,
 Rev. Ifaac Blauvelt, Dutchefs county,
 Dr. Arthur Brew, Philadelphia,
 Mr. John Baffett, fludent of divinity, New-York,
 Walter Bicker, hatter, do.
 Henry Brewfter, Blooming-Grove,
 Nathan Brewfter, John's Town,
 Samuel Beach, Charleflon, South-Carolina, 12 Books,
 Ambrofe Barnaby, fchoolmafter, Suffolk county,
 David Baldwin, jun. Wardfelfon,
 Leonard Bleecker, merchant, New-York,
 Ifaac Beers, New-Haven, 7 books,
 David Baldwin, Wardfelfon,
 Zophar Baldwin, do.
 Ichabod Baldwin, do.
 Silas Baldwin, do.
 Jofeph Baldwin, do.
 Jeffe Baldwin, do.
 John Banks, officer of the culfloms, New-York,
 — Baffit, of the academy, Schenectady,
 John Burchan, Philadelphia,
 Benjamin Bennet, Bucks county, Pennsylvania,
 Daniel Baker, Effex county,

S U B S C R I B E R S N A M E S .

Mr. John Beers, Morris county,
 Jacob R. Bergen, Princeton,
 John Brittin, Baskenridge,
 Ebenezer Benjamin, Columbia county,
 Comfort Bailey, do.
 John Burr, do.
 David Beebe, do.
 Daniel Benjamin, do.
 Thomas Boum, do.
 Phil. Bebee, do.
 William A. Babcock, do.
 William Boftwick, do.
 Lewis Beebe, Pawlett,
 John Burnett, Morris-Town,
 John Bryan, Somerset county,
 Joseph Bevers, Hunterdon county,
 David Bishop, Ringwood, Hunterdon county.

C.

Rev. Jedidiah Chapman, Orange-Dale,
 Rev. John Camp, Columbia county,
 Rev. Henry Channing, New-London,
 Dr. James Cogswell, New-York,
 Mrs. Mercy Crane, Crane-Town,
 Sarah Crane, Newark,
 Mr. Matthias Crane, hatter, New-York,
 Matthias Cazier, A. B. Orange-Dale,
 Joseph Campbell, Horseneck,
 Moses Newel Combs, Newark,
 Peter Cole, tanner, New-York,
 John D. Coc, Orange county,
 Albert Cooper, do.
 John Cox, do.
 Daniel Coc, do.
 Arthur Conolly do.
 David Crosby, jun. Fredericksburgh,
 Henry Cronk, West Point,
 James Crommeline, Brunswick,
 James Carpenter, merchant, Goshen,
 John Collins, Wardseffon,
 John Chadler, Blooming-Grove,
 Daniel Cornogg, Chester county, Pennsylvania,
 James Camp, Newark,
 William Coffin, Essex county,

S U B S C R I B E R S N A M E S.

John Conger, Esq. Woodbridge,
 Daniel Cook, Esq. Mendham,
 Silas Condict, Esq. Morris-Town,
 Joshua Coit, Esq. New-London,
 Mr. David Crane, (son of Stephen) Elizabeth-Town,
 John Chandler, do.
 Joseph Cree, printer,
 Elisha Collins, Columbia county,
 John Cooper, Morris county,
 John Cooper, Woodbridge,
 Joshua Corshon, high sheriff of Hunterdon county.

D.

Rev. John Duryee, Raritan,
 Rev. Eliphaz Dazey, Kent county, state of Delaware,
 Mr. Thomas Dobson, bookseller, Philadelphia,
 Elijah Dod, Horseneck,
 George T. Duryee, Long-Island,
 John Decker, Ulster county,
 John Dod, jun. Wardswesson,
 Isaac Dodd, Esq. do.
 Mr. Cornelius Davis, New-York,
 Thomas Davis, Newark,
 Silvanus Davis, do.
 Johannes Decker, Blooming-Grove,
 Timothy Dunning, merchant, Gothen,
 William Durell, New-York,
 Matthias Day, printer,
 Peter Dumont, Esq. New-Brunswick, 12 books,
 Mr. John Darbe, M. D. Morris county,
 John Davis, Columbia county,
 Nicholas Dudley,
 William Downington, Elizabeth-Town,
 Nicholas Dubois, Somersfet county.

E.

Rev. Jonathan Elmer, New-Providence,
 Miss Mary Ellis, South-Carolina,
 Mr. Benjamin Egbert, merchant, New-York,
 James R. English, merchant. New-Jersey,
 Abraham Eights, Albany,
 Abel Eaton, Columbia county.

F.

Rev. Mr. Fordham, Black River,
 Miss Mary Farrill, English Town,

S U B S C R I B E R S N A M E S.

Mr. John Fulsom, Albany.
 Samuel Frost, Morris county,
 Joshua Finch, Columbia county,
 Jabez Fox,
 David Frothingham, printer,
 John Frazee, Morris county.

G.

Mr. Hugh Gaine, bookfeller and printer, New-York, 7 books,
 Thomas C. Green, bookfeller, New-London, 7 books,
 Joseph Gould, sen. Horseneck,
 Joseph Gould, jun. do.
 William Gould, do.
 John Gould, do.
 Stephen Gurnee, sen. Orange county,
 Stephen Gurnee, jun. do.
 Moses Gale, do.
 George George, Montgomery county, Pennsylvania,
 Matthew Green, printer,
 Peter Gary, Amwell, New-Jersey,
 Daniel Graham, Esq. Ulster county.

H.

Reuben Hopkens, Esq. attorney at law, Goshen, 12 books,
 Messrs. Hudson and Goodwin, printers, Hartford, 12 books,
 Joseph Harrison, Esq. Horseneck,
 Mrs. Jane Haviland, Elizabeth-Town,
 Mr. Thomas Holme, Penneypeck, Pennsylvania,
 Daniel Hitchcock, house-carpenter, New-York,
 Nathaniel W. Howell, Blooming-Grove,
 Joseph Hunt, Orange county,
 Benjamin Halstead, do.
 Christian Hurtin, Goshen,
 Timothy Hutton, New-York,
 Silas Hough, Bucks county, Pennsylvania,
 Major John Holme, Penneypeck, Pennsylvania,
 Mr. Ichabod B. Halfey, student of physic, Scotch Plains,
 John Hendricks, Elizabeth-Town,
 Daniel Halfey, do.
 Thomas Hurlbutt, Columbia county,
 Pat. Hamilton, do.
 Elisha Holliften, do.
 Gabriel Hoff, Baptist Town, New-Jersey,
 Joseph Hart, Kingwood township, Hunterdon county,
 Ezekiel Holmes, Greenwich, New-Jersey.

S U B S C R I B E R S N A M E S.

I.

- Rev. Samuel Jones, D. D. Pastor of the Baptist church, Pen-
neypeck, Pennsylvania,
Mr. John Johnson, King's county,
Elijah Jones, merchant, Albany county,
Abraham Joralemon, Crane-Town,
John Jenkins, Dorchester, Massachusetts,
Thomas Jackson, Columbia county,
Jonathan Jacobs, do.
Levy Jones, do.
John Ingraham, do.
John Johnson, Newark.

K.

- Rev. Nathan Ker, A. M. Goshen,
Rev. Walter King,
Mr. Shepard Kollock, printer, Elizabeth-Town, 50 books,
Paul Khul, Hunterdon county,
Ebenezer C. Kilborn, New-York,
Daniel Kitchel, Morris-Town,
Nicholas Kortwright, jun.
Ebenezer Kingsbury.

L.

- Rev. William Linn, New-York,
Rev. John Lindsley, Orange county,
Dr. Joshua Lathrop, of Norwich, Connecticut,
Mrs. Katherine Linkleter,
Miss Jane Loxley, Philadelphia,
Gilbert Livingston, Esq. Poughkeepsie,
Mr. Samuel London, bookseller, New-York, 7 books,
Jasper Griffing, jun. Guilford, Connecticut,
Gabriel Ludlum, Goshen,
Aaron Lane, silversmith, Elizabeth-Town,
Jacob Lewis, Baskenridge,
Mel. Lathrop, Columbia county,
Amasa Learned, New-London,
Ebenezer Lester, do.
William Lowry, Alexandria, New-Jersey,

M.

- Rev. Dr. John Mason, New-York,
Rev. John McDonnald, V. D. M. Albany,
Jacob Martin, Esq. Middlesex, New-Jersey,
Elihu Marvine, Esq. Judge of Orange county,
Mr. William Macclure, Dutches county,

SUBSCRIBERS NAMES.

Col. Seth Marvine, Orange county,
 Capt. Samuel Morgan,
 Mr. James M'Coy, student of divinity, Orange-dale,
 Johannes Miller, Ulster county,
 Anthony Marvine, student of law, Goshen,
 William Mitchell, Chester county, Pennsylvania,
 James Muir, bookbinder, Philadelphia,
 Ephraim M'Call, Columbia county,
 Stephen M'Crea, New-York,
 Edward M'Gennifs.

N.

Mr. David Nichols, Newark,
 Samuel Nott.

O.

Rev. Uzal Ogden, Newark,
 Capt. Abraham Onderdonk, Orange county,
 Mr. Joseph Owen, of Bedford,
 Wilmot Oakley, Huntington, Long-Island,
 Michael Osbourne, Elizabeth-Town,
 — Oakley.

P.

Rev. James Proudfit, New-Perth,
 Mr. John Parsonett, Horseneck,
 Daniel Phœnix, merchant, New-York,
 John P. Pearfs, do.
 William Prichard, bookseller, Philadelphia, 7 books,
 Nathaniel Patten, bookseller, Hartford, 6 books,
 Samuel Phillips, Chester county, Pennsylvania,
 John Phillips, do. do.
 Thomas Prentice, Elizabeth-Town,
 John Pierfon, do.
 Francis Price, Esq. Suffex county,
 Mr. Stephen Palmer, Columbia county,
 David Phillips, do.
 William Pitinger, Hunterdon county.

R.

Rev. William Rogers, A. M. Philadelphia,
 Rev. Dirck Romeyn, V. D. M. Schenectady,
 Hon. David Ramsay, Esq. South-Carolina,
 Mr. Henry Rome, merchant, New-York.
 John Rossell, Orange county,
 Peter Read, do.
 Richard Robertson, tanner, New-York,

S U B S C R I B E R S N A M E S.

Mr. Abraham Raymond, Columbia county,
Gamaliel Ripley.

S.

Rev. John Shepard, Essex county, New-Jersey,
Rev. John Stevens, Columbia county,
Dr. Isaac Sherwood, Orange county,
Isaac Snowden, Esq. Philadelphia,
William Smith, Esq. St. George's Manor, Suffolk county,
Messrs. Smith and Phelps, bookfellers, in Hartford, 12 books,
Mr. Peter Studdiford, student in divinity, New-York,
James Saur, Orange county,
John Saur, jun. do.
Benjamin Saur, do.
Isaac Serjeant, Wardfession, 12 books,
Richard Sill, A. M. Albany,
John Sawyer, A. B. Orford, New-Hampshire,
Nathan Sheppard, Cumberland county, New-Jersey,
George Shaw, cabinet-maker, Philadelphia,
Archibald Stewart, Suffex county, 2 books,
Edward Savage Salem, Washington county,
James Seely, Poundridge,
Edward Scofield, Stanford,
Austen Smith, jun. do.
Peter Smith, Concord, Suffex county, New-Jersey,
Henry Squier, Essex county,
Edward Sherman, Columbia county,
Daniel Smith, do.
Ephraim Smith, do.
John Skinner, do.
Jonas Safford, Poultney.

T.

Henry Townsend, Esq. iron master, Orange county,
Mr. John Tobias, merchant, Albany county,
William Thompson, Esq. attorney at law, Orange county,
Lathrop Thomson, A. B. Windsor, Vermont,
Deacon Hezekiah Thomson, do. do.
Mr. Benjamin Thaw, Philadelphia,
Joseph Tatem, do.
Rulif Traphagen, Elizabeth-Town,
Nehemiah Teunis, do.
Aaron Thompson, schoolmaster, Essex county,
Philip Temple, Columbia county,
Malachi Thomas, do.

S U B S C R I B E R S N A M E S.

Mr. Jacob Tallman, Clark's-Town,
 Thomas Talmage, New-Brunswick.
 Zeb. Tracy.

U. & V.

Rev. Thomas Ustick, A. M. Philadelphia,
 Rev. William Van Horne, A. M. Scotch-Plains
 Lucas Van Beverhoudt, Esq. Morris county,
 Mr. Peter Vandervoort, jun.
 Beekman Van Beuren, merchant, New-York,
 Samuel Van Steinberg, do.
 Samuel Vail, Somersfet county.

W.

Rev. E. Westerlow, V. D. M. Albany,
 Rev. Moses C. Welch,
 Mr. Alexander Phœnix Waldron, New-York,
 John D. Witt, jun. Dutches county,
 Benjamin Wallace, of the city of Albany, merchant,
 J. W. Wilkin, A. B. Goshen,
 Major Jacob Wright, do.
 Ifaac Wheaton, Esq. Cumberland county, New-Jersey,
 Mr. Elbert Willet, Albany,
 William Watts, Bucks county, Pennsylvania,
 Thomas Woodruff, 3d.
 Stephen Wheeler, Elizabeth-Town,
 Jesse Woodruff, do.
 Seth Woodruff, do.
 John Wright, Mendham, Morris-county,
 Josiah Warner, Columbia-county,
 Luther Washburn, do.
 Stephen Webb,
 Maurice Wurts, Hunterdon county,
 John Wurts, Flanders, Morris county.

Y.

Mr. William Young, bookfeller, Philadelphia,
 James Yorke.

Z.

Mr. Christian Zabriskie, Bergen county.

T H E
L I F E

Of the Reverend

MR. JONATHAN EDWARDS.

P A R T I.

*Containing the History of his Life, from his BIRTH to his
SETTLEMENT in the work of the MINISTRY.*

MR. JONATHAN EDWARDS was born October 5, 1703, at Windsor, a town in Connecticut. His father was the Rev. Mr. Timothy Edwards, minister of the gospel on the east side of Connecticut river in Windsor. He began to reside and preach at Windsor in November 1694, but was not ordained until July, 1698. He died January 27, 1758, in the 89th year of his age, not two months before this his son. He was in the work of the ministry above fifty-nine years: And from his first beginning to reside and preach there, to his death, are above sixty-three years; and was able to attend on the work of the ministry and preach constantly until within a few years before his death. He was very universally esteemed and beloved as an upright, pious, exemplary man, and faithful minister of the gospel; and was greatly useful. He was born at Hartford in Connecticut, May 14, 1669, received the honours of the college at Cambridge in New-England, by having the degrees of Bachelor and Master of Arts given him the same day, July 4, 1694, one in the forenoon, and the other in the afternoon.

On the 6th day of November 1694, he was married to Mrs. Esther Stoddard, in the 23d year of her age, the daughter of the late famous Mr. Solomon Stoddard of Northampton; whose great parts and zeal for experimental religion are well known in all the churches in America; and will probably be transmitted to posterity yet unborn, by his valuable writings. They

lived together in the married state above sixty-three years. Mrs. Edwards was born June 2, 1672.

They had eleven Children: All which lived to adult years, viz. ten daughters, and this their only son and fifth child.*

Mr.

* As the following more large and particular account, of Mr. Edwards's ancestors may gratify some readers, it is inserted here in the Margin.

Mr. Edwards's grandfather was Mr. Richard Edwards. His first wife was Mrs. Elizabeth Tuttle, daughter of Mr. William Tuttle of New-Haven in Connecticut, and Mrs. Elis Tuttle his wife, who came out of Northamptonshire in England. His second wife was Mrs. Talcot, sister to governor Talcot: By his first wife he had seven children, the oldest of which was the Rev. Mr. Timothy Edwards of Windsor, his father, before mentioned. By his second wife Mrs. Talcot, he had six children.

The father of Mr. Richard Edwards was Mr. William Edwards, who came from England young and unmarried. His wife, Mrs. Agnes Edwards, who also came out of England, had two brothers in England, one of them Mayor of Exeter, and the other of Barnstable. Mr. William Edwards's father was the Rev. Mr. Rich. Edwards, minister of the gospel in London. He lived in Queen Elizabeth's day, and his wife Mrs. Anne Edwards assisted in making a ruff for the queen. After the death of Mr. Edwards she married to one Mr. James Cole. She with her second husband, and her son William Edwards came into America, and all died at Hartford in Connecticut.

Mr. Edwards's grandfather, (Mr. Solomon Stoddard, and his predecessor at Northampton) married Mrs. Mather, the relict of the Rev. Mr. Mather his predecessor, and the first minister at Northampton. Her maiden name was Esther Warham, daughter and youngest child of the Rev. Mr. John Warham, minister at Windsor in Connecticut, who came out of England, before which he was minister in Exeter in England: He had four children, all daughters; and Mrs. Warham survived him, and had two daughters by Mr. Newbury, her second husband.

Mrs. Esther Warham had three children by Mr. Mather, viz. Eunice, Warham and Eliakim. And she had twelve children by Mr. Stoddard, six sons and six daughters: Three of the sons died in infancy. The three that lived to adult years were Anthony, John and Israel. Israel died in prison in France. Anthony was the Rev. Mr. Anthony Stoddard, late minister of the Gospel at Woodbury

Mr. Edwards entered Yale College in the year 1716, and received the degree of Bachelor of Arts in September, 1720, a little before he was seventeen years old. He had the character of a sober youth, and a good scholar while he was a member of the college. In his second year at college, and thirteenth of his age, he read Locke on the human understanding, with great delight and profit. His uncommon genius, by which he was, as it were by nature, formed for closeness of thought and deep penetration, now began to exercise and discover itself. Taking that book into his hand, upon some occasion, not long before his death, he said to some of his select friends, who were then with him, That he was beyond expression entertained and pleased with it, when he read it in his youth at college; that he was as much engaged, and had more satisfaction and pleasure in studying it, than the most greedy miser in gathering up handfuls of silver and gold from some new discovered treasure.

Though he made good proficiency in all the arts and sciences, and had an uncommon taste for natural philosophy, which he cultivated to the end of his life, with that justness and accuracy of thought which was almost peculiar to him; yet moral philosophy or divinity was his favorite study. In this he early made great progress. He

bury in Connecticut, who lived to a great age, and was in the work of the ministry sixty years: He died September 6, 1760, in the eighty-second year of his age. John was the honourable John Stoddard, Esq. who lived at Northampton, and who often, especially in his younger years, served the town as their representative at the great and general court in Boston; and was long head of the county of Hampshire as their chief Colonel, and chief Judge of the court of common pleas: And he long served his majesty, and the province of the Massachusetts-Bay, as one of his Majesty's council. He was remarkable as a politician, and for his spirit of government; a wise counsellor, an upright and skilful judge, a steady and great friend to the interest of religion. He was a great friend and admirer of Mr. Edwards, and greatly strengthened his hands in the work of the ministry while he lived. A more particular account of the life and character of this truly great man may be seen in the sermon which Mr. Edwards preached and published on the occasion of his death.

Mr. Stoddard's father was Anthony Stoddard, Esq. of Boston, a zealous congregational man. He had five wives, the first of which, Mr. Stoddard's mother, was Mrs. Mary Downing, sister to Sir George Downing, whose other sister married Governor Bradstreet. Mr. Solomon Stoddard was their oldest child.

He lived at college near two years after he took his first degree, designing and preparing for the work of the ministry. After which, having passed the pre-requisite trials, he was licenced to preach the gospel as a candidate. And being pitched upon, and applied to by a number of ministers in New-England, who were intrusted to act in behalf of the English presbyterians at New-York, as a person to be sent to them, he complied with their request, and went to New-York the beginning of August, 1722; and preached there to very good acceptance about eight months. But by reason of the smallness of that society, and some special difficulties that attended it, he did not think they were in a capacity to settle a minister, with a rational prospect of answering the good ends proposed. He therefore left them, the next spring, and retired to his father's house; where he spent the summer in close study. He was indeed earnestly solicited by the people he had been among at New-York to return to them again; but for the reason just mentioned, he could not think himself in the way of his duty to gratify them.

In September, 1723, he received his degree of Master of Arts; about which time he had invitations from several congregations to come among them in order to his settlement in the work of the ministry; but being chosen tutor of Yale-College the next spring in the year 1724, being in the twenty first year of his age, he retired to the college, and attended the business of tutor there above two years.

While he was in this place, he was applied to by the people at Northampton, with an invitation to come and settle in the work of the ministry there, with his grandfather Stoddard, who by reason of his great age, stood in need of assistance. He therefore resigned his tutorship, in September, 1726, and accepted of their invitation; and was ordained in the work of the ministry at Northampton, colleague with his grandfather Stoddard, February 15, 1727, in the twenty fourth year of his age, where he continued in the work of the ministry until June 22, 1750, twenty three years and four months.

Between the time of his going to New-York and his settlement at Northampton, he formed a number of resolutions, and committed them to writing: the particular time, and special occasion of his making many of them, he has noted in his diary which he then kept; as well as many other observations and rules, which related to his own exercises and conduct.

duct. And as these resolutions, together with the things noted in his diary, may justly be considered, as the foundation and plan of his whole life, it may be proper here to give the reader a taste and idea of them: Which will therefore be done in the following extracts.

P A R T II.

Containing EXTRACTS from his PRIVATE WRITINGS, &c.

S E C T I O N I.

HIS RESOLUTIONS.

BEING sensible that I am unable to do any thing without God's help, I do humbly intreat him by his grace to enable me to keep these resolutions, so far as they are agreeable to his will, for Christ's sake.

Remember to read over these RESOLUTIONS once a Week.

1. Resolved, That I will do whatsoever I think to be most to God's glory, and my own good, profit and pleasure, in the whole of my duration, without any consideration of the time, whether now, or never so many myriads of ages hence. Resolved to do whatever I think to be my duty, and most for the good and advantage of mankind in general. Resolved to do this, whatever difficulties I meet with, how many and how great soever.

2. Resolved, to be continually endeavouring to find out some new invention and contrivance to promote the fore-mentioned things.

4. Resolved, never to do any manner of thing, whether in soul or body, less or more, but what tends to the glory of God; nor be, nor suffer it, if I can avoid it.

5. Resolved, never to loose one moment of time; but improve it the most profitable way I possibly can.

6. Resolved, to live with all my might, while I do live.

7. Resolved, never to do any thing, which I should be afraid to do, if it were the last hour of my life.

9. Resolved, to think much on all occasions of my own dying, and of the common circumstances which attend death.

11. Re-

11. Resolved, when I think of any theorem in divinity to be solved, immediately to do what I can towards solving it, if circumstances do not hinder.

13. Resolved, to be endeavouring to find out fit objects of charity and liberality.

14. Resolved, never to do any thing out of revenge.

15. Resolved, never to suffer the least motions of anger to irrational beings.

17. Resolved, that I will live so as I shall wish I had done when I come to die.

18. Resolved, to live so at all times, as I think is best in my devout frames, and when I have clearest notions of things of the gospel, and another world.

20. Resolved, to maintain the strictest temperance in eating and drinking.

21. Resolved, never to do any thing, which if I should see in another, I should count a just occasion to despise him for, or to think any way the more meanly of him.

24. Resolved, whenever I do any conspicuously evil action, to trace it back, till I come to the original cause; and then both carefully endeavour to do so no more, and to fight and pray with all my might against the original of it.

28. Resolved, to study the scriptures so steadily, constantly and frequently, as that I may find, and plainly perceive myself to grow in the knowlege of the same.

30. Resolved, to strive to my utmost every week to be brought higher in religion, and to a higher exercise of grace, than I was the week before.

32. Resolved, to be strictly and firmly faithful to my trust, that that in Prov. xx. 6. "A faithful man who can find?" may not be partly fulfilled in me.

33. Resolved, always to do what I can towards making, maintaining and establishing peace, when it can be without over-balancing detriment in other respects.

34. Resolved, in narrations never to speak any thing but the pure and simple verity.

36. Resolved, never to speak evil of any, except I have some particular good call for it.

37. Resolved, to enquire every night, as I am going to bed, wherein I have been negligent, what sin I have committed, and wherein I have denied myself: Also, at the end of every week, month and year.

38. Resolved, never to speak any thing that is ridiculous, or matter of laughter on the Lord's Day.

39. Resolved, never to do any thing that I so much question the lawfulness of, as that I intend, at the same time, to consider and examine afterwards whether it be lawful or no: except I as much question the lawfulness of the omission.

41. Resolved, to ask myself at the end of every day, week, month and year, wherein I could possibly in any respect have done better.

42. Resolved frequently to renew the dedication of myself to God, which was made at my baptism; which I solemnly renewed, when I was received into the communion of the church; and which I have solemnly re-made this twelfth day of January, 1722—3.

43. Resolved, never henceforward, till I die, to act as if I were any way my own, but entirely and altogether God's, agreeable to what is to be found in Saturday, January 12.

46. Resolved, never to allow the least measure of any fretting uneasiness at my father or mother. Resolved to suffer no effects of it, so much as in the least alteration of speech, or motion of my eye: and to be especially careful of it, with respect to any of our family.

47. Resolved, to endeavor to my utmost to deny whatever is not most agreeable to a good, and universally sweet and benevolent, quiet, peaceable, contented, easy, compassionate, generous, humble, meek, modest, submissive, obliging, diligent and industrious, charitable, even, patient, moderate, forgiving, sincere temper; and to do at all times what such a temper would lead me to. Examine strictly every week, whether I have done so.

48. Resolved, constantly, with the utmost niceness and diligence, and the strictest scrutiny, to be looking into the state of my soul, that I may know whether I have truly an interest in Christ or no; that when I come to die, I may not have any negligence respecting this to repent of.

50. Resolved, I will act so as I think I shall judge would have been best, and most prudent, when I come into the future world.

52. I frequently hear persons in old age say how they would live, if they were to live their lives over again: Resolved, that I will live just so as I can think I shall wish I had done, supposing I live to old age.

54. Whenever I hear any thing spoken in conversation of any person, if I think it would be praise-worthy in me, Resolved to endeavor to imitate it.

55. Resolved, to endeavor to my utmost to act as I can think I should do, if I had already seen the happiness of Heaven, and Hell torments.

56. Resolved, never to give over, nor in the least to slacken my fight with my corruptions, however unsuccessful I may be.

57. Resolved, when I fear misfortunes and adversities, to examine whether I have done my duty, and resolve to do it; and let it be just as providence orders it, I will, as far as I can, be concerned about nothing but my duty and my sin.

62. Resolved, never to do any thing but duty; and then according to Eph. vi. 6, 7, 8. do it willingly and cheerfully as unto the Lord, and not to man; knowing that whatever good thing any man doth, the same shall he receive of the Lord.

65. Resolved, very much to exercise myself in this all my live long, *viz.* with the greatest openness I am capable of, to declare my ways to God, and lay open my soul to him: all my sins, temptations, difficulties, sorrows, fears, hopes, desires, and every thing, and every circumstance; according to Dr. Manton's 27th sermon on the cxix Psalm.

67. Resolved, after afflictions, to inquire, what I am the better for them, what good I have got by them, and what I might have got by them. *

* The Resolutions are seventy in number. But part of them are here transcribed, as a specimen of the whole. The number here affixed to them, is that by which they are numbered in the original manuscript; and retained here for the sake of the references made to some of them in the diary, as the reader will presently see.

S E C T I O N II.

Extracts from his PRIVATE DIARY.

SATURDAY, *December 22, 1722.* This day revived by God's spirit. Affected with the sense of the excellency of holiness. Felt more exercise of love to Christ than usual.

Have

Have also felt sensible repentance of sin, because it was committed against so merciful and good a God. This night made the 37th Resolution.

Sabbathday night, Dec. 23. Made the 38th Resolution.

Monday, Dec. 24. Higher thoughts than usual of the excellency of Jesus Christ and his kingdom.

Wednesday, January 2, 1722—3. Dull. I find by experience, that let me make resolutions, and do what I will; with never so many inventions, it is all nothing, and to no purpose at all, without the motions of the Spirit of God: for if the Spirit of God should be as much withdrawn from me always, as for the week past, notwithstanding all I do, I should not grow; but should languish, and miserably fade away.—There is no dependence upon myself. It is to no purpose to resolve, except we depend on the grace of God; for if it were not for his mere grace, one might be a very good man one day, and a very wicked one the next.

Sabbathday, January 6, at night. Much concerned about the improvement of precious time. Intend to live in continual mortification, without ceasing, as long as in this world.

Tuesday, January 8, in the morning. Higher thoughts than usual, of the excellency of Christ, and felt an unusual repentance of sin therefrom.

Wednesday, January 9, at night. Decayed. I am sometimes apt to think, I have a great deal more of holiness than I have. I find now and then, that abominable corruption which is directly contrary to what I read of eminent Christians.—How deceitful is my heart! I take up a strong resolution, but how soon does it weaken!

Thursday, January 10, about noon. Reviving. 'Tis a great dishonor to Christ, in whom I hope I have an interest, to be uneasy at my worldly state and condition. When I see the prosperity of others, and that all things go easy with them; the world is smooth to them, and they are happy in many respects, and very prosperous, or are advanced to much honor, &c. to grudge and envy them, or be the least uneasy at it; to wish or long for the same prosperity, and that it would ever be so with me. Wherefore concluded always to rejoice in every one's prosperity, and to expect for myself no happiness of that nature as long as I live; but depend upon afflictions, and betake myself entirely to another happiness.

I think I find myself much more sprightly and healthy, both in body and mind, for my self denial in eating, drinking, and sleeping.

I think it would be advantageous every morning to consider my business and temptations; and what sins I shall be exposed to that day; and to make a resolution how to improve the day, and to avoid those sins. And so at the beginning of every week, month and year.

I never knew before what was meant by not setting our hearts upon these things. 'Tis not to care about them, to depend upon them, to afflict ourselves much with fears of losing them, nor please ourselves with expectation of obtaining them, or hope of the continuance of them. At night made the 41st Resolution.

Saturday, January 12, in the morning. I have this day solemnly renewed my baptismal covenant and self-dedication, which I renewed when I was received into the communion of the church. I have been before God; and have given myself, all that I am and have to God, so that I am not in any respect my own: I can challenge no right in myself, I can challenge no right in this understanding, this will, these affections that are in me; neither have I any right to this body, or any of its members: No right to this tongue, these hands, nor feet: no right to these senses, these eyes, these ears, this smell or taste. I have given myself clear away, and have not retained any thing as my own. I have been to GOD this morning, and told him that I gave myself *wholly* to him. I have given every power to him; so that for the future I will challenge no right in myself, in any respect. I have expressly promised him, and do now promise Almighty God, that by his grace I will not. I have this morning told him, that I did take him for my whole portion and felicity, looking on nothing else as any part of my happiness, nor acting as if it were; and his law for the constant rule of my obedience: and would fight with all my might against the world, the flesh, and the devil, to the end of my life. And did believe in Jesus Christ, and receive him as a Prince and a Saviour; and would adhere to the faith and obedience of the gospel, how hazardous and difficult soever the profession and practice of it may be. That I did receive the blessed Spirit as my teacher, sanctifier and only comforter; and cherish all his motions to enlighten, purify, confirm, comfort and assist me. This I have done. And I pray God, for the
sake

fake of Christ, to look upon it as a self-dedication; and to receive me now as entirely his own, and deal with me in all respects as such; whether he afflicts me or prospers me, or whatever he pleases to do with me, who am his. Now, henceforth I am not to act in any respect as my own.—I shall act as my own, if I ever make use of any of my powers to any thing that is not to the glory of God, and don't make the glorifying him my whole and entire business; if I murmur in the least at afflictions; if I grieve at the prosperity of others; if I am any way uncharitable; if I am angry because of injuries; if I revenge: If I do any thing, purely to please myself, or if I avoid any thing for the sake of my ease: If I omit any thing because it is great self-denial: If I trust to myself; If I take any of the praise of any good that I do, or rather GOD does by me; or if I am any way proud. This day made the 42d and 43d Resolutions.

Monday, January 14.—The dedication I made of myself to my God, on Saturday last, has been exceeding useful to me. I thought I had a more spiritual insight into the scripture, reading the 8th chapter to the Romans, than ever in my life before.

Great instances of mortification are deep wounds given to the body of sin, hard blows that make him stagger and reel: we thereby get great ground and footing against him.—While we live without great instances of mortification and self-denial, the old man keeps whereabouts he was; for he is sturdy and obstinate, and will not stir for small blows. After the greatest mortifications, I always find the greatest comfort.

Supposing there was never but one compleat Christian, in all respects of a right stamp, having christianity shining in its true lustre, at a time in the world; Resolved to act just as I would do, if I strove with all my might to be that one, that should be in my time.

Tuesday, January 15. It seemed yesterday, the day before and Saturday, that I should always retain the same resolutions to the same height, but alas, how soon do I decay! O, how weak, how infirm, how unable to do any thing am I! What a poor, inconsistent, what a miserable wretch, without the assistance of God's spirit! While I stand, I am ready to think I stand in my own strength, and upon my own legs; and I am ready to triumph over my enemies, as if it were I myself that caused them to flee: When alas! I am but a poor infant,
upheld

upheld by Jesus Christ; who holds me up, and gives me liberty to smile to see my enemies flee, when he drives them before me; and so I laugh, as though I myself did it, when it is only Jesus Christ leads me along, and fights himself against my enemies. And now the Lord has a little left me, and how weak do I find myself! O, let it teach me to depend less on myself, to be more humble, and to give more of the praise of my ability to Jesus Christ. The heart of man is deceitful above all things, and desperately wicked, who can know it?

Saturday, February 16. I do certainly know that I love holiness, such as the gospel requires.

At night. I have been negligent for the month past in these three things; I have not been watchful enough over my appetite in eating and drinking; in rising too late a mornings; and in not applying myself with applications enough to the duty of secret prayer.

Sabbathday, February 17, near sunset. Renewedly promised, that I will accept of God, for my whole portion; and that I will be contented, whatever else I am denied. I will not murmur, nor be grieved, whatever prosperity, upon any account, I see others enjoy, and I am denied.

Saturday, March 2. O, how much pleasanter is humility than pride! O, that God would fill me with exceeding great humility, and that he would evermore keep me from all pride! The pleasures of humility are really the most refined, inward and exquisite delights in the world. How hateful is a proud man! How hateful is a worm that lifts up itself with pride! What a foolish, silly, miserable, blind, deceived, poor worm am I, when pride works!

Wednesday, March 6, near sun-set. Felt the doctrines of election, free grace, and of our not being able to do any thing without the grace of God; and that holiness is entirely, throughout, the work of God's spirit, with more pleasure than before.

Monday morning, April 1. I think it best not to allow myself to laugh at the faults, follies and infirmities of others.

Saturday night, April 7. This week I found myself so far gone, that it seemed to me, that I should never recover more. Let God of his mercy return unto me, and no more leave me thus to sink and decay! I know, O Lord, that without thy help, I shall fall innumerable times, notwithstanding all my resolutions, how often soever repeated.

Saturday night, April 14. I could pray more heartily this night, for the forgiveness of my enemies, than ever before.

Wednesday, May 1, forenoon. Last night I came home, after my melancholy parting from New-York.

I have always, in every different state of life, I have hitherto been in, thought the troubles and difficulties of that state, to be greater than those of any other, that I proposed to be in; and when I have altered with assurance of mending myself, I have still thought the same; yea, that the difficulties of that state, are greater than those of that I left last. Lord, grant that from hence I may learn to withdraw my thoughts, affections, desires and expectations, intirely from the world, and may fix them upon the heavenly state; where there is fulness of joy; where reigns heavenly, sweet, calm and delightful love without alloy; where there are continually the dearest expressions of this love: Where there is the enjoyment of the persons loved, without ever parting: Where those persons, who appear so lovely in this world, will really be inexpressibly more lovely, and full of love to us. How sweetly will the mutual lovers join together to sing the praises of God and the Lamb! How full will it fill us with joy to think, this enjoyment, these sweet exercises, will never cease or come to an end, but will last to all eternity.

Remember, after journeys, removes, overturnings and alterations in the state of my life, to reflect and consider, whether therein I have managed the best way possible, respecting my soul? And before such alterations, if foreseen, to resolve how to act.

Thursday, May 2. I think it a very good way to examine dreams every morning when I awake, what are the nature, circumstances, principles and ends of my imaginary actions and passions in them, to discern what are my chief inclinations, &c.

Saturday night, May 4. Although I have in some measure subdued a disposition to chide and fret, yet I find a certain inclination, which is not agreeable to christian sweetness of temper and conversation: either by too much dogmaticalness, too much of the egotism; a disposition to be telling of my own dislike and scorn; and freedom from those that are innocent, yea common infirmities of men; and many other such like things. O that God would help me to discern all the flaws and defects of my temper and conversation, and help
me

me in the difficult work of amending them : And that he would fill me so full of christianity, that the foundation of all these disagreeable irregularities may be destroyed, and the contrary sweetneses and beauties may of themselves naturally follow.

Sabbathday, May 5, in the morning. This day made the 47th resolution.

Sabbathday, May 12. I think I find in my heart to be glad from the hopes I have that my eternity is to be spent in spiritual and holy joys, arising from the manifestation of God's love, and the exercise of holiness and a burning love to him.

Saturday night, May 18. I now plainly perceive what great obligations I am under to love and honour my parents. I have great reason to believe, that their counsel and education have been my making : notwithstanding, in the time of it, it seemed to do me so little good. I have good reason to hope that their prayers for me, have been in many things very powerful and prevalent ; that God has in many things, taken me under his care and guidance, provision and direction, in answer to their prayers for me. I was never made so sensible of it as now.

Wednesday, May 22, in the morning. *Memorandum*. To take special care of these following things ; evil speaking, fretting, eating, drinking and sleeping, speaking simple verity, joining in prayer, slightness in secret prayer, listlessness and negligence, and thoughts that cherish sin.

Saturday, May 25, in the morning. As I was this morning reading the seventeenth resolution, it was suggested to me, that if I was now to die, I should wish that I had prayed more that God would make me know my state, whether it be good or bad ; and that I had taken more pains to see and narrowly search into this matter. Wherefore, *Mem.* For the future most nicely and diligently to look into our old divines opinions concerning conversion. Made the forty-eighth resolution.

Friday, June 1, afternoon. I have abundant cause, O my merciful father, to love thee ardently, and greatly to bless and praise thee, that thou hast heard me in my earnest request, and hast so answered my prayer for mercy to keep from decay and sinking. O, graciously, of thy mere goodness, still continue to pity my misery, by reason of my sinfulness. O my dear Redeemer, I commit myself, together with my prayer and thanksgiving into thine hand.

Monday,

Monday, July 1. Again confirmed by experience of the happy effects of strict temperance, with respect both to body and mind. Resolved for the future to observe rather more of meekness, moderation and temper in disputes.

Thursday, July 18, near sun-set. Resolved to endeavor to make sure of that sign the apostle James gives of a perfect man, Jam. iii. 2. "If any man offend not in word, the same is a perfect man, and able also to bridle the whole body."

Monday, July 22. I see there is danger of my being drawn into transgression by the power of such temptations as a fear of seeming uncivil, and of offending friends. Watch against it.

Tuesday, July 23. When I find those groanings which cannot be uttered, the Apostle speaks of; and those soul-breakings, for the longing it hath, the Psalmist speaks of, (Psal. cxix. 20.) to humour and promote them to the utmost of my power, and be not weary of earnestly endeavouring to vent my desires.

To count it all joy when I have occasion of great self-denial, because then I have a glorious opportunity of giving deadly wounds to the body of sin, and greatly confirming and establishing the new nature: To seek to mortify sin, and increase in holiness: these are the best opportunities, according to January 14.

To improve afflictions of all kinds as blessed opportunities of forcibly bearing on in my christian course, notwithstanding that which is so very apt to discourage me, and to damp the vigour of my mind, and to make me lifeless: Also as opportunities of trusting and confiding in God, and getting a habit of that, according to the 57th resolution. And as an opportunity of rending my heart off from the world, and setting it upon Heaven alone. To improve them as opportunities to repent of, and bewail my sin, and abhor myself. And as a blessed opportunity to exercise patience; to trust in God, and divert my mind from the affliction, by fixing myself in religious exercises. Also, let me comfort myself, that it is the very nature of afflictions to make the heart better; and if I am made better by them, what need I be concerned, however grievous they seem for the present?

Friday afternoon, July 26. To be particularly careful to keep up inviolable a trust and reliance, ease and entire rest in God in all conditions, according to 57th resolution; for this I have found to be wonderfully advantageous to me.

Monday,

Monday, July 29. When I am concerned how I shall perform any thing to public acceptance, to be very careful that I have it very clear to me, that I do what is duty and prudence in the matter.

Wednesday, July 31. Never in the least to seek to hear farcical relations of others faults. Never to give credit to any thing said against others, except there is very plain reason for it; nor to behave in any respect the otherwise for it.

Wednesday, August 7. To esteem as some advantage that the duties of religion are difficult, and that many difficulties are some times to be gone through in the way of duty. Religion is the sweeter, and what is gained by labour, is abundantly more precious: As a woman loves her child the better for having brought it fourth with travail. And even to Christ Jesus himself, his mediatorial glory, his victory and triumph, his kingdom which he hath obtained; how much more glorious is it, how much more excellent and precious, for his having wrought it out by such agonies!

Friday, August 9. One thing that may be a good help towards thinking profitably in time of vacation is, when I light on a profitable thought, that I can fix my mind on, to follow it as far as possibly I can to advantage.

Sabbathday, after meeting, August 11. Resolved always to do that which I shall wish I had done, when I see others do it. As for instance, sometimes I argue with myself, that such an act of good nature, kindness, forbearance, or forgiveness, &c. is not my duty, because it will have such and such consequences: yet, when I see others do it, then it appears amiable to me, and I wish I had done it; and I see that none of those feared inconveniences follow.

Tuesday, August 13. I find it would be very much to advantage, to be thoroughly acquainted with the scriptures. When I am reading doctrinal books, or books of controversy, I can proceed with abundantly more confidence; can see upon what footing and foundation I stand.

Thursday, August 29. The objection my corruptions make against doing whatever my hands find to do with my might is, that it is a constant mortification. Let this objection by no means ever prevail.

Monday, September 2. There is much folly, when I am quite sure I am in the right, and others are positive in contradicting me, to enter into a vehement or long debate upon it.

Monday,

Monday, September 23. I observe that old men seldom have any advantage of new discoveries; because they are beside a way of thinking, they have been so long used to. Resolved, if ever I live to years, that I will be impartial to hear the reasons of all pretended discoveries, and receive them if rational, how long so ever I have been used to another way of thinking.

Thursday, October 18. To follow the example of Mr. B— who, though he meets with great difficulties, yet undertakes them with a smiling countenance, as though he thought them but little; and speaks of them as if they were very small.

Thursday, November 26. It is a most evil and pernicious practice in meditations on afflictions, to sit ruminating on the aggravations of the affliction, and reckoning up the evil, dark circumstances thereof, and dwelling long on the dark side; it doubles and trebles the affliction. And so when speaking of them to others, to make them as bad as we can, and use our eloquence to set forth our own troubles, and are all the while making new trouble, and feeding and pampering the old; whereas the contrary practice would starve our afflictions. If we dwelt on the light side of things in our thoughts, and extenuated them all that possibly we could, when speaking of them, we should think little of them ourselves; and the affliction would really, in a great measure, vanish away.

Thursday night, December 12. If at any time I am forced to tell others of that wherein I think they are something to blame; for the avoiding the important evil, that would otherwise ensue, not to tell it to them, so that there shall be a probability of their taking it as the effect of little, fretting, angry emotions of mind.

December 31, at night. Concluded never to suffer nor express any angry emotions of mind more or less, except the honor of God calls for it, in zeal for him, or to preserve myself from being trampled on.

Wednesday, January 1, 1723—4.

NOT to spend too much time in thinking even of important and necessary worldly business. To allow every thing it's proportion of thought, according to it's urgency and importance.

Friday, January 10. (After having wrote considerable in a short hand, which he used when he would have what he wrote effectually concealed from every body but himself, he notes the following words in round hand) Remember to act according to Prov. xii. 23. "A prudent man concealeth know-
"lege."

Monday, February 3. Let every thing have the value now, that it will have on a sick bed: and frequently in my pursuits of whatever kind, let this come into my mind; "How much
"shall I value this on my death bed?"

Wednesday, February 5. Have not in time past in my prayers, enough insisted upon the glorifying God in the world, and the advancement of the kingdom of Christ, the prosperity of the church, and the good of men. Determined that this objection is without weight, viz. That it is not likely that God will make great alterations in the whole world, and overturnings in kingdoms and nations, only for the prayers of one obscure person, seeing such things used to be done in answer to the united, earnest prayers of the whole church: and if my prayers should have some influence, it would be but imperceptible and small.

Thursday, February 6. More convinced than ever of the usefulness of a free religious conversation. I find by conversing on natural philosophy, I gain knowledge abundance faster, and see the reasons of things much clearer, than in private study. Wherefore earnestly to seek at all times for religious conversation; for those that I can with profit and delight and freedom so converse with.

Sabbathday, February 23. If I act according to my resolution, I shall desire riches no otherwise than as they are helpful to religion. But this I determine, as what is really evident from many parts of scripture, that to fallen man they have a greater tendency to hurt religion.

Saturday, May 23. How it comes about I know not; but I have remarked it hitherto, that at those times when I have read the scripture most, I have evermore been most lively, and in the best frames.

Saturday night, June 6. This week has been a remarkable week with me with respect to despondencies, fears, perplexities, multitudes of cares and distraction of mind; being the week I came hither to New-Haven, in order to entrance upon the office of tutor of the college. I have now abundant reason to be convinced of the troublesomeness and vexation of the world, and that it never will be another kind of world.

Tuesday,

Tuesday, July 7. When I am giving the Relation of a thing, to abstain from altering either in the matter or manner of speaking, so much, as that if every one afterward should alar as much, it would at last come to be properly false.

Tuesday, September 2. By a sparingness in diet, and eating, as much as may be, what is light and easy of digestion, I shall doubtless be able to think clearer, and shall gain time. 1st. By lengthening out my life. 2dly. shall need less time for digestion after meals. 3dly. shall be able to study closer without wrong to my health. 4thly. shall need less time to sleep. 5thly. shall seldomer be troubled with the head-ach.

Sabbathday, November 22. Considering that by-standers always espy some faults which we do not see ourselves, or at least are not so fully sensible of: there are many secret workings of corruption which escape our sight, and others only are sensible of: Resolved therefore, that I will, if I can by any convenient means, learn what faults others find in me, or what things they see in me, that appear any way blame-worthy, unlovely or unbecoming.

SECTION III.

REFLECTION on the foregoing EXTRACTS.

THE foregoing extracts were wrote by Mr. Edwards in the 20th and 21st years of his age, as appears by the dates. This being kept in mind, the judicious reader will make proper allowance for some things, which may appear a little juvenile, or like a young christian, as to the matter, or manner of expression; which would not have been found, had it not have been done in early life. Which, indeed are no blemishes, the whole being taken together: as by this, it appears more natural, and the strength of his resolution, and fervor of mind; and his skill and discerning in divine things, so seldom found even in old age, are the more striking. And in this view, we shall be led to admire his conscientious strictness, his zeal and painfulness, his experience and judgment in true religion, at so early an age. For here are not only the most convincing evidences of sincerity and thorough religion, of his engaging in a life devoted to GOD in good earnest, so as to make religion his

his only business ; but through his great attention to this matter, he appears to have the judgment and experience of grey hairs.

This is the beginning of a life so eminently holy and useful as Mr. Edwards's was. He who became one of the greatest divines in this age ; has had the applause and admiration of America, Britain, Holland, and Germany, for his piety, and great judgment and skill in divinity ; and has been honored above most others in the christian world, in this century ; in his being made the instrument of doing so much good : He began his life thus : He entered on a public life with such views, such exercises, such resolutions.

This may serve as a direction and excitement to those who are young, to devote themselves to GOD in good earnest, and enter on the business of strict and thorough religion without delay : especially those who are looking towards the work of the ministry, as they would take the most direct, the only way to answer the good ends which they profess to seek.

It is to be lamented, that there is so much reason to think, there are so few instances of such early piety in our day. If the protestant world abounded with young persons of this stamp ; with young men, who are preparing for the work of the ministry, with such a temper, such exercises, and such resolutions, what a delightful prospect would this afford, of the near approach of happier days, than the church of GOD has ever yet seen ! What pleasing hopes that the great, the merciful head of the church, was about to send forth labourers, faithful, successful labourers into his harvest ; and bless his people with " Pastors which shall feed them with knowledge and understanding !"

But if our youth neglect all proper improvement of the mind ; are shy of seriousness and strict piety ; choose to live strangers to it, and keep at a distance from all appearance of it ; are wanton, and given to carnal pleasures ; what a gloomy prospect does this afford ! If they who enter into the work of the ministry ; from a gay, careless, and what may justly be called a vicious life, betake themselves to a little superficial study of divinity, and soon begin to preach ; while all the external seriousness and zeal they put on, is only from worldly motives ; they being without any inward, experimental acquaintance with spiritual, divine things, and even so much as any taste for true divinity ; no wonder if the churches " suck dry breasts ;" and there are many ignorant watchmen.

But, as the best comment on the foregoing resolutions and diary ; and that the reader may have a more particular, full
and

and instructive view of Mr. Edwards's entrance on a religious life, and progress in it, as consisting in the views and exercises of his mind; a brief account thereof is here inserted, which was found among his papers, in his own hand-writing: and which, it seems, was wrote near twenty years after, for his own private advantage.

SECTION IV.

An Account of his CONVERSION, EXPERIENCES, and RELIGIOUS EXERCISES, given by himself.

I Had a variety of concerns and exercises about my soul from my childhood; but had two more remarkable seasons of awakening, before I met with that change, by which I was brought to those new dispositions, and that new sense of things, that I have since had. The first time was when I was a boy, some years before I went to college, at a time of remarkable awakening in my father's congregation. I was then very much affected for many months, and concerned about the things of religion, and my soul's salvation; and was abundant in duties. I used to pray five times a day in secret, and to spend much time in religious talk with other boys; and used to meet with them to pray together. I experienced I know not what kind of delight in religion. My mind was much engaged in it, and had much self-righteous pleasure; and it was my delight to abound in religious duties. I, with some of my school-mates, joined together and built a booth in a swamp, in a very secret and retired place, for a place of prayer. And besides, I had particular secret places of my own in the woods, where I used to retire by myself; and used to be from time to time much affected. My affections seemed to be lively and easily moved, and I seemed to be in my element, when engaged in religious duties. And I am ready to think, many are deceived with such affections, and such a kind of delight, as I then had in religion, and mistake it for grace.

But in process of time, my convictions and affections wore off; and I entirely lost all those affections and delights, and left off secret prayer, at least as to any constant performance of it; and returned like a dog to his vomit, and went on in ways of sin.

Indeed,

Indeed, I was at some times very uneasy, especially towards the latter part of the time of my being at college. 'Till it pleased God, in my last year at college, at a time when I was in the midst of many uneasy thoughts about the state of my soul, to seize me with a plury; in which he brought me nigh to the grave, and shook me over the pit of hell.

But yet, it was not long after my recovery, before I fell again into my old ways of sin. But God would not suffer me to go on with any quietness; but I had great and violent inward struggles: 'Till after many conflicts with wicked inclinations, and repeated resolutions, and bonds that I laid myself under by a kind of vows to God, I was brought wholly to break off all former wicked ways, and all ways of known outward sin; and to apply myself to seek my salvation, and practise the duties of religion: But without that kind of affection and delight, that I had formerly experienced. My concern now wrought more by inward struggles and conflicts, and self-reflections. I made seeking my salvation the main business of my life. But yet it seems to me, I sought after a miserable manner: Which has made me some times since to question, whether ever it issued in that which was saving; being ready to doubt, whether such miserable seeking was ever succeeded. But yet I was brought to seek salvation, in a manner that I never was before. I felt a spirit to part with all things in the world, for an interest in Christ. My concern continued and prevailed, with many exercising thoughts and inward struggles; but yet it never seemed to be proper to express my concern that I had, by the name of terror.

From my childhood up, my mind had been wont to be full of objections against the doctrine of God's sovereignty, in choosing whom he would to eternal life, and rejecting whom he pleased; leaving them eternally to perish, and be everlastingly tormented in hell. It used to appear like a horrible doctrine to me. But I remember the time very well, when I seemed to be convinced, and fully satisfied, as to this sovereignty of God, and his justice in thus eternally disposing of men, according to his sovereign pleasure. But never could give an account, how, or by what means, I was thus convinced; not in the least imagining, in the time of it, nor a long time after, that there was any extraordinary influence of God's spirit in it: but only that now I saw further, and my reason apprehended the justice and reasonableness of it. However, my
mind

mind rested in it ; and it put an end to all those cavils and objections, that had until then abode with me, all the preceding part of my life. And there has been a wonderful alteration in my mind, with respect to the doctrine of God's sovereignty, from that day to this ; so that I scarce ever have found so much as the rising of an objection against God's sovereignty, in the most absolute sense, in shewing mercy to whom he will shew mercy, and hardening and eternally damning whom he will. God's absolute sovereignty, and justice, with respect to salvation and damnation, is what my mind seems to rest assured of, as much as of any thing that I see with my eyes ; at least it is so at times. But I have often times since that first conviction, had quite another kind of sense of God's sovereignty, than I had then. I have often since, not only had a conviction, but a *delightful* conviction. The doctrine of God's sovereignty has very often appeared, an exceeding pleasant, bright and sweet doctrine to me : and absolute sovereignty is what I love to ascribe to God. But my first conviction was not with this.

The first that I remember that ever I found any thing of that sort of inward, sweet delight in God and divine things, that I have lived much in since, was on reading those words, 1 Tim. i. 17. "Now unto the King eternal, immortal, invisible, the only wise God, be honor and glory for ever and ever, Amen." As I read the words, there came into my soul, and was as it were diffused through it, a sense of the glory of the Divine Being ; a new sense, quite different from any thing I ever experienced before. Never any words of scripture seemed to me as these words did. I thought with myself, how excellent a Being that was ; and how happy I should be, if I might enjoy that God, and be wrapt up to God in Heaven, and be as it were swallowed up in Him. I kept saying, and as it were singing over these words of scripture to myself ; and went to prayer, to pray to God that I might enjoy him ; and prayed in a manner quite different from what I used to do ; with a new sort of affection. But it never came into my thought, that there was any thing spiritual, or of a saving nature in this.

From about that time, I began to have a new kind of apprehensions and ideas of Christ, and the work of redemption, and the glorious way of salvation by him. I had an inward, sweet sense of these things, that at times came into my heart ;
and

and my soul was led away in pleasant views and contemplations of them. And my mind was greatly engaged, to spend my time in reading and meditating on Christ; and the beauty and excellency of his person, and the lovely way of salvation, by free grace in him. I found no books so delightful to me, as those that treated of these subjects. Those words, Cant. ii. 1. used to be abundantly with me: "I am the rose of Sharon, the lilly of the valleys." The words seemed to me, sweetly to represent, the loveliness and beauty of Jesus Christ. And the whole book of Canticles used to be pleasant to me; and I used to be much in reading it, about that time. And found, from time to time, an inward sweetness, that used, as it were, to carry me away in my contemplations; in what I know not how to express otherwise, than by a calm, sweet abstraction of soul from all the concerns of this world; and a kind of vision, or fixed ideas and imaginations, or being alone in the mountains, or some solitary wilderness, far from all mankind, sweetly conversing with Christ, and wrapt and swallowed up in God. The sense I had of divine things, would often of a sudden as it were, kindle up a sweet burning in my heart; an ardor of my soul, that I know not how to express.

Not long after I first began to experience these things, I gave an account to my father, of some things that had passed in my mind. I was pretty much affected by the discourse we had together. And when the discourse was ended, I walked abroad alone, in a solitary place in my father's pasture, for contemplation. And as I was walking there, and looked up on the sky and clouds; there came into my mind, a sweet sense of the glorious majesty and grace of God, that I know not how to express. I seemed to see them both in a sweet conjunction: majesty and meekness joined together: it was a sweet and gentle, and holy Majesty; and also a majestic meekness; an awful sweetness; a high, and great, and holy gentleness.

After this my sense of divine things gradually increased, and became more and more lively, and had more of that inward sweetness. The appearance of every thing was altered: there seemed to be, as it were, a calm, sweet cast, or appearance of divine glory, in almost every thing. God's excellency, his wisdom, his purity and love, seemed to appear in every thing; in the sun, moon and stars; in the clouds, and blue sky; in the grass, flowers, trees; in the water, and all nature; which used greatly to fix my mind. I often used to sit and view the moon,

for a long time; and so in the day time, spent much time in viewing the clouds and sky, to behold the sweet glory of God in these things; in the mean time, singing forth with a low voice, my contemplations of the creator and redeemer. And scarce any thing, among all the works of nature, was so sweet to me as thunder and lightning. Formerly, nothing had been so terrible to me. I used to be a person uncommonly terrified with thunder: and it used to strike me with terror, when I saw a thunder-storm rising. But now, on the contrary, it rejoiced me. I felt God at the first appearance of a thunder-storm. And used to take the opportunity at such times, to fix myself to view the clouds, and see the lightnings play, and hear the majestic and awful voice of God's thunder: which often times was exceeding entertaining, leading me to sweet contemplations of my great and glorious God. And while I viewed, used to spend my time, as it always seemed natural to me, to sing or chant forth my meditations; to speak my thoughts in soliloquies, and speak with a singing voice.

I felt then a great satisfaction as to my good estate. But that did not content me. I had vehement longings of soul after God and Christ, and after more holiness; wherewith my heart seemed to be full, and ready to break: which often brought to my mind, the words of the Psalmist, Psa. cxix. 28. "My soul breaketh for the longing it hath." I often felt a mourning and lamenting in my heart, that I had not turned to God sooner, that I might have had more time to grow in grace. My mind was greatly fixed on divine things; I was almost perpetually in the contemplation of them. Spent most of my time in thinking of divine things, year after year. And used to spend abundance of my time, in walking alone in the woods, and solitary places, for meditation, soliloquy and prayer, and converse with God. And it was always my manner, at such times, to sing forth my contemplations. And was almost constantly in ejaculatory prayer, wherever I was. Prayer seemed to be natural to me; as the breath, by which the inward burnings of my heart had vent.

The delights which I now felt in things of religion, were of an exceeding different kind, from those forementioned, that I had when I was a boy. They were totally of another kind; and what I then had no more notion or idea of, than one born blind has of pleasant and beautiful colours. They were of a more inward, pure, soul-animating and refreshing

nature. Those former delights, never reached the heart ; and did not arise from any sight of the divine excellency of the things of God ; or any taste of the soul-satisfying, and life-giving good, there is in them.

My sense of divine things seemed gradually to increase, until I went to preach at New-York ; which was about a year and a half after they began. While I was there, I felt them, very sensibly, in a much higher degree, than I had done before. My longings after God and holiness, were much increased. Pure and humble, holy and heavenly christianity, appeared exceeding amiable to me. I felt in me a burning desire to be in every thing a compleat christian ; and conformed to the blessed image of Christ : and that I might live in all things, according to the pure, sweet and blessed rules of the gospel. I had an eager thirsting after progress in these things. My longings after it, put me upon pursuing and pressing after them. It was my continual strife day and night, and constant inquiry, how I should be more holy, and live more holily, and more becoming a child of God, and disciple of Christ. I sought an encrease of grace and holiness, and that I might live an holy life, with vastly more earnestness, than ever I sought grace, before I had it. I used to be continually examining myself, and studying and contriving for likely ways and means, how I should live holily, with far greater diligence and earnestness, than ever I pursued any thing in my life : But with too great a dependence on my own strength ; which afterwards proved a great damage to me. My experience had not then taught me, as it has done since, my extreme feebleness and impotence, every manner of way ; and the innumerable and bottomless depths of secret corruption and deceit, that there was in my heart. However, I went on with my eager pursuit after more holiness ; and sweet conformity to Christ.

The Heaven I desired was a Heaven of holiness ; to be with God, and to spend my eternity in divine love, and holy communion with Christ. My mind was very much taken up with contemplations on Heaven, and the enjoyments of those there ; and living there in perfect holiness, humility and love. And it used at that time to appear a great part of the happiness of Heaven, that there the saints could express their love to Christ. It appeared to me a great clog and hindrance and burden to me, that what I felt within, I could not express to God, and give vent to, as I desired. The inward ardor of my soul,
seemed

seemed to be hindered and pent up; and could not freely flame out as it would. I used often to think, how in Heaven, this sweet principle should freely and fully vent and express itself. Heaven appeared to me exceeding delightful as a world of love. It appeared to me, that all happiness consisted in living in pure, humble, heavenly, divine love.

I remember the thoughts I used then to have of holiness. I remember I then said sometimes to myself, I do certainly know that I love holiness, such as the gospel prescribes. It appeared to me, there was nothing in it but what was ravishingly lovely. It appeared to me, to be the highest beauty and amiableness, above all other beauties: that it was a divine beauty; far purer than any thing here upon earth; and that every thing else, was like mire, filth and defilement, in comparison of it.

Holiness, as I then wrote down some of my contemplations on it, appeared to me to be of a sweet, pleasant, charming, serene, calm nature. It seemed to me, it brought an inexpressible purity, brightness, peacefulness and rapture to the soul: and that it made the soul like a field or garden of God, with all manner of pleasant flowers; that is all pleasant, delightful and undisturbed; enjoying a sweet calm, and the gently vivifying beams of the sun. The soul of a true christian, as I then wrote my meditations, appeared like such a little white flower, as we see in the spring of the year; low and humble on the ground, opening it's bosom, to receive the pleasant beams of the sun's glory; rejoicing as it were, in a calm rapture; diffusing around a sweet fragrancy; standing peacefully and lovingly, in the midst of other flowers round about; all in like manner opening their bosoms, to drink in the light of the sun.

There was no part of creature-holiness, that I then, and at other times, had so great a sense of the loveliness of, as humility, brokenness of heart and poverty of spirit: and there was nothing that I had such a spirit to long for. My heart as it were panted after this, to lie low before God, and in the dust; that I might be nothing, and that God might be all; that I might become as a little child.

While I was there at New-York, I sometimes was much affected with reflections on my past life, considering how late it was, before I began to be truly religious; and how wickedly I had lived till then: and once so as to weep abundantly, and for a considerable time together.

On January 12, 1722—3. I made a solemn dedication of myself to God, and wrote it down; giving up myself, and all that I had to God; to be for the future in no respect my own; to act as one that had no right to himself, in any respect. And solemnly vowed to take God for my whole portion and felicity; looking on nothing else as any part of my happiness, nor acting as if it were: and his law for the constant rule of my obedience; engaging to fight with all my might, against the world, the flesh and the devil, to the end of my life. But have reason to be infinitely humbled, when I consider, how much I have failed of answering my obligation.

I had then abundance of sweet religious conversation in the family where I lived, with Mr. John Smith, and his pious mother. My heart was knit in affection to those, in whom were appearances of true piety; and I could bear the thoughts of no other companions, but such as were holy, and the disciples of the blessed Jesus.

I had great longings for the advancement of Christ's kingdom in the world. My secret prayer used to be in great part taken up in praying for it. If I heard the least hint of any thing that happened in any part of the world, that appeared to me, in some respect or other, to have a favorable aspect on the interest of Christ's kingdom, my soul eagerly caught at it; and it would much animate and refresh me. I used to be earnest to read public news-letters, mainly for that end; to see if I could not find some news favorable to the interest of religion in the world.

I very frequently used to retire into a solitary place, on the banks of Hudson's river, at some distance from the city, for contemplation on divine things, and secret converse with God; and had many sweet hours there. Sometimes Mr. Smith and I walked there together, to converse of the things of God; and our conversation used much to turn on the advancement of Christ's kingdom in the world, and the glorious things that God would accomplish for his church in the latter days.

I had then, and at other times, the greatest delight in the holy scriptures, of any book whatsoever. Oftentimes in reading it, every word seemed to touch my heart. I felt an harmony between something in my heart, and those sweet and powerful words. I seemed often to see so much light, exhibited by every sentence, and such a refreshing ravishing food communicated,

communicated, that I could not get along in reading. Used oftentimes to dwell long on one sentence, to see the wonders contained in it; and yet almost every sentence seemed to be full of wonders.

I came away from New-York in the month of April, 1723, and had a most bitter parting with Madam Smith and her son. My heart seemed to sink within me, at leaving the family and city, where I had enjoyed so many sweet and pleasant days. I went from New-York to Weathersfield by water. As I sailed away, I kept sight of the city as long as I could; and when I was out of sight of it, it would affect me much to look that way, with a kind of melancholy mixed with sweetness. However, that night after this sorrowful parting, I was greatly comforted in God at Westchester, where we went ashore to lodge; and had a pleasant time of it, all the voyage to Saybrook. It was sweet to me to think of meeting dear christians in Heaven, where we should never part more. At Saybrook we went ashore to lodge on Saturday, and there kept Sabbath; where I had a sweet and refreshing season, walking alone in the fields.

After I came home to Windsor, remained much in a like frame of my mind, as I had been in at New-York; but only some times felt my heart ready to sink, with the thoughts of my friends at New-York. And my refuge and support was in contemplations on the heavenly state; as I find in my diary of May 1, 1723. It was my comfort to think of that state, where there is fulness of joy; where reigns heavenly, sweet, calm and delightful love, without alloy; where there are continually the dearest expressions of this love; where is the enjoyment of the persons loved, without ever parting; where these persons that appear so lovely in this world, will really be inexpressibly more lovely, and full of love to us. And how sweetly will the mutual lovers join together to sing the praises of God and the Lamb! How full will it fill us with joy, to think, that this enjoyment, these sweet exercises will never cease or come to an end; but will last to all eternity!

Continued much in the same frame in the general, that I had been in at New-York, till I went to New-Haven, to live there as tutor of the college; having one special season of uncommon sweetness: particularly once at Bolton, in a journey from Boston, walking out alone in the fields. After I went to
New-

New-Haven, I sunk in religion; my mind being diverted from my eager and violent pursuits after holiness, by some affairs that greatly perplexed and distracted my mind.

In September, 1725, was taken ill at New-Haven; and endeavoring to go home to Windsor, was so ill at the North Village, that I could go no further: where I lay sick for about a quarter of a year. And in this sickness, God was pleased to visit me again with the sweet influences of his spirit. My mind was greatly engaged there on divine, pleasant contemplations, and longings of soul. I observed that those who watched with me, would often be looking out for the morning, and seemed to wish for it. Which brought to my mind those words of the Psalmist, which my soul with sweetness made its own language. "My soul waiteth for the Lord, more than they that watch for the morning, I say, more than they that watch for the morning." And when the light of the morning came, and the beams of the sun came in at the windows, it refreshed my soul from one morning to another. It seemed to me to be some image of the sweet light of God's glory.

I remember, about that time, I used greatly to long for the conversion of some that I was concerned with. It seemed to me, I could gladly honor them, and with delight be a servant to them, and lie at their feet, if they were but truly holy.

But some time after this, I was again greatly diverted in my mind, with some temporal concerns, that exceedingly took up my thoughts, greatly to the wounding of my soul; and went on through various exercises, that it would be tedious to relate, that gave me much more experience of my own heart, than ever I had before.

Since I came to this town, [Northampton] I have often had sweet complacency in God, in views of his glorious perfections, and the excellency of Jesus Christ. God has appeared to me, a glorious and lovely Being, chiefly on the account of his holiness. The holiness of God has always appeared to me the most lovely of all his attributes. The doctrines of God's absolute sovereignty, and free grace, in shewing mercy to whom he would shew mercy; and man's absolute dependance on the operations of God's holy spirit, have very often appeared to me as sweet and glorious doctrines. These doctrines have been much my delight, God's sovereignty has ever appeared to me, as great
part

part of his glory. It has often been sweet to me to go to God, and adore him as a sovereign God, and ask sovereign mercy of Him.

I have loved the doctrines of the gospel: They have been to my soul like green pastures. The gospel has seemed to me to be the richest treasure; the treasure that I have most desired and longed that it might dwell richly in me. The way of salvation by Christ, has appeared in a general way, glorious and excellent, and most pleasant and beautiful. It has often seemed to me, that it would in a great measure spoil Heaven, to receive it in any other way. That text has often been affecting and delightful to me, *Isai. xxxii. 2.* "A man shall be an hiding place from the wind, and a covert from the tempest," &c.

It has often appeared sweet to me, to be united to Christ; to have Him for my head, and to be a member of his body: and also to have Christ for my teacher and prophet. I very often think with sweetness and longings and pantings of soul, of being a little child, taking hold of Christ, to be led by Him thro' the wilderness of this world. That text, *Matt. xviii.* at the beginning, has often been sweet to me, "Except ye be converted, and become as little children, &c." I love to think of coming to Christ, to receive salvation of him, poor in spirit, and quite empty of self; humbly exalting Him alone; cut entirely off from my own root, and to grow into, and out of Christ, to have God in Christ to be all in all; and to live by faith on the Son of God, a life of humble, unfeigned confidence in Him. That scripture has often been sweet to me, *Psal. cxv. 1.* "Not unto us, O Lord, not unto us, but unto thy name give glory, for thy mercy, and for thy truth's sake." And those words of Christ, *Luke x. 21.* "In that hour Jesus rejoiced in spirit, and said, I thank thee, O Father, Lord of Heaven and earth, that thou hast hid these things from the wise and prudent, and hast revealed them unto babes: even so Father, for so it seemed good in thy sight." That Sovereignty of God that Christ rejoiced in, seemed to me to be worthy to be rejoiced in; and that rejoicing of Christ, seemed to me to shew the excellency of Christ, and the spirit that he was of.

Sometimes only mentioning a single word, causes my heart to burn within me: or only seeing the name of Christ, or the name of some attribute of God. And God has appeared glorious to me, on account of the trinity. It has made me have exalting thoughts of God, that he subsists in three persons; Father, Son, and Holy Ghost.

The

The sweetest joys and delights I have experienced, have not been those that have arisen from a hope of my own good estate; but in a direct view of the glorious things of the gospel. When I enjoy this sweetness, it seems to carry me above the thoughts of my own safe estate. It seems at such times, a loss that I cannot bear, to take off my eye from the glorious, pleasant object I behold without me, to turn my eye in upon myself and my own good estate.

My heart has been much on the advancement of Christ's kingdom in the world. The histories of the past advancement of Christ's kingdom, have been sweet to me. When I have read histories of past ages, the pleasantest thing in all my reading has been, to read of the kingdom of Christ being promoted. And when I have expected in my reading, to come to any such thing, I have lotted upon it all the way as I read. And my mind has been much entertained and delighted, with the scripture promises and prophecies, of the future glorious advancement of Christ's kingdom on earth.

I have sometimes had a sense of the excellent fulness of Christ, and his meetness and suitability as a Saviour; whereby he has appeared to me, far above all, the chief of ten thousands. And his blood and atonement has appeared sweet, and his righteousness sweet; which is always accompanied with an ardency of spirit, and inward strugglings and breathings and groanings, that cannot be uttered, to be emptied of myself, and swallowed up in Christ.

Once, as I rid out into the woods for my health, *Anno 1737*; and having lit from my horse in a retired place, as my manner commonly has been, to walk for divine contemplation and prayer; I had a view, that for me was extraordinary, of the glory of the Son of God; as mediator between God and man; and his wonderful, great, full, pure and sweet grace and love, and meek and gentle condescension. This grace, that appeared to me so calm and sweet, appeared great above the Heavens. The person of Christ appeared ineffably excellent, with an excellency great enough to swallow up all thought and conception. Which continued, as near as I can judge, about an hour; which kept me, the greater part of the time, in a flood of tears, and weeping aloud. I felt within, an ardency of soul to be, what I know not otherwise how to express, than to be emptied and annihilated; to lie in the dust, and to be full of Christ alone; to love him with a holy and pure love; to trust in him;

live upon him; to serve and follow him, and to be totally wrapt up in the fulness of Christ; and to be perfectly sanctified and made pure, with a divine and heavenly purity. I have several other times, had views very much of the same nature, and that have had the same effects.

I have many times had a sense of the glory of the third person in the Trinity, in his office of sanctifier; in his holy operations communicating divine light and life to the soul. God in the communications of his holy Spirit, has appeared as an infinite fountain of divine glory and sweetness; being full and sufficient to fill and satisfy the soul: pouring forth itself in sweet communications, like the sun in its glory, sweetly and pleasantly diffusing light and life.

I have sometimes had an affecting sense of the excellency of the word of God, as a word of life; as the light of life; a sweet, excellent, life-giving word: accompanied with a thirsting after that word, that it might dwell richly in my heart.

I have often since I lived in this town, had very affecting views of my own sinfulness and vileness; very frequently so as to hold me in a kind of loud weeping, sometimes for a considerable time together: so that I have often been forced to shut myself up. I have had a vastly greater sense of my own wickedness, and the badness of my heart, since my conversion, than ever I had before. It has often appeared to me, that if God should mark iniquity against me, I should appear the very worst of all mankind; of all that have been since the beginning of the world to this time: and that I should have by far the lowest place in hell. When others that have come to talk with me about their soul concerns, have expressed the sense they have had of their own wickedness, by saying that it seemed to them that they were as bad as the Devil himself; I thought their expressions seemed exceeding faint and feeble, to represent my wickedness. I thought I should wonder, that they should content themselves with such expressions as these, if I had any reason to imagine, that their sin bore any proportion to mine. It seemed to me, I should wonder at my self, if I should express my wickedness in such feeble terms as they did.

My wickedness, as I am in myself, has long appeared to me perfectly ineffable, and infinitely swallowing up all thought and imagination; like an infinite deluge, or infinite mountains over my head. I know not how to express better, what my sins appear to me to be, than by heaping infinite upon infinite, and

multiplying infinite by infinite. I go about very often, for this many years, with these expressions in my mind, and in my mouth, "infinite upon infinite—infinite upon infinite!" When I look into my heart, and take a view of my wickedness, it looks like an abyss infinitely deeper than hell. And it appears to me, that were it not for free grace, exalted and raised up to the infinite height of all the fulness and glory of the great JEHOVAH, and the arm of his power and grace stretched forth, in all the majesty of his power, and in all the glory of his sovereignty; I should appear sunk down in my sins infinitely below hell itself, far beyond sight of every thing, but the piercing eye of God's grace, that can pierce even down to such a depth, and to the bottom of such an abyss.

And yet, I am not in the least inclined to think, that I have a greater conviction of sin than ordinary. It seems to me, my conviction of sin is exceeding small, and faint. It appears to me enough to amaze me, that I have no more sense of my sin. I know certainly, that I have very little sense of my sinfulness. That my sins appear to me so great, do not seem to me to be, because I have so much more conviction of sin than other christians, but because I am so much worse, and have so much more wickedness to be convinced of. When I have had these turns of weeping and crying for my sins, I thought I knew in the time of it, that my repentance was nothing to my sin.

I have greatly longed of late, for a broken heart, and to lie low before God. And when I ask for humility of God, I can not bear the thoughts of being no more humble, than other christians. It seems to me, that though their degrees of humility may be suitable for them; yet it would be a vile self-exaltation in me, not to be the lowest in humility of all mankind. Others speaking of their longing to be humbled to the dust. Though that may be a proper expression for them, I always think for myself, that I ought to be humbled down below hell. It is an expression that it has long been natural for me to use in prayer to God. I ought to lie infinitely low before God.

It is affecting to me to think, how ignorant I was, when I was a young christian, of the bottomless, infinite depths of wickedness, pride, hypocrisy and deceit left in my heart.

I have vastly a greater sense of my universal, exceeding dependence on God's grace and strength, and meer good pleasure, of late, than I used formerly to have; and have experienced more of an abhorrence of my own righteousness. The thought of any comfort or joy, arising in me, on any consideration, or
reflection

reflection on my own amiableness, or any of my performances or experiences, or any goodness of heart or life, is nauseous and detestable to me. And yet I am greatly afflicted with a proud and self-righteous spirit; much more sensibly, than I used to be formerly. I see that serpent rising and putting forth it's head, continually, every where, all around me.

Though it seems to me, that in some respects I was a far better christian, for two or three years after my first conversion, than I am now; and lived in a more constant delight and pleasure: yet of late years, I have had a more full and constant sense of the absolute sovereignty of God, and a delight in that sovereignty; and have had more of a sense of the glory of Christ, as a mediator, as revealed in the gospel. On one Saturday night in particular, had a particular discovery of the excellency of the gospel of Christ, above all other doctrines; so that I could not but say to my self; "This is my chosen light, my chosen doctrine;" and of Christ, "This is my chosen prophet." It appeared to me to be sweet beyond all expression, to follow Christ, and to be taught and enlightened and instructed by him; to learn of him, and live to him.

Another Saturday night, January 1738—9, had such a sense, how sweet and blessed a thing it was, to walk in the way of duty, to do that which was right and meet to be done, and agreeable to the holy mind of God; that it caused me to break forth into a kind of a loud weeping, which held me some time; so that I was forced to shut myself up, and fasten the doors. I could not but as it were cry out, "How happy are they which do that which is right in the sight of GOD! They are blessed indeed, they are the happy ones! I had at the same time, a very affecting sense, how meet and suitable it was that God should govern the world, and order all things according to his own pleasure; and I rejoiced in it, that God reigned, and that his will was done.

PART III.

Containing a History of his Life from his ENTERING on the
Work of the Ministry, unto his DEATH.

SECTION I.

HIS GENERAL MANNER OF LIFE.

MR. EDWARDS made a secret of his private devotion, and therefore it cannot be particularly known: though there is much evidence, that he was punctual, constant and frequent in secret prayer, and often kept days of fasting and prayer in secret; and set apart time for serious, devout meditations on spiritual and eternal things, as part of his religious exercise in secret. It appears by his diary that in his youth he determined to attend secret prayer more than twice a day, when circumstances would allow. He was, so far as it can be known, much on his knees in secret, and in devout reading God's word, and meditation upon it. And his constant, solemn converse with God in these exercises of secret religion made his face, as it were, to shine before others. His appearance, his countenance, words and whole demeanor, (though without any thing of affected grimace and sour austerity) was attended with a seriousness, gravity and solemnity, which was the natural genuine indication and expression of a deep, abiding sense of divine things on his mind, and of his living constantly in the fear of God.

Agreeable to his resolutions, he was very careful and abstemious in eating and drinking; as doubtless it was necessary for great a student, and a person of so delicate and tender a bodily make as he was, should be, in order to be comfortable and useful. When he had, by careful observation, found what kind, and what quantity of diet, best suited his constitution, and rendered him most fit to pursue his work, he was very strict and exact in complying with it; and in this respect *lived by rule*; and herein constantly practised great self-denial: Which he also did in his constant early rising, in order to redeem time for his study. He used himself to rise by four or between four and five in the morning.

Though

Though he was of a tender and delicate constitution, yet few students are capable of close application more hours in a day than he. He commonly spent thirteen hours every day in his study. His most usual diversion in the summer was riding on horseback and walking. He would commonly, unless diverted by company, ride two or three miles after dinner to some lonely grove, where he would dismount and walk a while. At which times he generally carried his pen and ink with him, to note any thought that should be suggested, which he chose to retain and pursue, as what promised some light on any important subject. In the winter he was wont almost daily to take an ax and chop wood moderately for the space of half an hour or more.

He had an uncommon thirst for knowlege, in the pursuit of which, he spared no cost nor pains. He read all the books, especially books of divinity, that he could come at, from which he could hope to get any help in his pursuit of knowlege. And in this, he confined not himself to authors of any particular sect or denomination; yea took much pains to come at the books of the most noted writers, who advance a scheme of divinity most contrary to his own principles. But he studied the BIBLE more than all other books, and more than most other divines do. His uncommon acquaintance with the Bible appears in his sermons, and in most of his publications: and his great pains in studying it are manifest in his manuscript notes upon it; of which a more particular account may be given hereafter. He took his religious principles from the Bible, and not from any human system or body of divinity. Though his principles were *Calvinistic*, yet he called no man, father. He thought and judged for himself, and was truly very much of an original. This is evident by what he published in his life-time, and is yet more so by his MSS. Many volumes of which he has left; and the reader may expect a more particular account of them in the sequel. For reading was not the only method he took to improve his mind; but he did this much by writing; without which, it is probable no student can make improvements to the best advantage. Agreeable to resolution 11th, he applied himself with all his might to find out the truth: He searched for understanding and knowlege, as for silver, and digged for it, as for hid treasures. Every thought on any subject, which appeared to him worth pursuing and preserving, he pursued, as far as he then could, with
his

his pen in his hand. Thus he was all his days, like the busy bee, collecting from every opening flower, and storing up a flock of knowlege, which was indeed sweet to him, as the honey and the honey-comb. And as he advanced in years and in knowlege, his pen was more and more employed, and his manuscripts grew much faster on his hands.

He was thought by some, who had but a slight acquaintance with him to be stiff and unfociable; but this was owing to want of better acquaintance. He was not a man of many words indeed, and was some-what reserved among strangers, and those on whose candor and friendship he did know he could rely. And this was probably owing to two things. First, the strict guard he set over his tongue from his youth, which appears by his resolutions, taking great care never to use it in any way that might prove mischievous to any; never to *sin with his tongue*; or to improve it in idle, trivial and impertinent talk, which generally makes up a great part of the conversation of those who are full of words in all companies. He was sensible that in the multitude of words there wanteth not Sin; and therefore refrained his lips, and habituated himself to *think* before he *spoke*, and to propose some good end even in all his words; which led him to be above many others, agreeable to St. James's advice, *slow to speak*. Secondly, this was in part the effect of his bodily constitution. He possessed but a comparative small flock of animal life: his animal spirits were low and he had not strength of lungs to spare, that would be necessary in order to make him what would be called, an affable, facecious gentleman, in all companies. They who have a great flow of animal spirits, and so can speak with more ease and less expence, may doubtless lawfully practice free conversation in all companies for a lower end, (e. g. to please and render themselves acceptable) than he, who has not such a flock to expend upon. It becomes *him* to reserve what he has, for higher and more important service. Besides, the want of animal spirits lays a man under a *natural* inability to that freedom of conversation, at all times, and in whatever company he is; which those of more life naturally go into; and the greatest degree of a fociable disposition, humility and benevolence, will not remove this obstacle.

He was not forward to enter into any dispute among strangers, and in companies where were persons of different sentiments; as he was sensible that such disputes are generally unprofitable

profitable, and often sinful and of bad consequence; and he thought he could dispute to the best advantage with his pen in his hand: Yet he was always free to give his sentiments on any subject proposed to him; and remove any difficulties or objections offered by way of enquiry, as lying in the way of what he looked upon to be the truth. But how groundless the imputation of *stiff* and *unsociable* was, his known and tried friends best knew. They alwas found him easy of access, kind and condescending; and though not talkative, yet affable and free. Among such whose candor and friendship he had experienced, he threw off the reserve, and was most open and free; quite patient of contradiction, while the utmost opposition was made to his sentiments, that could be by any plausible arguments or objections. And indeed, he was on all occasions quite sociable and free withal, who had any special business with him.

In his conduct in his family he practised that conscientious exactness which was perspicuous in all his ways. He maintained a great esteem and regard for his amiable and excellent consort. Much of the tender and kind was expressed in his conversation with her and conduct towards her. He was wont frequently to admit her into his study, and converse freely with her on matters of religion. And he used commonly to pray with her in his study, at least once a day, unless something extraordinary prevented. The time in which this used to be commonly attended, was just before going to bed, after prayers in the family. As he rose very early himself, he was wont to have his family up in season in the morning; after which, before the family entered on the business of the day, he attended on family prayers. When a chapter in the Bible was read, commonly by candle-light in the winter; upon which he asked his children questions according to their age and capacity; and took occasion to explain some passages in it, or enforce any duty recommended, &c. as he thought most proper.

He was careful and thorough in the government of his children; and, as a consequence of this, they revered, esteemed and loved him. He took special care to begin his government of them in season. When they first discovered any considerable degree of will and stubbornness, he would attend to them till he had thoroughly subdued them and brought them to submit. And such prudent thorough discipline, exercised with the greatest calmness, and commonly without striking

striking a blow, being repeated once or twice, was generally sufficient for that child; and effectually established his parental authority, and produced a chearful obedience ever after.

He kept a watchful eye over his children, that he might admonish them of the *first* wrong step, and direct them in the right way. He took opportunities to treat with them in his study, singly and particularly about their own soul's concerns; and to give them warning, exhortation and direction, as he saw occasion. He took much pains to instruct them in the principles of religion; in which he made use of the *Assembly's Shorter Catechism*: not meerly by taking care that they learned it by heart; but by leading them into an understanding of the doctrines therein taught, by asking them questions on each answer, and explaining it to them. His usual time to attend this was on the evening before the sabbath. And as he believed that the Sabbath or holy time began at sun-set the evening before the day, he ordered his family to finish all their secular business by that time or before; when they were all called together, and a psalm was sung and prayer attended, as an introduction to the sanctifying the Sabbath. This care and exactness effectually prevented that intruding on holy time, by attending on secular business, too common in families where the evening before the Sabbath is pretended to be observed.

He was a great enemy to young people's unseasonable company-keeping and frolicking, as he looked upon it a great means of corrupting and ruining youth. And he thought the excuse many parents make for tolerating their children in it, (*viz.* that it is the custom, and others children practise it, which renders it difficult, and even impossible to restrain theirs) was insufficient and frivolous: and manifested a great degree of stupidity, on supposition the practice was hurtful and pernicious to their souls. And when some of his children grew up he found no difficulty in restraining them from this pernicious practice; but they cheerfully complied with the will of their parents herein. He allowed not his children to be from home after nine o'clock at night, when they went abroad to see their friends and companions. Neither were they allowed to sit up much after that time, in his own house, when any came to make them a visit. If any gentleman desired acquaintance with his daughters; after handsomely introducing himself, by properly consulting the parents, he was allowed all proper opportunity for it; a room and fire if needed: but must not intrude on the proper hours of rest and sleep, or the religion and order of the family.

He

He had a strict and inviolable regard to justice in all his dealings with his neighbours, and was very careful to provide for things honest in the sight of all men; so that scarcely a man had any dealings with him, that was not conscious of his uprightness. He appeared to have a sacred regard to truth in his words, both in promises and narrations, agreeable to his resolutions. This doubtless was one reason why he was not so full of words as many are. No man feared to rely on his veracity.

He was cautious in chusing his *intimate friends*, and therefore had not many that might properly be called such. But to them he shewed himself friendly in a peculiar manner. He was indeed a faithful friend, and able above most others to keep a secret. To them he discovered himself more than to others, led them into his views and ends in his conduct in particular instances: by which they had abundant evidence that he well understood human nature; and that his general reservedness, and many particular instances of his conduct, which a stranger might impute to ignorance of men, were really owing to his uncommon knowlege of mankind.

His conversation with his friends was always savory and profitable: In this he was remarkable, and almost singular.—He was not wont to spend his time with them, in scandal, evil-speaking and back-biting, or in foolish jesting, idle chat, and telling stories: But his mouth was that of the just, which bringeth forth wisdom, and his lips dispersed knowlege. His tongue was as the pen of a ready writer, while he conversed about important, heavenly, divine things, which his heart was so full of, in such a natural and free manner, as to be most entertaining and instructive: so that none of his friends could enjoy his company without instruction and profit, unless it was by their own fault.

His great benevolence to mankind discovered itself, among other ways, by the uncommon regard he shewed to liberality, and charity to the poor and distressed. He was much in recommending this, both in his public discourses and private conversation. He often declared it to be his opinion, that professed christians, in these days are greatly deficient in this duty; and much more so, than in most other parts of external christianity. He often observed how much this is spoken of, recommended and encouraged in the holy scripture, especially in the New-Testament. And it was his opinion, that every particular church ought by frequent and liberal contributions, to maintain a public stock, that might be ready for the poor and necessitous members

members of that church: and that the principal business of deacons is to take care of the poor in the faithful and judicious distribution and improvement of the church's temporals, lodged in their hands. And he did not content himself with only recommending charity to others, but practised it much himself: Though, according to his master's advice, he took great care to conceal his deeds of charity; by which means doubtless most of his alms-deeds will be unknown till the resurrection, which if known, would prove him to be as great an instance of charity as any that can be produced in this age. This is not mere conjecture, but is evident many ways. He was forward to give on all public occasions of charity, though when it could properly be done, he always concealed the sum given. And some instances of his giving more privately have accidentally come to the knowledge of others, in which his liberality appeared in a very extraordinary degree. One of the instances was this. Upon hearing that a poor obscure man, whom he never saw, or any of his kindred, was by an extraordinary bodily disorder, brought to great straits; he, unasked, gave a considerable sum to a friend to be delivered to the distressed person; having first required a promise of him, that he would let neither the person, who was the object of his charity, nor any one else know by whom it was given. This may serve both as an instance of his extraordinary charity, and of his great care to conceal it. *

Mr. Edwards had the most universal character of a *good preacher* of almost any minister in this age. There were but few that heard him, who did not call him a good preacher, however they might dislike his religious principles, and be much offended at the same truths when delivered by others: And most admired him above all that ever they heard. His eminency as a preacher seems to be owing to the following things.

First, The great pains he took in composing his sermons, especially in the first part of his life. As by his early rising, and constant attention to his study, he had more time than most others; so he spent more time in making his sermons. He wrote most of his sermons all out, for near twenty years after he first began to preach; though he did not wholly confine himself to his notes in his delivering them.

Secondly,

* As both the giver, and the object of his charity are dead, and all the ends of the proposed secrecy are answered; it is thought not inconsistent with the above mentioned promise, to make known the fact, as it is here related.

Secondly, His great acquaintance with divinity, his study and knowlege of the bible. His extensive and universal knowlege, and great clearness of thought, enabled him to handle every subject with great judgment and propriety, and to bring out of his treasury things new and old. Every subject he handled was instructive, plain, entertaining and profitable; which was much owing to his being master of the subject, and his great skill to treat it in a most natural, easy, and profitable manner. None of his composures were dry speculations, or unmeaning harangues, or words without ideas. When he dwelt on those truths which are much controverted and opposed by many, which was often the case, he would set them in such a natural and easy light, and every sentiment from step to step, would drop from his lips, attended with such clear and striking evidence, both from scripture and reason, as even to force the assent of every attentive hearer.

Thirdly, His excellency as a preacher was very much the effect of his great acquaintance with his own heart, his inward sense and high relish of divine truths, and the high exercise of true, experimental religion. This gave him a great insight into human nature: He knew what was in man, both the saint and the sinner. This helped him to skill, to lay truth before the mind, so as not only to convince the judgment, but touch the heart and conscience; and enabled him to speak out of the abundance of his heart, what he knew, and testify what he had seen and felt. This gave him a taste and discerning, without which he could not have been able to fill his sermons, as he did, with such striking, affecting sentiments, all suited to solemnize, move, and rectify the heart of the hearer. His sermons were well connected, not usually long, and commonly a large part taken up in the improvement; which was closely connected with the subject, and consisted in sentiments naturally flowing from it.

But no description of his sermons will give the reader the idea of them which they have who sat under his preaching, or have even read some of his discourses which are in print. There is a great number now in manuscript, which are probably as worthy the view of the public, and at least tend as much to instruct and quicken christians, as most that have been published in this century.

His appearance in the desk was with a good grace, and his delivery easy, natural and very solemn. He had not a strong, loud

loud voice ; but appeared with such gravity and solemnity, and spake with such distinctness, clearness and precision ; his words were so full of ideas, set in such a plain and striking light, that few speakers have been so able to demand the attention of an audience as he. His words often discovered a great degree of inward fervor, without much noise or external emotion, and fell with great weight on the minds of his hearers. He made but little motion of his head or hands in the desk, but spake so as to discover the motion of his own heart, which tended in the most natural and effectual manner to move and affect others.

As he wrote his sermons out at large for many years, and always wrote a considerable part of most of his public discourses ; so he carried his notes into the desk with him, and read the most that he had wrote ; yet he was not so confined to his notes, when he had wrote at large, but that, if some thoughts were suggested while he was speaking, which did not occur when writing, and appeared to him pertinent and striking, he would deliver them ; and that with as great propriety and fluency, and oftner with greater pathos, and attended with a more sensible good effect on his hearers, than all he had wrote.

Though, as has been observed, he was wont to read so considerable a part of what he delivered ; yet he was far from thinking this the best way of preaching in general ; and looked upon his using his notes so much as he did, a deficiency and infirmity. And in the latter part of his life was inclined to think it had been better, if he had never accustomed himself to use his notes at all. It appeared to him that preaching wholly without notes, agreeable to the custom in most protestant countries, and what seems evidently to have been the manner of the apostles and primitive ministers of the gospel, was by far the most natural way ; and had the greatest tendency on the whole, to answer the end of preaching : and supposed that none who had talents equal to the work of the ministry, was incapable of speaking memoriter, if he took suitable pains for this attainment from his youth. He would have the young preacher write all his sermons, or at least most of them, out at large ; and instead of reading them to his hearers, take pains to commit them to memory. Which, though it would require a great deal of labour at first, yet would soon become easier by use, and help him to speak more correctly and freely, and be of great service to him all his days.

His prayers were indeed *extempore*. He was the farthest from any appearance of a form, as to his words and manner of expression of almost any man. He was quite singular and inimitable in this, by any who have not a spirit of real and undissembled devotion. Yet he always expressed himself with decency and propriety. He appeared to have much of the grace and spirit of prayer; to pray with the spirit and with the understanding: and he performed this part of duty much to the acceptance and edification of those who joined with him. He was not wont, in ordinary cases to be long in his prayers: an error which he observed was often hurtful to public and social prayer, as it tends rather to damp than promote true devotion.

He kept himself quite free from worldly cares. He gave himself wholly to the work of the ministry, and entangled not himself with the affairs of this life. He left the particular oversight and direction of the temporal concerns of his family, almost entirely to Mrs. Edwards; who was better able than most of her sex to take the whole care of them on her hands. He was less acquainted with most of his temporal affairs than many of his neighbours; and seldom knew when and by whom his forage for winter was gathered in, or how many milk kine he had; whence his table was furnished, &c.

He did not make it his custom to visit his people in their own houses, unless he was sent for by the sick; or he heard that they were under some special affliction. Instead of visiting from house to house, he used to preach frequently at private meetings in particular neighbourhoods; and often call the young people and children to his own house: when he used to pray with them and treat with them in a manner suited to their years and circumstances. And he catechised the children in public every Sabbath in the summer. And he used sometimes to propose questions to particular young persons in writing, for them to answer after a proper time given them to prepare. In putting out these questions, he endeavoured to suit them to the age, genius and abilities of those to whom they were given. His questions were generally such as required but a short answer; and yet could not be answered without a particular knowledge of some historical part of the scripture; and therefore led, and even obliged persons to study the bible.

He did neglect visiting his people from house to house, because he did not look upon it, in ordinary cases, to be one part of the work of the gospel minister. But he supposed that ministers should, with respect to this, consult their own talents and circumstances, and visit more or less, according to the degree in which they could hope hereby to promote the great ends of the gospel ministry. He observed that some ministers had a talent at entertaining and profiting by occasional visits among their people. They have words at will, and a knack at introducing profitable, religious discourse in a free, natural, and, as it were, undesigned way. He supposed such had a call to spend a great deal of their time in visiting their people. But he looked on his talents to be quite otherwise. He was not able to enter into a free conversation with every person he met with, and in an easy manner turn it to what topick he pleased, without the help of others, and, as it may be, against their inclination. He therefore found that his visits of this kind must be in a great degree unprofitable. And as he was settled in a great town, it would take up a great part of his time to visit from house to house; which he thought he could spend in his study to much more valuable purposes, and so as much better to promote the great ends of his ministry. For it appeared to him, that he could do the greatest good to souls, and most promote the interest of Christ by preaching and writing, and conversing with persons under religious impressions in his study; where he encouraged all such to repair; where, they might be sure, in ordinary cases, to find him: and to be allowed easy access to him, and where they were treated with all desirable tenderness, kindness and familiarity. In times therefore of the out-pouring of God's spirit, and the revival of religion among his people, his study was thronged with persons to lay open their spiritual concerns to him, and seek his advice and direction: whom he received and conversed with, with great freedom and pleasure, and had the best opportunity to deal in the most particular manner with each one.

HE was a skilful guide to souls under spiritual difficulties. And was therefore sought unto not only by his own people, but by many who lived scores of miles off. He became such an able guide, partly by his own experimental acquaintance with divine things, and unwearied study of God's word; and partly by his having so much concern with souls under spiri-
tual

tual troubles. For he had not been settled in the work of the ministry many years before the spirit of God was wonderfully poured out on his people, by which a great concern about their souls became almost universal; and a great number were hopefully the subjects of saving conversion. This was principally in the year 1734. A particular account of which has been wrote by him, entitled, *A faithful narrative of the surprising work of God in the conversion of many hundred souls in Northampton*. Which has been printed in England, Germany and America; to which the reader must be refered.

And there was another remarkable time of the outpouring of God's spirit in the years 1740, and 1741, in which Northampton partook largely; though not exclusive of most other parts of the land. Mr. Edwards in this time had to deal not only with his own people, but with multitudes of others. The hearing that the same things were at Northampton some years before, and the same Mr. Edwards had for knowlege, piety, and a great acquaintance with experimental religion, naturally led both ministers and people, in almost all parts of New-England, to look to him for direction and assistance, in this extraordinary time. Being in this time earnestly solicited by the ministers and people of many places to come and preach among them, he went to many; though he was not able to gratify all who desired him. And his preaching was attended with great success.

And as many of the ministers and people in New-England, had been unacquainted with such things as then appeared, they were greatly exposed to run wild, as it were, and actually did, by the subtle temptations of the devil, taking advantage of the ignorance and wickedness of men's hearts, go into great extremes both as opposers and friends to the work of God. Mr. Edwards was greatly helpful by his direction and assistance against the two opposite extremes, both in conversion, preaching and writing. His publications on this occasion were especially of great and extensive service. Of which it may be proper to give some account here.

The first is a sermon preached at New-Haven, Sept. 10, 1741, *On the distinguishing marks of the spirit of God, &c.*

In the year 1742, he published a book of five parts, intitled, *Some thoughts concerning the present revival of religion in New-England, and the way in which it ought to be acknowledged and promoted, &c.*

In the year 1746, he published a *Treatise on Religious Affections*, All which might be justly considered by the church of christ as a voice behind them saying, "This is the way, walk therein." Especially the last-mentioned book, which has been esteemed by many the best that has been wrote on that subject; setting the distinction between true and false religion in the most clear and striking light.

To the same purpose, is *The life of the Rev. Mr. DAVID BRAINERD, with reflections and observations thereon*; published by Mr. EDWARDS in the year 1749.

Mr. Edwards was what by some is called a rigid *Calvinist*. Those doctrines of Calvinism, which have been most objected against, and given the greatest offence, appeared to him as scriptural, reasonable and important as any; and he thought that to give them up, was in effect to give up all. And therefore he looked upon those who called themselves *Calvinists*, that were for palliating the matter, by, as it were, trimming off the knots of Calvinism, that they might conform it more to the taste of those who are most disposed to object against it, were really giving up and betraying the cause they pretend to espouse; and were paving the way not only to Arminianism, but to Deism. For if these doctrines, in the whole length and breadth of them were relinquished, he did not see, where a man could set his foot down with consistency and safety, short of Deism, or even Atheism itself; or rather universal Scepticism.

He judged that nothing was wanting, but to have these doctrines properly stated and judiciously and well defended, in order to their appearing most agreeable to reason and common sense, as well as the doctrines of revelation; and that this therefore was the only effectual method to convince, or silence and shame the opposers of them. All will be able to satisfy themselves of the truth of this, by reading his treatise on *Justification*, and his two last books on *the Freedom of the Will*, and *Original Sin*.

In this view of things, he thought it of importance that ministers should be very critical in examining candidates for the ministry, with respect to their *principles*, as well as their religious disposition and morals. And on this account he met with considerable difficulty and opposition in some instances. His opinion was, that an erroneous or unfaithful minister was likely

to do more hurt than good to the church of Christ; and therefore he could not have any hand in introducing a man into the ministry, unless he appeared *sound in the faith*, and manifested to a judgment of charity, a *disposition to be faithful*.

SECTION II.

HIS DISMISSION from *Northampton*, with the *occasion* and *circumstances* of it.

MR. EDWARDS was very happy in the esteem and love of his people for many years, and there was the greatest prospect of his living and dying so. He was the last minister almost in New-England that would have been pitched upon to be opposed and renounced by his people. But by what has come to pass with respect to this, we have an instructive lesson on the instability of all human affairs, and the unreasonableness of trusting in man.

In the year 1744, Mr. Edwards was informed that some of the young persons in town, who were members of the church, had books in keeping, which they improved to promote lascivious and obscene discourse among the young people. And upon enquiring, a number of persons were found to testify, that they had heard one and another from time to time talk obscenely; as what they were led to by reading a book or books, which they had among them. Upon which Mr. Edwards thought the brethren of the church ought to look into the matter. And in order to introduce it, he preached a sermon from Heb. xii. 15, 16. "Looking diligently, lest any man fail of the grace of God, lest any root of bitterness springing up trouble you, and thereby many be defiled: lest there be any fornicator, or profane person as Esau, &c." After sermon he desired the brethren of the church to stay, and told them what information he had got; and proposed whether they thought proper to take any measures to examine into the matter. They with one consent and much zeal, manifested it to be their opinion, that it ought to be enquired into. And proceeded to choose a number of men, to assist their pastor in examining into the affair. Upon which Mr. Edwards appointed

the time for their meeting at his house: and then read a catalogue of the names of young persons, whom he desired to come to his house at the same time. Some were the accused, and some witnesses; but it was not then declared of which number any particular person was.

When the names were published, it appeared, that there were but few of the considerable families in town, to which none of the persons named did belong, or were nearly related. Whether this was the occasion of the alteration or not, before the day appointed came, a great number of heads of families altered their minds (yea many condemned what they had done, before they got home to their own houses) and declared, they did not think proper to proceed as they had done; that their children should not be called to an account in such a way for such things, &c. &c. And the town was suddenly all on a blaze. This strengthened the hands of the accused, and some refused to appear, and others that did appear, behaved unmannerly, and with a great degree of insolence, and contempt of the authority of the church. And little or nothing could be done further in the affair.

This was the occasion of weakening Mr. Edwards's hands in the work of the ministry, especially among the young people: with whom by this means he greatly lost his influence! This seemed in a great measure to put an end to Mr. Edwards's usefulness at Northampton, and doubtless laid a foundation, and will help to account for the surprizing events which will by and by be related. To be sure he had no great visible success after this; but the influences of God's spirit were greatly withheld, and security and carnality much increased among them. That great and singular degree of visible religion and good order which had been found among them, soon began gradually to decay; and the youth have since been more wanton and dissolute.

Mr. Stoddard, Mr. Edwards's grand-father and predecessor in the work of the ministry, was of the opinion, that unconverted persons had a right in the sight of God, or considered as such, to the sacrament of the Lord's supper; that therefore it was their duty to come to that ordinance, though they knew they had no true goodness, or gospel holiness. He maintained, that visible christianity does not consist in a profession or appearance of that wherein true holiness or real christianity consists. That therefore the profession which persons make in order to be received as visible members of Christ's church, ought
not

NOT to be such as to express or imply a real compliance with, or consent to the terms of the covenant of grace, or a hearty embracing the gospel. So that they who really reject Jesus Christ, and dislike the gospel way of salvation in their hearts, and know that this is true of themselves, may make the profession without lying and hypocrisy. Accordingly, he endeavoured to form a short profession for persons to make in order to be admitted into the church and come to the sacrament, answerable to this principle. And it took place and was practised upon in Northampton; and persons were admitted into the church, and to the sacrament, not under the notion of their being true saints, or that they had any real goodness.

Mr. Stoddard's appearing to maintain this principle made a great noise in the country; and he was opposed as introducing something contrary to the principles and practice of almost all the churches in New-England. And the matter was publicly controverted between him and Dr. Increase Mather, of Boston. However, through Mr. Stoddard's great influence and ascendance over the people at Northampton, it was introduced there though not without opposition. And his principles by degrees spread very much among ministers and people in that country, and in other parts of New-England; though no church except Northampton publicly and professedly acted upon this principle by altering the profession that those made, who were admitted to the sacrament, to suit it to such a notion: but required of all who joined to the church a profession of that wherein true christianity or real godliness consists. And of late years his opinion that persons who have no real goodness, but are in a christless state, and know themselves to be so, may make a christian profession and come to the sacrament, without lying and hypocrisy; and that they have a right, and it is their duty so to do, has greatly spread in the country.

Mr. Edwards had some hesitation about this matter when he first settled at Northampton, and afterwards; but did not receive such a degree of conviction, that the admitting persons into the church, who made no pretence to real godliness was wrong, as to prevent his practising upon it with a good conscience, for some years. But at length his doubts about the matter greatly increased, which put him upon examining it more thoroughly than he had ever before done, by searching the scripture, and reading and examining such books, as were written to defend the admission of persons to sacraments, without a
profession

profession of saving faith. And the result was a full conviction that it was wrong, and that he could not practice upon it with a good conscience. He was fully convinced that to be a visible christian was to put on the visibility or appearance of a real christian; that the profession of christianity was a profession of that, wherein real christianity consists; was therefore a profession of true respect of Christ, and a hearty embracing the gospel, &c. That therefore no person who rejected Christ in his heart, could make such a profession consistent with truth. And therefore, as the ordinance of the Lord's supper was instituted for none but visible professing christians, none but those who are real christians have a real right in the sight of God to come to that ordinance: and that none ought to be admitted thereto, who do not make a profession of real christianity, and so cannot be received in a judgment of charity as true friends to Jesus Christ, or real saints. *

When Mr. Edwards's sentiments were known, in the spring of the year 1744, it gave great offence, and the town was put into a great ferment: and before he was heard in his own defence, or it was known by many what his principles were, the general cry was to have him dismissed, as what alone would satisfy them. This was evident from the whole tenor of their conduct, as they neglected and opposed the most proper means of calmly considering, and so understanding the matter in dispute, and persisted in a refusal to attend to what Mr. Edwards had to say in defence of his principles. And from beginning to end opposed the measures which had the best tendency to compromise and heal the difficulty; and with much zeal pursued those, which were calculated to make a separation certain and speedy,

Mr. Edwards thought of preaching on the subject, that they might know what were his sentiments, and what were the grounds of them, (of both which he was sensible the most of them were quite ignorant) before they took any step for a separation between him and his people. But that he might do
nothing

* They who have a desire more fully to understand this controversy and know if it is justly represented here, may do it by reading what Mr. Edwards wrote on this occasion, in order to explain and vindicate his principles; together with the Rev. Mr. Williams's answer, and Mr. Edwards's reply to him. And if they please, they may consult what Dr. Mather, and Mr. Stoddard before wrote on this subject.

nothing to increase the tumult, but on the contrary take all those steps, which he could with a good conscience, that tended to peace, he first proposed the thing to the church's standing committee; supposing that if he entered on the subject publicly with their consent, it would prevent the ill consequences which otherwise he feared would follow. But the most of them would by no means consent to it, but strenuously opposed it. Upon which he gave it over for the present, as what in such circumstances would rather raise a tumult, and blow the fire up to a greater height, than answer the good ends proposed.

Mr. Edwards being sensible that his principles were not understood, and much misrepresented through the country; and finding that his people were in too much of a heat calmly to attend to the matter in controversy then; and were in a disposition even to refuse to hear him preach upon it, proposed to print what he had to say on the point; as this seemed to be the only way left him to have a fair hearing. Accordingly his people consented to put off the calling a council, till what he should write was published. But they manifested great uneasiness in waiting, before it came out of the press. And when it was published, it was read but by very few of them. Mr. Edwards being sensible of this, renewed his proposal to preach upon it, and at a meeting of the brethren of the church asked their consent in the following terms: "I desire that the brethren would manifest their consent, that I should declare the reasons of my opinion relating to full communion in the church, in lectures appointed for that end: Not as an act of authority, or as putting the power of declaring the whole counsel of God out of my hands; but for peace sake, and to prevent occasion of strife." But it passed in the negative.

Mr. Edwards then proposed that it should be left to a few of the neighbouring ministers, whether it was not, all things considered, reasonable that he should be heard in this matter from the pulpit, before the affair should be brought to an issue. But this also passed in the negative.

However, he having had the advice of the ministers and messengers of the neighbouring churches, who met at Northampton to advise them under their difficulties, proceeded to appoint a lecture, in order to preach on the subject, proposing to do so weekly until he had finished what he had to say. On Monday there was a precinct or society meeting, in which a

vote

vote was passed to choose a committee to go to Mr. Edwards, and desire him not to preach lectures on the subject in controversy, according to his declaration and appointment. And accordingly, proceeded to choose a committee of three men for this purpose, who waited on him, and did their errand. However, Mr. Edwards thought proper to proceed according to his proposal, and accordingly preached a number of sermons until he had finished what he had to say on the subject. These lectures were very thinly attended by his own people: but great numbers of strangers from the neighbouring towns attended them, so many as to make above half the congregation. This was in February and March 1750.

The calling a decisive council to determine the matter of difference between pastor and people, or rather to dismiss the pastor from his church and people, (for the delay of which a great deal of impatience had been publicly manifested) was now more particularly attended to by Mr. Edwards and the church.

Mr. Edwards had before this insisted upon it from time to time, that they were by no means ripe for such a procedure; (as they had not yet given him a fair hearing in defence of his cause: which if they would do, perhaps the need of such a council would be superseded. And besides, he thought there was abundant public evidence, that they were not yet in a temper suited to attend on, and be active in such a transaction, as the dissolving the relation between them and their pastor; which would, as things then stood, probably be the event. He observed, "That it was exceeding unbecoming churches
 " of the Lamb of God to manage their religious affairs of the
 " greatest importance in a ferment and tumult, which ought
 " to be managed with great solemnity, deep humiliation, and
 " submission to the awful frowns of heaven, humble dependence on God, and with fervent prayer and supplication to
 " him. That therefore for them to go about such an affair,
 " in such a manner as they did, would be most unbecoming
 " the gospel, greatly to the dishonor of God and religion, and
 " a way in which a people cannot expect a blessing. That
 " such a great affair as this should be gone about with calm
 " consideration; but that such a temper as the people were
 " then in, was wholly inconsistent with this."

But having used all means which he could think of within his power to bring them to a more calm and charitable temper, and to hear and weigh what he had to say in his own defence,

with

with attention and candor; and finding that nothing prevailed; but rather the tumult and uproar was increased; he consented that a decisive council should be called without any further delay.

But a difficulty attended the choice of a council, which was for some time insuperable. It was agreed that the council should be mutually chosen, one half by the pastor, and the other half by the church: but the people insisted upon it that he should be confined to the county in his choice. Mr. Edwards thought this an unreasonable restraint on him, as it was known that the ministers and churches in that county were almost universally against him in the controversy that divided him and his people, and made the two parties. He indeed did not suppose that the business of the proposed council would be to determine whether his opinion which was the occasion of the difficulty between him and his people was right or no; or that what they were to judge of, depended upon this. But their business would be — to see and determine whether any possible way could be devised for an accommodation between pastor and people, and to use their wisdom and endeavour in order to this. And if they found this impracticable, they must determine, whether things were now ripe for a separation; whether what ought in justice to be previous to a separation had already actually been done, so that there was nothing further in justice to be demanded by either of the parties concerned, before a separation should take place. And if he was dismissed by them, it would be their business to set forth to the world in what manner and for what cause he was dismissed: how far he was innocent, and whether he might yet be employed in the work of the ministry, &c. All which were matters of great importance to him, and required upright and impartial judges. And considering the great influence a difference in religious opinions has to prejudice men one against another; and the close connection of the point, in which most of the ministers and churches in the county differed from him, with the matter to be judged of, he did not think they could be reasonably looked upon so impartial judges, as that the matter ought to be wholly left to them. Besides, he thought the case being so new and extraordinary, required the ablest judges in the land. For these, and some other reasons, which he offered, he insisted upon liberty to go out of the county for those members of the proposed council, in which he was to have a choice. In this,

as was just now said, the people strenuously and obstinately opposed him. They at length agreed to leave the matter to a council consisting of the ministers and messengers of the five neighbouring churches: who, after they had met twice upon it, and had the case largely debated before them, were equally divided, and therefore left the matter undetermined.

However, they were all agreed, that Mr. Edwards ought to have liberty to go out of the county for some of the council. And at the next church meeting, which was on the 26th of March, Mr. Edwards offered to join with them in calling a council, if they would consent that he should chuse two of the churches out of the county, in case the council consisted of but ten churches. The church however refused to comply with this at one meeting after another repeatedly; and proceeded to warn a church meeting and choose a moderator, in order to act without their pastor.

But to pass by many particulars, at length at a meeting of the church, warned by their pastor, May 3d. they voted their consent to his proposal of going out of the county for two of the churches, that should be applied to. And then they proceeded to make choice of the ten ministers and churches, of which the council should consist. Accordingly, the churches were sent to, and the council convened on the 19th of June. Who, after they had made some fruitless attempts for a composition between the pastor and church, passed a resolve, by the majority of one voice * only, to the following purpose: "That it is expedient that the pastoral relation between Mr. Edwards and his church be immediately dissolved if the people still persist in desiring it." And it being publicly put to the people, whether they still insisted on Mr. Edwards's dismissal from the pastoral office over them? A great majority (above two hundred against twenty) zealously voted for his dismissal. And he was accordingly dismissed June 22, 1750.

The dissenting part of the council, entered their protest against this proceeding, judging that it was too much in a hurry, as they were by no means ripe for a separation, considering the
past

* One of the churches which Mr. Edwards chose did not see fit to join the council. However, the minister of that church being at Northampton at the sitting of the council, was desired by Mr. Edwards and the church to sit in council and act, which he did. But there being no messenger from the church, the council was not full, and there was a disparity; by which means doubtless, there was one vote more for an immediate dismissal, than against it.

past conduct, and present temper of the people. And some of that part of the council that were active, expressed themselves surprized at the uncommon zeal and engagedness of spirit, publicly manifested by the people in their voting for a dismission; which evidenced to them, and all observing spectators, that they were far from a temper of mind becoming such a solemn and awful transaction, considered in all its circumstances.

Being thus dismissed, he preached his farewell sermon on the first of July, from 2 Cor. i. 14. The doctrine he observed from the words was this, "Ministers and the people that have been under their care, must meet one another before Christ's tribunal, at the day of judgment." It was a remarkably solemn and affecting discourse, and was published at the desire of some of the hearers.

After Mr. Edwards was dismissed from Northampton, he preached there some times occasionally when they had no other preacher to supply the pulpit: till at length a great uneasiness was manifested by many of the people, at his preaching there at all. Upon which, the committee for supplying the pulpit, called the town together, to know their minds with respect to that matter: when they voted that it was not agreeable to their minds, that he should preach among them. Accordingly, when Mr. Edwards was in town, and they had no other minister to preach to them, they carried on public worship among themselves, and without any preaching, rather than to invite Mr. Edwards!

Every one must be sensible that this was a great trial to Mr. Edwards. He had been near twenty-four years among that people; and his labours had been, to all appearance, from time to time greatly blessed among them: and a great number looked on him as their spiritual father, who had been the happy instrument of turning them from darkness to light, and plucking them as brands out of the burning. And they had from time to time professed that they looked upon it as one of their greatest privileges to have such a minister, and manifested their great love and esteem of him, to such a degree, that, (as S. Paul says of the Galatians) if it had been possible, they would have plucked out their own eyes, and given them to him. And they had a great interest in his heart: He had borne them on his heart and carried them in his bosom for many years; exercising a tender concern and love for them: for their good he was always writing, contriving, labouring; for them he had

L

poured

poured out ten thousand fervent prayers ; in their good he had rejoiced as one that findeth great spoil ; and they were dear to him above any other people under heaven.

Now to have this people turn against him, and thrust him out from among them, in a great tumult and heat, with haste, and a great degree of violence ; like the Jews of old stopping their ears and runing upon him with furious zeal, not allowing him to defend himself by giving him a fair hearing ; and even refusing so much as to hear him preach ; many of them surmising and publicly speaking many ill things as to his ends and designs ! To have the tables turned so suddenly and the voice so general and loud against him. This surely must come very near to him, and try his spirit. The words of the psalmist seems applicable to this case, “ It was not an enemy that reproached me, then I could have borne it ; neither was it he that hated me, that did magnify himself against me, then I would have hid myself from him. But it was THOU— my guide and mine acquaintance. We took sweet counsel together, and walked unto the house of God in company.”

Let us therefore now *behold the man !*

The calm and sedateness of his mind ; his meekness and humility in great and violent opposition, and injurious treatment ; his resolution and steady conduct through all this dark and terrible storm, were truly wonderful, and cannot be set in so beautiful and affecting a light by any description, as they appeared in to his friends, who were eye-witnesses.

Mr. Edwards had a numerous and chargeable family, and little or no income, exclusive of his salary : and considering how far he was advanced in years ; the general disposition of people who want a minister to prefer a young man who has never been settled, to one who has been dismissed from his people ; and what misrepresentations were made of his principles through the country, it looked to him not at all probable that he should ever have opportunity to be settled again in the work of the ministry, if he was dismissed from Northampton : And he was not inclined or able to take any other course, or go into any other business to get a living. So that beggary as well as disgrace stared him full in the face, if he persisted in his principles. To be sure, he viewed himself as taking the most direct way to these, according to the natural course of things, by discovering and adhering to his principles, in the situation he then was. For he foresaw all this, before it came upon him ; and therefore had the opportunity and the temptation to escape it, by concealing his principles. When he was fixed in his principles

ples, and before they were publicly known, he told some of his friends, that if he discovered and persisted in them, it would most likely issue in his dismissal and disgrace; and the ruin of himself and family, as to their temporal interests. He therefore first sat down and counted the cost, and deliberately took up the cross, when it was set before him in its full weight and magnitude; and in direct opposition to all worldly views and motives. And therefore his conduct in these circumstances, was a remarkable exercise and discovery of his conscientiousness; and his readiness to deny himself, and forsake all that he had, to follow Christ.

A man must have a considerable degree of the spirit of a martyr, not to flinch in such a case as this; but go on with the steadfastness and resolution with which he did. He, as it were, put his life in his hand, and ventured on where truth and duty appeared to lead him, unmoved at the threatening dangers on every side.

However, God did not forsake him. As he gave him those inward supports by which he was able in patience to possess his soul, and calmly and courageously row on in the storm, as it were, in the face of boisterous winds, beating hard upon him, and in the midst of gaping waves threatening to swallow him up: so he soon appeared for him, in his providence, even beyond all his expectations. His correspondents and other friends in Scotland, hearing of his dismissal, and fearing it might be the means of bringing him into worldly straits, generously contributed a handsome sum, and sent it over to him.

And God did not leave him without tender, valuable friends at Northampton. For a small number of his people who opposed his dismissal from the beginning, and some who acted on neither side, who joined with him after his dismissal, and adhered to him, under the influence of their great esteem and love of Mr. Edwards, were willing and thought themselves able to maintain him: and insisted upon it that it was his duty to stay among them, as a distinct and separate congregation from the body of the town, who had rejected him.

Mr. Edwards could not see it to be his duty to stay among them, as circumstances were; as this would probably be a means of perpetuating an unhappy division in the town; and there was to him no prospect of doing the good there, which would counterbalance the evil. However, that he might do all he could to satisfy his tender and afflicted friends; and because in the multitude of counsellors there is safety, he consented

sented to ask the advice of an ecclesiastical council. Accordingly, a council was called, and convened at Northampton on the 15th of May 1751.

The town on this occasion was put into a great tumult and fire. They who were active in Mr. Edwards's dismissal supposed, though without any ground, and contrary to truth, that he was contriving and attempting with his friends, again to introduce himself at Northampton. They drew up a remonstrance against their proceedings, and laid it before the council (though they would not acknowledge them to be an ecclesiastical council) containing many heavy, though groundless, insinuations and charges against Mr. Edwards, and bitter accusations of the party who had adhered to him: But refused to appear and support any of their charges, or so much as to give the gentlemen of the council any opportunity to confer with them, about the affair depending; though it was diligently sought.

The council having heard what Mr. Edwards, and they who adhered to him, and any others who desired to be heard, had to say, advised, agreeable to Mr. Edwards's judgment and expectation, that he should leave Northampton, and accept of the mission to which he was invited at Stockbridge; of which a more particular account will be given presently.

Many other facts relative to this sorrowful, strange, surprising affair (the most so doubtless of any of the kind, that ever happened in New-England; and perhaps, in any part of the christian world) might be related; but as this more general history of it, may be sufficient to answer the ends proposed, viz. to rectify some gross misrepresentations, that have been made of the matter, and discover the great trial Mr. Edwards had herein, it is thought best to suppress other particulars. As a proper close to this melancholy story; and to confirm, and further illustrate what has been related, the following letter from Joseph Hawley, Esq. (a gentleman who was well acquainted with, and very active in the transactions of this whole affair, and very much a head and leader in it) to the Rev. Mr. Hall of Sutton, published in a weekly news-paper in Boston, May 19, 1760, is here inserted.

To

To the Rev. Mr. HALL of SUTTON.

Northampton, May 9, 1760.

Rev. Sir,

I HAVE often wished that every member of the two ecclesiastical councils (that formerly sat in Northampton upon the unhappy differences between our former most worthy and reverend pastor Mr. Jonathan Edwards and the church here) whereof you was a member; I say sir, I have often wished every of them truly knew my real sense of my own conduct in the affairs that the one and the other of said councils are privy to; and as I have long apprehended it to be my duty not only to humble myself before God for what was unchristian and sinful, in my conduct before said councils, but also to confess my faults to them, and take shame to myself therefor before them. I have often studied with myself in what manner it was practicable for me to do it; and when I understood that you sir, and Mr. Eaton were to be at Cold Spring at the time of their late council, I resolved to improve the opportunity fully to open my mind there to you and him thereon; and thought that probably some method might be then thought of in which my reflections on myself touching the matters above hinted at, might be communicated to most if not all the gentlemen aforesaid, who did not reside in this county: But you know, sir, how difficult it was for us to converse together by ourselves when at Cold Spring, without giving umbrage to that people; I therefore proposed writing to you upon the matters which I had then opportunity only most summarily to suggest; which you sir, signified would be agreeable to you: I therefore now undertake what I then proposed, in which I humbly ask the divine aid; and that I may be made most freely willing fully to confess my sin and guilt to you and the world in those instances which I have reason to suppose fell under your notice, as they were public and notorious transactions, and on account whereof, therefore, you sir, and all others who had knowlege thereof, had just cause to be offended at me.

And in the first place, Sir, I apprehend that with the church and people of Northampton, I sinned and erred exceedingly

in

in consenting and labouring that there should be so early a dismissal of Mr. Edwards from his pastoral relation to us, even upon the supposition that he was really in a mistake in the disputed point: not only because the dispute was upon matters so very disputable in themselves and at the greatest remove from fundamental, but because Mr. Edwards so long had approved himself a most faithful and painful pastor to said church; and also changed his sentiments in that point wholly from a tender regard to what appeared to him to be truth; and had made known his sentiments with great moderation and upon great deliberation against all worldly motives, and from mere fidelity to his great master, and a tender regard to the souls of his flock, as we had the highest reason to judge: which considerations now seem to me sufficient; and would (if we had been of a right spirit) have greatly endeared him to his people, and made us to the last degree, reluctant to parting with, and disposed us to the exercise of the greatest candour, gentleness and moderation: how much of the reverse whereof appeared in us, I need not tell you, Sir, who was an eye-witness of our temper and conduct.

And although it does not become me to pronounce decisively on a point so disputable as what was then in dispute; yet I beg leave to say, that I really apprehend that it is of the highest moment to the body of this church, and to me in particular most solicitously to enquire, whether like the Pharisees and lawyers in John Baptist's time, we did not reject the counsel of God against ourselves, in rejecting Mr. Edwards and his doctrine: which was the ground of his dismissal. And I humbly conceive that it highly imports us all of this church, most seriously and impartially to examine what that most worthy and able divine about that time published in support of the same, whereby he being dead yet speaketh.

But there were three things, Sir, especially in my own particular conduct before the first council, which have been justly matter of great grief and much trouble to me almost ever since, *to wit.*

In the first place I confess, Sir, that I acted very immodestly and abusively to you, as well as injuriously to the church and myself, when with much zeal and unbecoming assurance, I moved the council that they would interpose to silence and stop you in an address you was making one morning to the people, wherein you was, if I do not misremember, briefly
 exhorting

exhorting them to a tender remembrance of the former affection and harmony that had long subsisted between them and their reverend pastor, and the great comfort and profit which they had apprehended that they had received from his ministry; for which, Sir, I heartily ask your forgiveness; and I think, that we ought instead of opposing an exhortation of that nature, to have received it with all thankfulness.

Another particular of my conduct before that council, which I now apprehend was criminal, and was owing to the want of that tender affection and reverend respect and esteem for Mr. Edwards which he had highly merited of me, was my strenuously opposing the adjournment of the matters submitted to that council, for about two months; for which I declare myself unfeignedly sorry; and I with shame remember, that I did it in a peremptory, decisive, vehement and very immodest manner.

But, Sir, the most criminal part of my conduct at that time, that I am conscious of, was my exhibiting to that council a set of arguments in writing, the drift whereof was to prove the reasonableness and necessity of Mr. Edwards's dismissal in case no accommodation was then effected with mutual consent; which tract by clear implication contained some severe, uncharitable, and if I do not misremember, groundless and slanderous imputations on Mr. Edwards, and expressed in bitter language; and although the original draft thereof was not done by me, yet I foolishly and sinfully consented to copy it; and as agent for the church, to read it and deliver it to the council, which I could never have done, if I had not had a wicked relish for perverse things: which conduct of mine, I confess was very sinful: am persuaded was highly provoking to God, and for which I am ashamed, confounded, and have nothing to answer.

As to the church's remonstrance (as it was called) which their committee preferred to the last of said councils, to all which I was consenting, and in the composing whereof I was very active, as also in bringing the church to their vote upon it: I would in the first place only observe, that I do not remember any thing in that small part of it which was plainly discursive of the expediency of Mr. Edwards's re-settlement here as pastor to a part of the church, which was very exceptionable; but as to all the residue, which was much the greatest part thereof (and I am not certain that any part was wholly free)

free) it was every where larded with unchristian bitterness, sarcastical and unmannerly insinuations, contained divers direct grievous and criminal charges and allegations against Mr. Edwards; which I have since good reason to suppose were all founded on jealous and uncharitable mistakes, and so were really gross slanders, also many heavy and reproachful charges upon divers of Mr. Edwards's adherents, and some severe censures of them all indiscriminately; all of which (if not wholly false and groundless) yet were altogether unnecessary, and therefore highly criminal. Indeed I am fully convinced, that the whole of that composure, excepting the small part thereof abovementioned, was totally unchristian, a scandalous, abusive, injurious libel, against Mr. Edwards and his particular friends; especially the former, and highly provoking and detestable in the sight of God; for which I am heartily sorry and ashamed; and pray I may remember it with deep abasement and penitence all my days. Nor do I now think that the church's conduct in refusing to appear and attend before that council to support the charges and allegations in said remonstrance against Mr. Edwards and said brethren, which they demanded, was ever vindicated by all the subtle answers that were given to said demand; nor do I think that our conduct in that instance was capable of a defence, for it appears to me, that by making charges of scandalous matters against them before said council, we necessarily so far gave that council jurisdiction; and I own with sorrow and regret, that I zealously endeavoured, that the church should perseveringly refuse to appear before said council for the purpose abovesaid; which I humbly pray God to forgive.

Another part of my conduct, Sir, of which I have long repented, and for which I hereby declare my hearty sorrow, was my obstinate opposition to the last council's having any conference with the church; which said council earnestly and repeatedly moved for, and which the church finally denied (as you know.) I think it discovered a great deal of pride and vain sufficiency in the church, and shewed them to be very opinative, especially the chief sticklers, one of whom I own I was, and think it was running a most presumptuous risk, and acting the part of proud scorers, for us to refuse hearing and candidly and seriously considering what that council could say or propose to us; among whom there were divers justly in great reputation for grace and wisdom.

In these instances, Sir, of my conduct, and others (to which you was not privy) in the course of that most melancholy contention with Mr. Edwards, wherein I now see that I was very much influenced by vast pride, self-sufficiency, ambition and vanity. I appear to myself vile, and doubtless much more so to others who are more impartial; and do in the review thereof, abhor myself, and repent sorely: and if my own heart condemns me it behoves me solemnly to remember, that God is greater, and knoweth all things: and I hereby own, Sir, that such treatment of Mr. Edwards, as is herein before mentioned, wherein I was so deeply concerned and active, was particularly and very aggravatedly sinful and ungrateful in me, because I was not only under the common obligations of each individual of the society to him, as to a most able, diligent and faithful pastor; but I had also received many instances of his tenderness, goodness, and generosity to me, as a young kinsman, whom he was disposed to treat in a most friendly manner.

Indeed, Sir, I must own, that by my conduct in consulting and acting against Mr. Edwards within the time of our most unhappy disputes with him, and especially in and about that abominable remonstrance I have so far symbolized with Balaam, Ahitophel and Judas, that I am confounded and filled with terror oftentimes when I attend to the most painful similitude.

And I freely confess, that on account of my conduct above-mentioned, I have the greatest reason to tremble at those most solemn and awful words of our Saviour, Matt. xviii. 6. and those in Luke x. at the 16th: and I am most sorely sensible that nothing but that infinite grace and mercy which saved some of the betrayers and murderers of our blessed Lord, and the persecutors of the martyrs, can pardon me; in which alone I hope for pardon, for the sake of Christ, whose blood (blessed be God) cleanseth from all sin. On the whole, Sir, I am convinced, that I have the greatest reason to say as David, "Have mercy upon me, O God, according to thy loving kindness, according to the multitude of thy tender mercies blot out my transgressions, wash me thoroughly from mine iniquity, and cleanse me from my sin; for I acknowledge my transgressions, and my sin is ever before me: hide thy face from my sins, and blot out all mine iniquities: create in me a clean heart, O God, and renew a right spirit within me; cast iac

“not away from thy presence, and take not thy holy spirit
 “from me. Restore unto me the joy of thy salvation, and
 “uphold me with thy free spirit.”

And I humbly apprehend that it greatly concerns the church of Northampton most seriously to examine whether the many hard speeches, spoken by many particular members against their former pastor, some of which the church really countenanced, and especially those spoken by the church as a body, in that most vile remonstrance are not so odious and ungodly, as to be utterly incapable of defence; and whether said church were not guilty of great sin in being so willing and disposed for so slight a cause, to part with so faithful and godly a minister as Mr. Edwards was. And whether ever God will hold us guiltless until we cry to him for Christ's sake to pardon and save us from that judgment which such ungodly deeds deserve, and publicly humble and take shame to ourselves therefor. And I most heartily wish and pray that the town and church of Northampton would seriously and carefully examine whether they have not abundant cause to judge that they are now lying under great guilt in the sight of God: and whether those of us who were concerned in that most awful contention with Mr. Edwards, can ever more reasonably expect God's favor and blessing, until our eyes are opened, and we become thoroughly convinced that we have greatly provoked the most High, and been injurious to one of the best of men; and until we shall be thoroughly convinced that we have dreadfully persecuted Christ by persecuting and vexing that just man and servant of Christ; until we shall be humble as in the dust therefor, and until we openly in full terms, and without baulking the matter, confess the same before the world, and most humbly and earnestly seek forgiveness of God, and do what we can to honor the memory of Mr. Edwards, and clear it of all the aspersions which we unjustly cast upon him; since God has been pleased to put it beyond our power to ask his forgiveness. Such terms I am persuaded the great and righteous God will hold us to, and that it will be in vain for us to hope to escape with impunity in any other way. This I am convinced of with regard to myself, and this way I most solemnly propose to take myself (if God in his mercy shall give me opportunity) that so by making free confession to God and man of my sin and guilt, and publicly taking shame to myself therefor, I may give glory

to the God of Israel, and do what in me lies, to clear the memory of that venerable man from the wrongs and injuries I was so active in bringing on his reputation and character; and I thank God that he has been pleased to spare my life and opportunity therefor to this time, and am sorry that I have delayed the affair so long.

Although I made the substance of almost all the foregoing reflections in writing, but not exactly in the same manner to Mr. Edwards and the brethren who adhered to him, in Mr. Edwards's life, and before he removed from Stockbridge, and I have reason to believe that he, from his great candor and charity, heartily forgave me and prayed for me: yet because that was not generally known, I look on myself obliged to take further steps; for while I kept silence, my bones waxed old, &c.

For all these my great sins therefor, in the first place, I humbly and most earnestly ask forgiveness of God; next, of the relatives and near friends of Mr. Edwards. I also ask the forgiveness of all those who were called Mr. Edwards's adherents; and of all the members of the ecclesiastical councils above mentioned; and lastly, of all christian people, who have had any knowlege of the matters abovesaid, or any of them.

I have no desire, Sir, that you should make any secret of this letter; but desire you would communicate the same to whom you shall judge proper, and I purpose (if God shall give me opportunity) to procure it to be published in some one of the public news papers; for I can not devise any other way of making known my sentiments of the foregoing matters to all who ought to be acquainted therewith, and therefore I think I ought to do it, whatever remarks I may foresee will be made thereon.

Probably when it comes out, some of my acquaintance will pronounce me quite over run with vapours; others will be furnished with matter for mirth and pleasantry; others will cursorily pass it over as relating to matters quite stale; but some I am persuaded will rejoice to see me brought to a sense of my sin and duty; and I myself shall be conscious that I have done something of what the nature of the case admits, towards undoing what is, and long has been, to my greatest remorse and trouble that it was ever done.

Sir, I desire that none would entertain a thought from my having spoken respectfully of Mr. Edwards, that I am disaffected

ed to our present pastor ; for the very reverse is true ; and I have a reverend esteem, real value, and hearty affection for him, and bless God, that he has notwithstanding all our unworthiness, given us one to succeed Mr. Edwards, who (as I have reason to hope) is truly faithful.

I conclude this long letter, by heartily desiring your prayers, that my repentance of my sins above mentioned may be unfeigned and genuine, and such as God in infinite mercy for Christ's sake will accept ; And I beg leave to subscribe myself,

Sir, your real, though very unworthy friend,
and obedient servant,

JOSEPH HAWLEY.

SECTION III.

His MISSION to the INDIANS at STOCK- BRIDGE, &c.

THE Indian Mission at Stockbridge (a town in the western part of the province of the Massachusetts-Bay, sixty miles from Northampton) being vacant by the death of the late Reverend Mr. Sergeant, the honored and reverend commissioners for Indian affairs, in Boston, who have the care and direction of it, applied to him, as the most suitable person they could think of to be entrusted with that mission. And he was at the same time invited by the inhabitants of Stockbridge ; and being advised by the council, above mentioned, to accept of the invitation, he repaired to Stockbridge ; and was introduced and fixed as missionary to the Indians there by an ecclesiastical council called for that purpose, August 8, 1751.

When Mr. Edwards first engaged in the mission, there was a hopeful prospect of its being extensively serviceable, under his care and influence ; not only to that tribe of Indians which was settled at Stockbridge, but among the Six Nations : some of whom were coming to Stockbridge to settle, and bring their own, and as many of their neighbours children as they could get ; to be educated and instructed there. For this end, a house for a board-

a boarding school, which was projected by Mr. Sergeant, was erected on a tract of land appropriated to that use by the Indians at Stockbridge: where the Indian children, male and female were to be educated, by being cloathed and fed, and instructed by proper persons in useful learning. And the boys to be learned husbandry or mechanic trades, and the girls all sorts of women's work. For the encouragement of which, some generous subscriptions were made both in England and America. And the great and general court of the province of the Massachusetts-Bay, did much to promote the affair, and provided lands for the Mohocks to settle on, who should incline to come. And the generous Mr. Hollis, to encourage the thing, ordered twenty-four Indian children to be educated on the same footing, wholly at his cost. Also the society in London, for propagating the gospel among the Indians in and about New-England, directed their commissioners in Boston to do considerable towards this design.

But partly by reason of some unhappy differences that took place among those who had the chief management of this affair at Stockbridge, of which a particular account would not be proper in this place; and partly by the war breaking out between England and France, which is generally very fatal to such affairs among Indians, this hopeful prospect came to nothing.

Mr. Edwards's labours were attended with no remarkable visible success while at Stockbridge: though he performed the business of his mission to the good acceptance of the inhabitants in general, both English and Indians, and of the commissioners, who supported him honorably, and confided very much in his judgment and wisdom in all matters relating to the mission.

Stockbridge proved to Mr. Edwards a more quiet, and, on many accounts, a much more comfortable situation than he was in before. It being so much in one corner of the country, his time was not so much taken up with company, as it was at Northampton, though many of his friends, from almost all parts of the land, often made him pleasant and profitable visits. And he had not so much concern and trouble with other churches as he was obliged to have when at Northampton, by being frequently sought to for advice, and called to assist in ecclesiastical councils. Here therefore he followed his beloved study more closely, and to better purpose than ever. In these six years he doubtless made swifter advances in knowledge than ever before, and added more to his manuscripts than in any six years of his life. And

And this was probably as useful a part of his life as any. For in this time he wrote the two last books that have been published by him (of which a more particular account will be given hereafter) by which he has doubtless greatly served the church of Christ, and will be a blessing to many thousands yet unborn.

Thus, after his uprightness and faithfulness had been sufficiently tried at Northampton, his kind master provided for him a quiet retreat, which was rendered the more sweet by the preceding storm; and where he had a better opportunity to pursue and finish the work God had for him to do.

SECTION IV.

His being made PRESIDENT *of* NEW-JERSEY COLLEGE; *his SICKNESS and DEATH.*

ON the 24th of September, 1757, the Rev. Mr. Aaron Burr, President of New-Jersey College, died.—And at the next meeting of the Trustees, Mr. Edwards was chosen his successor. The news of which was quite unexpected, and not a little surprizing to him. He looked on himself in many respects so unqualified for that business, that he wondered that gentlemen, of so good judgment, and so well acquainted with him, as he knew some of the Trustees were, should think of *him* for that place. He had many objections in his own mind against undertaking the business, both from his unfitness, and his particular circumstances; yet could not certainly determine that it was not his duty to accept. The following extract of a letter which he wrote to the Trustees, will give the reader a view of his sentiments and exercises on this occasion, as well as of the great designs he was deeply engaged in, and zealously prosecuting.

Stockbridge,

Stockbridge, 19th October 1757.

Reverend and Honored Gentlemen,

I Was not a little surprized, on receiving the unexpected notice of your having made choice of me to succeed the late President Burr, as the head of Nassau Hall.—I am much in doubt whether I am called to undertake the business, which you have done me the unmerited honor to choose me for—If some regard may be had to my outward comfort, I might mention the many inconveniencies and great detriment, which must be sustained, by my removing with my numerous family, so far from all the estate I have in the world (without any prospect of disposing of it, under present circumstances, without losing it, in great part) now when we have scarcely got over the trouble and damage sustained by our removal from Northampton, and have but just began to have our affairs in a comfortable situation for a subsistence in this place; and the expence I must immediately be at to put myself into circumstance tolerably comporting with the needful support of the honor of the office I am invited to; which will not well consist with my ability.—But this is not my main objection: The chief difficulty in my mind, in the way of accepting this important and arduous office, are these two: First my own defects, unfitting me for such an undertaking, many of which are generally known; besides other, which my own heart is conscious to.—I have a constitution in many respects peculiarly unhappy, attended with flaccid solids, vapid, sily and scarce fluids, and a low tide of spirits; often occasioning a kind of childish weakness and contemptibleness of speech, presence and demeanor; with a disagreeable dulness and stiffness, much unfitting me for conversation, but more especially for the government of a college.—This poorness of constitution makes me shrink at the thoughts of taking upon me, in the decline of life, such a new and great business, attended with such a multiplicity of cares, and requiring such a degree of activity, alertness and spirit of government; especially as succeeding one, so remarkably well qualified in these respects, giving occasion to every one to remark the wide difference. I am also deficient in some parts of learning, particularly in Algebra, and the higher parts of Mathematics, and in the Greek Classics; my Greek learning having been chiefly in the new testament.

The

The other thing is this; that my engaging in this business, will not well consist, with those views, and that course of employ in my study, which have long engaged, and swallowed up my mind, and been the chief entertainment and delight of my life.—

And here, honored sirs, (emboldened by the testimony I have now received of your unmerited esteem, to rely on your candor) I will with freedom open myself to you.

My method of study, from my first beginning the work of the ministry, has been very much by writing; applying myself in this way, to improve every important hint; pursuing the clew to my utmost, when any thing in reading, meditation or conversation, has been suggested to my mind, that seemed to promise light in any weighty point—Thus penning what appeared to me my best thoughts, on innumerable subjects for my own benefit.—The longer I prosecuted my studies in this method, the more habitual it became, and the more pleasant and profitable I found it.—The further I travelled in this way, the more and wider the field opened, which has occasioned my laying out many things, in my mind, to do in this manner, if God should spare my life, which my heart hath been much upon: particularly many things against most of the prevailing errors of the present day, which I cannot with any patience see maintained (to the utter subverting of the gospel of Christ) with so high a hand, and so long continued a triumph, with so little controul, when it appears so evident to me, that there is truly no foundation for any of this glorying and insult.—I have already published something on one of the main points in dispute between the Arminians and Calvinists: and have it in view, God willing (as I have already signified to the public) in like manner to consider all the other controverted points, and have done much towards a preparation for it—But besides these, I have had on my mind and heart (which I long ago began, not with any view to publication) a great work, which I call a *History of the Work of Redemption*, a body of divinity in an entire new method, being thrown into the form of an history, considering the affair of christian Theology, as the whole of it, in each part, stands in reference to the great work of redemption by Jesus Christ; which I suppose is to be the grand design of all God's designs, and the summum and ultimum of all the divine operations and decrees; particularly considering all parts of the grand scheme in their
historical

historical order.—The order of their existence, or their being brought forth to view, in the course of divine dispensations, or the wonderful series of successive acts and events; beginning from eternity and descending from thence to the great work and successive dispensations of the infinitely wise God in time, considering the chief events coming to pass in the church of God, and revolutions in the world of mankind, affecting the state of the church and the affair of redemption, which we have account of in history or prophecy; until at last we come to the general resurrection, last judgment, and consummation of all things; when it shall be said, *It is done. I am Alpha and Omega, the Beginning and the End.* Concluding my work, with the consideration of that perfect state of things, which shall be finally settled, to last for eternity.—This history will be carried on with regard to all three worlds, Heaven, Earth and Hell: considering the connected, successive events and alterations, in each so far as the scriptures give any light; introducing all parts of divinity in that order which is most scriptural and most natural: which is a method which appears to me the most beautiful and entertaining, wherein every divine doctrine, will appear to greatest advantage in the brightest light, in the most striking manner, shewing the admirable contexture and harmony of the whole.

I have also for my own profit and entertainment, done much towards another great work, which I call *the Harmony of the Old and New Testament* in three parts—The first considering the prophecies of the Messiah, his redemption and kingdom; the evidences of their references to the Messiah, &c. comparing them all one with another, demonstrating their agreement and true scope and sense: also considering all the various particulars wherein these prophecies have their exact fulfilment; shewing the universal, precise, and admirable correspondence between predictions and events. The second part: Considering the types of the Old Testament, shewing the evidence of their being intended as representations of the great things of the gospel of Christ: and the agreement of the type with the antitype.—The third and great part considering the harmony of the Old and New Testament, as to doctrine and precept.—In the course of this work, I find there will be occasion for an explanation of a very great part of the holy scripture; which may, in such a view be explained in a method, which to me seems the most

entertaining and profitable, best tending to lead the mind to a view of the true spirit, design, life and soul of the scriptures, as well as to their proper use and improvement.

I have also many other things in hand, in some of which I have made great progress, which I will not trouble you with an account of.—Some of these things, if divine providence favour, I should be willing to attempt a publication of—So far as I myself am able to judge of what talents I have, for benefiting my fellow creatures by word, I think I can write better than I can speak.

My heart is so much in these studies, that I cannot find it in my heart to be willing to put myself into an incapacity to pursue them any more, in the future part of my life, to such a degree as I must, if I undertake to go through the same course of employ, in the office of a president, that Mr. Burr did, instructing in all the languages, and taking the whole care of the instruction of one of the classes in all parts of learning, besides his other labors.—If I should see light to determine me to accept the place offered me, I should be willing to take upon me the work of a President, so far as it consists in the general inspection of the whole society and subservient to the school, as to their order and methods of study and instruction, assisting myself in immediate instruction in the arts and sciences (as discretion should direct and occasion serve, and the state of things require) especially the senior class: and added to all should be willing to do the whole work of a professor of divinity, in public and private lectures, proposing questions to be answered, and some to be discussed in writing and free conversation, in meetings of graduates and others, appointed in proper seasons for these ends.—It would be now out of my way, to spend time, in a constant teaching of the languages; unless it be the Hebrew tongue, which I should be willing to improve myself in, by instructing others.

On the whole, I am much at a loss, with respect to the way of my duty in this important affair: I am in doubt, whether if I should engage in it, I should not do what both you and I should be sorry for afterwards. Nevertheless, I think the greatness of the affair, and the regard due to so worthy and venerable a body, as that of the Trustees of Nassau-Hall, requires my taking the matter into serious consideration: And unless you should appear to be discouraged, by the things which I have now represented, as to any further expectation

from

from me, shall proceed to ask advice, of such as I esteem most wise, friendly and faithful; if after the mind of the Commissioners in Boston is known, it appears that they consent to leave me at liberty, with respect to the business they have employed me in here."

In this suspense he determined to ask the advice of a number of gentlemen in the ministry, on whose judgment and friendship he could rely, and to act accordingly. Who upon his, and his people's desire, met at Stockbridge, January 4, 1758. And having heard Mr. Edwards's representation of the matter, and what his people had to say by way of objection against his removal, determined it was his duty to accept of the invitation to the presidency of the college.

When they published their judgment and advice to Mr. Edwards and his people, he appeared uncommonly moved and affected with it, and fell into tears on the occasion; which was very unusual for him, in the presence of others: and soon after said to the gentlemen, who had given their advice, that it was matter of wonder to him, that they could so easily, as they appeared to do, get over the objections he had made against his removal, to be the head of a college; which appeared great and weighty to him. But as he thought it his duty to be directed by their advice, he should now endeavor cheerfully to undertake it, believing he was in the way of his duty.

Accordingly, having had, by the application of the trustees of the college, the consent of the commissioners to resign their mission; he girded up his loins, and set off from Stockbridge for Princeton in January. He left his family at Stockbridge, not to be removed until spring. He had two daughters at Princeton, Mrs. Burr, the widow of the late President Burr, and his oldest daughter that was unmarried.

His arrival at Princeton was to the great satisfaction and joy of the college. And indeed all the greatest friends to the college, and to the interest of religion, were highly satisfied and pleased with the appointment of Mr. Edwards to the presidency of that college, and had their hopes and expectations greatly raised hereby. And his correspondents and friends, and well-wishers to the college in Scotland, greatly approved of it.

The corporation met as soon as could be with conveniency, after his arrival at the college, when he was by them fixed in the president's chair.

While

While at Princeton, before his sickness, he preached in the college-hall from Sabbath to Sabbath, to the great acceptance of the hearers: but did nothing as president, unless it was to give out some questions in divinity to the senior class, to be answered before him; each one having opportunity to study and write what he thought proper upon them. When they came together to answer them, they found so much entertainment and profit by it, especially by the light and instruction Mr. Edwards communicated in what he said upon the questions, when they had delivered what they had to say, that they spoke of it with the greatest satisfaction and wonder.

During this time, Mr. Edwards seemed to enjoy an uncommon degree of the presence of God. He told his daughters, he had had great exercise, concern and fear, relative to his engaging in that business; but since it now appeared, so far as he could see, that he was called of God to that place and work, he did cheerfully devote himself to it, leaving himself and the event with God, to order what seemed to Him good.

The Small-pox had now become very common in the country, and was then at Princeton, and likely to spread. And as Mr. Edwards had never had it, and inoculation was then practised with great success in those parts, he proposed to be inoculated, if the physician should advise to it, and the corporation would give their consent.

Accordingly, by the advice of the physician, and consent of the corporation, he was inoculated February 13. He had it favorably, and it was thought all danger was over: But a secondary fever set in; and by reason of a number of pustles in his throat, the obstruction was such, that the medicines necessary to stanch the fever, could not be administered. It therefore raged until it put an end to his life on the 22d of March 1758, in the 55th year of his age.

After he was sensible that he should not survive that sickness, a little before his death, he called his daughter to him, who attended him in his sickness, and addressed her in a few words, which were immediately taken down in writing, as near as could be recollected, and are as follows:—

“ DEAR LUCY,

“ It seems to me to be the will of God that I must shortly
 “ leave you; therefore give my kindest love to my dear wife,
 “ and tell her, that the uncommon union, which has so long
 “ subsisted

“ subsisted between us, has been of such a nature, as I trust is
 “ spiritual, and therefore will continue forever : And I hope
 “ she shall be supported under so great a trial, and submit cheer-
 “ fully to the will of God. And as to my children, You are
 “ now like to be left fatherless, which I hope will be an in-
 “ ducement to you all to seek a Father, who will never fail you.
 “ And as to my funeral, I would have it to be like Mr. Burr’s ;
 “ and any additional sum of money that might be expected to
 “ be laid out that way, I would have it disposed of to charita-
 “ ble uses.”

He said but very little in his sickness ; but was an admirable instance of patience and resignation to the last. Just at the close of his life, as some persons, who stood by, and expected he would breathe his last in a few minutes, were lamenting his death not only as a great frown on the college, but as having a dark aspect on the interest of religion in general ; to their surprize, not imagining that he heard, or would ever speak another word, he said, “ TRUST IN GOD, AND YE NEED NOT FEAR.” These were his last words. And what could have been more suitable to the occasion ! And what need of more ! In these is as much matter of instruction and support, as if he had wrote a volume. This is the only consolation to his bereaved friends, who are sensible of the loss they, and the church of Christ have sustained in his death ; *God is allsufficient, and still has the care of his church.*

He appeared to have the uninterrupted use of his reason to the last, and died with as much calmness and composure, to all appearance, as that with which one goes to sleep.

The

* President Burr ordered on his death bed, that his funeral should not be attended with that pomp and cost, by procuring and giving away a great number of costly mourning scarfs, &c. and the consumption of great quantities of spirituous liquors ; which is an extravagance that is become too customary in those parts, especially at the funerals of the great and the rich : and that nothing should be expended but what was agreeable to the dictates of christian decency. And that the sum which must be expended at a *modish* funeral, over and above the necessary cost of a *decent* one, should be given to the poor, out of his estate.

It is to be wished and hoped, that the laudable example of these two worthy Presidents, in which they bear their dying testimony against a practice so unchristian, and of such bad tendency so many ways, will have some good effect.

The physician who inoculated and constantly attended him in his sickness, has the following words in his letter to Mrs. Edwards on this occasion: "Never did any mortal man more fully and clearly evidence the sincerity of all his professions, by one continued, universal, calm, cheerful resignation and patient submission to the divine will, through every stage of his disease, than he. Not so much as one discontented expression, nor the least appearance of murmuring through the whole. And never did any person expire with more perfect freedom from pain: not so much as one distorted hair; but in the most proper sense of the words, he really fell asleep."

PART IV.

Containing an Account of his MANUSCRIPTS, and the BOOKS published by him.

SECTION I.

His MANUSCRIPTS.

MR. Edwards has left a great many volumes in manuscript, which he wrote in a miscellaneous way on almost all subjects in divinity; which he did, not with any design they should ever be published in the form in which they are; but for the satisfaction and improvement of his own mind, and that he might retain the thoughts which appeared to him worth preserving. Some idea of the progress he had made, and the materials he had collected in this way, he gives in the foregoing letter to the Trustees of Nassau-Hall. He has wrote much on the prophecies of the Messiah, Justification, the Divinity of Christ, and the Eternity of Hell Torments. He wrote a great deal on the Bible, in the same way, by opening his thoughts on particular passages of it, as they occurred to him in reading or meditation; by which he has cast much light on many parts of the Bible, which has escaped other interpreters. And by which his great and painful attention to the Bible, and making it the only rule of his faith, are manifest.

If

If the public was willing to be at the cost, and publishing books of divinity met with as much encouragement now, as it has sometimes, there might be a number of volumes published from his manuscripts, which would afford a great deal of new light and entertainment to the church of Christ: though they would be more imperfect, than if he himself had prepared them for public view.

As the method he took to have his miscellaneous writings in such order, as to be able with ease to turn to any thing he had wrote upon a particular subject, when he had occasion, is perhaps as good as any, if not the best that has been proposed to the public; some account of it will here be given, as what may be of advantage to young students, who have not yet gone into any method, and are disposed to improve their minds by writing.

He *numbered* all his miscellaneous writings. The first thing he wrote is No. 1, the second No. 2, and so on. And when he had occasion to write on any particular subject, he first set down the number, and then wrote the subject in capitals or large character, that it might not escape his eye, when he should have occasion to turn to it. As for instance, if he was going to write on the happiness of Angels, and his last No. was 148, he would begin thus—149. ANGELS, their HAPPINESS.—And when he had wrote what he designed at that time on that subject, he would turn to an alphabetical table which he kept, and under the letter A, he would write, Angels, their happiness, if this was not already in his alphabet; and then set down the number, 149, close at the right hand of it. And if he had occasion to write any new thoughts on this same subject; if the number of his miscellanies was increased, so that his last number was 261, he would set down the number 262, and then the subject, as before. And when he had done writing for that time, he turned to his table, to the word Angels; and at the right hand of the number 149, set down 162. By this means he had no occasion to leave any chasms: but began his next subject where he left off his last. The number of his miscellaneous writings ranged in this manner, amounts to above 1400. And yet by a table contained on a sheet or two of paper, any thing he wrote can be turned to, at pleasure.

SECTION II.

His PUBLICATIONS.

MR. EDWARDS was greatly esteemed and famed as an AUTHOR, both in Europe and America. His publications naturally raised in the reader of taste and judgment, an opinion of his greatness and piety. His books met with a good reception in Scotland especially, and procured him great esteem and applause there. A gentleman of note there for his superior genius and talents, has the following words concerning Mr. Edwards, in a letter to one of his correspondents in America. "I looked on him as incomparably the greatest divine and philosopher in Britain or her Colonies; and rejoiced that one so eminently qualified for teaching divinity was chosen President of New-Jersey College," And in another letter the same gentleman says, "Ever since I was acquainted with Mr. Edwards's writings, I have looked upon him as the greatest divine this age has produced. And a Rev. gentleman lately from Holland, says, That Mr. Edwards's writings, especially on the *Freedom of the Will*, were had in great esteem there: that the professors of the celebrated academy, presented their compliments to President Edwards. Several members of the classis of Amsterdam gave their thanks, by him, to pious Mr. Edwards, for his just observations on Mr. Brainerd's life; which book was translated in Holland, and was highly approved of by the University of Utrecht—"

A brief account of what he published is therefore here subjoined.

A Sermon preached at Boston, on 1 Cor. i. 29, 30, 31. with a preface by one of the ministers of Boston.

A Sermon preached at Northampton, in the year 1734, from Math. xvi. 17, intitled, A divine and supernatural Light immediately imparted to the soul, by the Spirit of God.

The Narrative which has been mentioned, wrote Nov. 6, 1736, which was first printed in London, and recommended by Dr. Watts, and Dr. Guyse; and had two editions there. And then it had another edition in Boston, in the year 1738, recommended by four of the senior Ministers in Boston. To which were prefixed five discourses on the following subjects.

I. Justifi-

I. Justification by faith alone. II. Pressing into the kingdom of God. III. Ruth's resolution. IV. The justice of God in the damnation of Sinners. V. The excellency of Jesus Christ.

Delivered at Northampton, chiefly at the time of the wonderful pouring out of the Spirit of God there.

The discourse on Justification by faith alone, may be recommended as one of the best things that has been wrote on that subject; setting this truth in a most plain, scriptural, and convincing light; and as well worthy the careful perusal of all christians; especially candidates for the ministry. The other discourses are excellent, having much divinity in them, and tending above most that are published, to awaken the conscience of the sinner, and instruct and quicken the christian.

A Sermon preached at Enfield, July 8, 1741, intituled, Sinners in the hands of an angry God. Preached at a time of great awakenings there; and attended with remarkable impressions on many of the hearers.

A Sermon on the distinguishing marks of a work of the Spirit of God, preached at New-Haven, Sept. 10, 1741, from 1 John iv. 1. published with great enlargements. This was reprinted in Scotland.

Some thoughts concerning the present revival of religion in New-England, and the way in which it ought to be acknowledged and promoted, humbly offered to the public, in a treatise on that subject, in five parts. Published in the year 1742. This had a second edition in Scotland.

A treatise concerning religious affections. Published in the year 1746. These three last have been mentioned before, with the particular occasion and design of their publication.

A treatise intituled, An humble attempt to promote explicit agreement, and visible union of God's people in extraordinary prayer, for the revival of religion, &c. Recommended by five of the principal ministers in Boston. Published in 1747. In which he shews his great acquaintance with scripture, and his attention to, and good understanding of the prophetic part of it.

An account of the life of the Rev. Mr. David Brainerd, minister of the gospel and missionary to the Indians, &c. with reflections and observations thereon. Published in the year 1749.

An enquiry into the qualifications for full communion in the visible church. Published in the year 1749, intended as

an explanation and vindication of his principles in the matter, which occasioned his dismissal from Northampton.

A reply to the Rev. Mr. William's answer to the forementioned inquiry. Published in the year 1752.

A Sermon preached at Newark, before the Synod, Sept. 28, 1752, from Jam. ii. 19. intitled, True grace distinguished from the experience of Devils.

A careful and strict inquiry into the modern prevailing notion of that freedom of will, which is supposed to be essential to moral agency, &c. Published in the year 1754.

This is justly thought by good judges to be one of the greatest efforts of the human mind, that has appeared, at least in this century. In which the author shews that force and strength of mind, that judgment, penetration and accuracy of thought, that justly intitles him to the character of one of the greatest genius's of this age. This treatise doubtless goes further towards settling the main points in controversy between Calvinists and Arminians, than any thing that has been wrote: he having herein abundantly demonstrated the chief principles on which Arminians build their whole scheme, to be false and most absurd. Whenever therefore this book comes to be generally attended to, it will doubtless prove fatal to Arminian and Pelagian principles. This was reprinted in London, Anno 1762: and has been introduced by the Rev. T. Clap, President of Yale College, to be recited there by the Students.

The great christian doctrine of Original Sin defended; evidences of its truth produced, and arguments to the contrary answered. Containing, in particular, a reply to the objections and arguings of Dr. John Taylor, &c. Published in the year 1758. This was in the press when he died.

Besides these, he published several Ordination Sermons, and some others, preached upon particular occasions.

A P P E N D I X, No. I.

Containing a brief ACCOUNT of Mrs. ESTHER BURR, and some Extracts of LETTERS wrote by her.

MRS. BURR and her children were inoculated at the same time her father was, and were recovered when he died. But after she was perfectly recovered to all appearance, she was suddenly seized with a violent disorder, which carried her out of the world in a few days; and which the physician said he could call by no name but that of a *Messenger sent, suddenly to call her out of the world*. She died April 7, 1758, sixteen days after her father, in the 27th year of her age. She was married to Mr. Burr, June 29, 1752; by him she had two children, a son and a daughter.

Mrs. Burr exceeded most of her sex in the beauty of her person; and in a decent and easy gesture, behaviour and conversation: not stiff and starch on the one hand, nor mean and indecent on the other, in her unaffected, natural freedom with persons of all ranks, with whom she conversed. Her genius was much more than common. She had a lively, sprightly imagination, a quick and penetrating thought, and a good judgment. She had a peculiar finartness in her make and temper, which yet was consistent with pleasantness and good nature: and she knew how to be pleasant and facetious, without trespassing on the bounds of gravity, or strict and serious religion. In short, she seemed to be formed to please, and especially to please one of Mr. Burr's taste and talents, in whom he was exceeding happy. But what crowned all her excellencies, and was her chief glory, was her *Religion*. She was hopefully converted when she was seven or eight years old; and she made a public profession of religion when she was about fifteen years of age; and her conversation and conduct to her death, was exemplary and as becometh godliness. But as her religious sentiments and exercises, will best be understood by those who were strangers to her, by her own words; the following extracts are made from letters which she wrote not long before her death.

The following is an extract from a letter she wrote to her mother, not long after Mr. Burr's death, dated at Princeton, October 7, 1757. After giving some account of Mr. Burr's death, and representing the sense she had of the greatness of the loss she and her children had sustained, she writes in the following words :

“ **N**O doubt, dear Madam, it will be some comfort to you, to hear that God has not utterly forsaken, although he has cast down. I would speak it to the glory of God's name, that I think he has in an uncommon degree discovered himself to be an allsufficient God, a full fountain of all good. Although all streams were cut off, yet the fountain is left full.

“ I think I have been enabled to cast my care upon him, and have found great peace and calm in my mind, such as this world cannot give, nor take.

“ I have had uncommon freedom, and nearness to the throne of grace. God has seemed sensibly near in such a supporting and comforting manner, that I think I have never experienced the like.

“ God has helped me to review my past and present mercies, with some heart-affecting degree of thankfulness.

“ I think God has given me such a sense of the vanity of the world, and uncertainty of all sublunary enjoyments, as I never had before. The world vanishes out of my sight. Heavenly and eternal things appear much more real and important than ever before. I feel myself to be under much greater obligations to be the Lord's, than before this sore affliction.

“ The way of salvation by faith in Jesus Christ has appeared more clear and excellent; and I have been constrained to venture my All upon Him; and have found great peace of soul, in what I hope has been actings of faith. Some parts of the Psalms have been very comforting and refreshing to my soul.

“ I hope God has helped me to eye his hand in this awful dispensation; and to see the infinite right he has to his own, and to dispose of them as he pleases.

“ Thus, dear Madam, I have given you some broken hints of the exercises and supports of my mind, since the *death* of HIM, whose memory and example, will ever be precious to me as my own life.

“ O, dear Madam! I doubt not but I have your, and my honored father's prayers daily for me; but give me leave to intreat you both to request earnestly of the Lord, that I may never despise his chastenings, nor faint under this his severe stroke;

which

which I am sensible there is great danger of, if God should only deny me the supports that he has hitherto graciously granted.

“O, I am afraid I shall conduct so as to bring dishonor on my God, and the religion which I profess!—No, rather let me die this moment, than be left to bring dishonor on God’s holy name.—I am overcome—I must conclude with once more begging, that as my dear parents remember themselves, they would not forget their greatly afflicted daughter, (now a lonely widow) nor her fatherless children.

“My duty to my ever dear and honored parents, love to my brothers and sisters. From,

Dear Madam,

your dutiful and affectionate daughter,

E S T H E R B U R R.”

“To my ever honored Father.

Princeton, November 2, 1757.

* HONORED SIR,

“YOUR most affectionate, comforting letter by my brother, was exceedingly refreshing to me, although I was something damped by hearing that I should not see you until spring.* But it is my comfort in this disappointment, as well as under all my afflictions, that God knows what is best for me, and for his own glory. Perhaps I lotted too much on the company and conversation of such a near and dear and affectionate father and guide. I can not doubt but all is for the best, and I am satisfied that God should order the affair of your removal as shall be for his glory, whatever comes of me.

“Since I wrote my mother’s letter, God has carried me through new trials, and given me new supports. My little son has been sick with the slow fever, ever since my brother left us, and has been brought to the brink of the grave. But I hope in mercy God is bringing him up again. I was enabled to resign the child (after a severe struggle with nature) with the greatest freedom

* When Mr. Edwards wrote the letter she refers to, he did not think of going to Princeton till spring; but he afterwards determined otherwise, and went in January, as is before related.

freedom. God shewed me that the child was not my own, but his; and that he had a right to recall what he had lent, whenever he thought fit; and I had no reason to complain, or say God was hard with me. This silenced me.

“But O, how good is God! He not only kept me from complaining, but comforted me by enabling me to offer up the child by faith, I think, if ever I acted faith. I saw the fulness there was in Christ for little infants, and his willingness to accept of such as were offered to him. “Suffer little children to come unto me, and forbid them not;” were comforting words.

“God also shewed me in such a lively manner, the fullness there was in himself of all spiritual blessings, that I said, Although all streams were cut off, yet so long as my God lives, I have enough. He enabled me to say, “Although thou slay me, yet will I trust in thee.”

“In this time of trial, I was led to enter into a renewed and explicit covenant with God, in a more solemn manner than ever before; and with the greatest freedom and delight. After much self-examination and prayer, I did give up myself and children to God, with my whole heart. Never until now, had I a sense of the privilege we are allowed in covenanting with God! This act of soul left my mind in a quiet and steady trust in God.

“A few days after this, one evening, in talking of the glorious state my dear departed husband must be in, my soul was carried out in such longing desires after this glorious state, that I was forced to retire from the family to conceal my joy. When alone, I was so transported, and my soul carried out in such eager desires after perfection, and the full enjoyment of God, and to serve him uninterruptedly, that I think my nature would not have borne much more. I think, dear Sir, I had that night a foretaste of heaven. This frame continued in some good degree the whole night. I slept but little, and when I did, my dreams were all of heavenly and divine things. Frequently since, I have felt the same in kind, though not in degree. Thus a kind and gracious God has been with me in six troubles, and in seven.

“But O Sir, what cause of deep humiliation and abasement of soul have I, on account of remaining corruption; which I see working continually, especially pride! O, how many shapes doth pride cloke itself in!

Satan

“ Satan is also busy shooting his darts; but, blessed be God, those temptations of his, that used to overthrow me, as yet, have not touched me. O, to be delivered from the power of Satan, as well as sin! I can not help hoping the time is near. God is certainly fitting me for himself; and when I think it will be soon that I shall be called hence, the thought is transporting.”

A P P E N D I X, No. II.

Containing a short sketch of Mrs. EDWARDS'S LIFE and CHARACTER.

MR. Sarah Edwards, the amiable consort of President Edwards, did not long survive him. In September she set out in good health on a journey to Philadelphia, to take care of her two orphan grandchildren, which were now in that city; and had been, since the death of Mrs. Burr. As they had no relations in those parts, Mrs. Edwards proposed to take them into her own family. She arrived there by the way of Princeton, Sept. 21, in good health, having had a comfortable journey. But in a few days she was suddenly seized with a violent dysentery, which put an end to her life on the fifth day, October 2, 1758, in the 49th year of her age. She said not much in her sickness; being exercised most of the time with violent pain. On the morning of the day she died, she apprehended her death was near: when she expressed her entire resignation to God, and desire that God might be glorified in all things; and that she might be enabled to glorify him to the last: and continued in such a temper, calm and resigned, till she died.

Her remains were carried to Princeton, which is about 40 miles from Philadelphia, and deposited with Mr. Edwards's. Thus they who were in their lives remarkably lovely and pleasant, in their death were not much divided. Here lie the father and mother, the son and daughter, who are laid together in the grave, within the space of a little more than a year, though a few months before their dwelling was more than 150 miles apart. Two presidents of the same college, and their
 consorts,

conforts, than whom it will doubtless be hard to find four persons more valuable and useful; in a few months are cut off from the earth forever; and by a remarkable providence are put, as it were, into one grave! And we the survivors are left under the gloomy apprehension that these righteous are taken away from the evil to come!

Surely America is greatly emptied by these deaths! How much knowledge, wisdom and holiness is gone from the earth forever! And where are they who shall make good their ground!

Mrs. Edwards was born in New-Haven, in Connecticut, Jan. 9, 1709—10. Her father was the Rev. Mr. James Pierpoint, who was long an eminently godly and useful minister of the gospel at New-Haven.* She was married to Mr. Edwards, July 20, 1727, in the 18th year of her age.

Though Mrs. Edwards's full character will not be attempted here, yet it is thought proper to mention a few things, in which she excelled, and set an example worthy the imitation of all.

She remembered her creator in the days of her youth, and became truly and remarkably religious at about five years old. Was a more than ordinary beautiful person; of a pleasant, agreeable countenance; of an amiable, courteous conversation and behaviour: the law of kindness was in her tongue.

She was eminent for her piety and experimental religion. Religious conversation was much her delight; and this she promoted in all companies as far as was proper and decent for her: and her discourse shewed her understanding in divine things, and the great impresson they had on her mind. The friends of true religion, and they who were ready to engage in religious conversation, and delighted in that which was most essential and practical in true religion, were her peculiar friends and intimates. To whom she would open her mind freely, and tell them the exercises of her own heart; and what God had done for her soul, for their encouragement, and

* He was the eldest son of Mr. John Pierpoint of Roxbury, who came out of England. Her mother was Mrs. Mary Pierpoint, eldest daughter of the Rev. Mr. Samuel Hooker, minister of the gospel at Farmington, in Connecticut, and son of the Rev. Mr. Thomas Hooker, once minister of the gospel at Hartford, and famous as a divine, through all the churches in New-England.

and excitement in the ways of God. Her mind appeared, to them who were most conversant with her, constantly to attend to divine things, even on all occasions, and in all business of life.

The religious duties of the closet, she was a great friend to, and took much delight in them. She highly prized social worship. Was wont to attend the private meetings for religious worship, which were kept up at Northampton, while Mr. Edwards lived there. And promoted and attended meetings of persons of her own sex only, in order for prayer and religious conversation. She was a constant attender on public worship; and behaved with great gravity and seriousness in the house of God.

She paid proper deference to Mr. Edwards, and treated him with decency and respect at all times. As he was of a weakly, infirm constitution, and was peculiar and exact in his diet, she was a tender nurse to him; cheerfully attending upon him at all times, and ministering to his comfort: and spared no pains to conform to his inclinations, and make things agreeable and comfortable to him.

She accounted it her greatest glory, and that wherein she could best serve God and her generation, in being a means of promoting Mr. Edwards's comfort and usefulness in this way. And no person of discerning could be conversant in the family without observing and admiring the great harmony and mutual love and esteem that subsisted between them.

When she herself laboured under bodily disorders and pains, which was often the case, she was not wont to be full of her complaints, and put on a dejected or sour countenance, being out of humour with every body and every thing, as if she was disregarded and neglected: but she would bare up under them with patience, and a kind of cheerfulness and good humour.

She was a good economist, managing her household affairs with discretion; in which she was laborious and diligent. She was very careful that nothing should be wasted and lost. And often, when she did any thing to save a small matter, or directed her children to do it in any instance, or saw them waste any thing; she would mention the words of our Saviour; which, she said, she often thought of, as containing a maxim worth remembering: when, as the reason why his disciples should gather up the fragments, he says, *That nothing be lost.* She took almost the whole care of the temporal affairs of the family,

without doors and within : and in this she was peculiarly suited to Mr. Edwards's disposition, who chose to have no care of any worldly business.

She had an excellent way of governing her children : she knew how to make them regard and obey her cheerfully without loud, angry words, or heavy blows. She seldom struck her children a blow ; and in speaking to them used mild, gentle and pleasant words. If any correction was needful, it was not her manner to give it in a passion. And when she had occasion to reprove and rebuke, she would do it in few words, without heat and noise, with all calmness and gentleness of mind. And in her directions or reproofs, in any matters of importance, she would address herself to the reason of her children, that they might not only know her inclination and will, but at the same time, be convinced of the reasonableness of it. She need speak but once ; she was cheerfully obeyed ; murmuring and answering again was not known among them. And the kind and gentle treatment they had from their mother, while she strictly and punctually maintained her parental authority, seemed naturally to beget and promote a filial regard and respect ; and lead them to a mild, tender treatment of each other ; for quarelling and contention, as it frequently takes place among children, was not known among them. She carefully observed the first appearances of resentment and ill-will towards any, in her young children ; and did not connive at it and promote it, as many who have the care of children do, but was careful to shew her displeasure at it, and suppress it to her utmost : not by angry, wrathful words and blows, which often provoke children to wrath, and stir up and confirm their irascible passions, rather than abate and suppress them.

As she was sensible that in many respects, the chief care of forming children by government and instruction, naturally lies on mothers ; as they are most with their children in their most pliable age, when they commonly receive impressions by which they are very much formed for life : so she was very careful to do her part in this important business. And when she met with any special difficulty in this matter, or foresaw any, she was wont to apply to Mr. Edwards for advice and assistance : and on such occasions they would both attend to it, as a matter of great importance.

But this was not all, in which she expressed her care for her children. She thought that parents had great and important
duty

duty to do towards their children before they were capable of government and instruction. For them she constantly and earnestly prayed, and bore them on her heart before God, in all her secret and most solemn addresses to him; and that even before they were born. The evidence of her pregnancy, and consideration that it was with a rational, immortal creature, which came into existence in an undone, and infinitely dreadful state, was sufficient to lead her to bow before God daily for his blessing on it; even redemption, and eternal life by Jesus Christ. So that through all the pain, labour and sorrow, which attended her being mother of children, she was in travel for them, that they might be born of God by having Christ formed in them.

As the law of kindness was in her tongue, so her hands were not withheld from beneficence and charity. She was always a friend and patroness of the poor and helpless; and much in acts of charity, as well as recommending it to others on all proper occasions.

She was remarkable for her kindness to her friends and visitants, who resorted to Mr. Edwards's. She would spare no pains to make them welcome, and provide for their convenience and comfort. And she was peculiarly kind to strangers, who came to her house. She would take such kind and special notice of such, and so soon get acquainted with them, as it were, and shew such regard and concern for their comfort, and so kindly offer what she thought they needed, as to discover she knew the heart of a stranger, and well understood how to do it good; and so as to oblige them to feel in some measure as if they were at home.

She made it her rule to speak well of all, so far as she could with truth, and justice to herself and others. She was not wont to dwell with delight on the imperfections and failings of any; and when she heard persons speaking ill of others, she would say what she thought she could with truth and justice in their excuse; or divert the obloquy by mentioning those things that were commendable in them. Thus she was tender of every one's character, even of theirs who injured and spoke evil of her; and carefully guarded against the too common vice of evil speaking and backbiting. She could bear injuries and reproach with great calmness and patience, without any disposition to render evil for evil; but on the contrary, was ready to pity and forgive those who appeared to be her enemies.

She

She had long told her intimate friends that she had, after long struggles and exercises, obtained, by God's grace, an habitual willingness to die herself, or part with any of her most near relatives. That she was willing to bring forth children for death; and resign up him whom she esteemed so great a blessing to her and her family, her nearest partner, to the stroke of death, whenever God should see fit to take him. And when she had the greatest trial in the death of Mr. Edwards, she found the help and comfort of such a disposition. Her conversation and conduct on this occasion was even to the admiration of her friends. It was such as discovered that she was sensible of the great loss, she and her children had sustained in his death; and at the same time shewed, that she was quiet and resigned, and had those invisible supports and comforts by which she could trust in God with quietness, hope and humble joy.

They lived together in the married state above thirty years. In which time they had eleven children; all which are now living, except the second daughter, who died February, 14, 1748, (of whom the public have some account in the life of Mr. Brainerd, P. 251.) and their third daughter, Mrs. Burr, before mentioned; and their youngest daughter, named Elizabeth, who died since her parents. The surviving children are three sons, and five daughters.

FINIS.

A

T R E A T I S E

CONCERNING

RELIGIOUS AFFECTIONS.

IN THREE PARTS.

P A R T I.

Concerning the NATURE of the AFFECTIONS, and their IMPORTANCE in RELIGION.

1 P E T E R i. 8.

Whom having not seen, ye love; in whom though now ye see him not, yet believing, ye rejoice with joy unspeakable, and full of glory.

IN these words the apostle represents the state of the mind of the Christians he wrote to, under the persecutions they were then the subjects of. These persecutions are what he has respect to, in the two preceding verses, when he speaks of *the trial of their faith*, and of *their being in heaviness through manifold temptations*.

Such trials are of threefold benefit to true religion. Hereby the truth of it is manifested, and it appears to be indeed *true religion*: they, above all other things, have a tendency to distinguish between true religion and false, and to cause the difference between them evidently to appear. Hence they are called by the name of *trials*, in the verse nextly preceding the text, and in innumerable other places: they try the faith and religion of professors, of what sort it is, as apparent gold is tried

tried in the fire, and manifested, whether it be true gold or no. And the faith of true Christians being thus tried and proved to be true, is *found to praise, and honour, and glory*; as in that preceding verse.

And then, these trials are of further benefit to true religion; they not only manifest the *truth* of it, but they make its genuine *beauty* and *amiableness* remarkably to appear. True virtue never appears so lovely, as when it is most oppressed: and the divine excellency of real Christianity, is never exhibited with such advantage, as when under the greatest trials: then it is that true faith appears much more precious than gold; and upon this account, is *found to praise, and honour, and glory*.

And again, another benefit that such trials are of to true religion, is, that they purify and increase it. They not only manifest it to be true, but also tend to refine it, and deliver it from those mixtures of that which is false, which incumber and impede it; that nothing may be left but that which is true. They tend to cause the amiableness of true religion to appear to the best advantage, as was before observed; and not only so, but they tend to increase its beauty, by establishing and confirming it, and making it more lively and vigorous, and purifying it from those things that obscured its lustre and glory. As gold that is tried in the fire, is purged from its alloy, and all remainders of dross, and comes forth more solid and beautiful; so true faith being tried as gold is tried in the fire, becomes more precious; and thus also is *found unto praise, and honour, and glory*. The apostle seems to have respect to each of these benefits, that persecutions are of to true religion, in the verse preceding the text.

And in the text, the apostle observes how true religion operated in the Christians he wrote to, under their persecutions, whereby these benefits of persecution appeared in them; or what manner of operation of true religion, in them, it was, whereby their religion, under persecution, was manifested to be *true* religion, and eminently appeared in the genuine *beauty* and *amiableness* of true religion, and also appeared to be *increased* and *purified*, and so was like to be *found unto praise, and honour, and glory, at the appearing of Jesus Christ*. And there were two kinds of operation, or exercise of true religion, in them, under their sufferings, that the apostle takes notice of in the text, wherein these benefits appeared.

1. *Love to Christ; Whom having not seen, ye love.* The world was ready to wonder, what strange principle it was, that influenced them to expose themselves to so great sufferings, to forsake the things that were seen, and renounce all that was dear and pleasant, which was the object of sense. They seemed to the men of the world about them, as though they were beside themselves, and to act as though they hated themselves; there was nothing in their view, that could induce them thus to suffer, and support them under, and carry them through such trials. But although there was nothing that was seen, nothing that the world saw, or that the Christians themselves ever saw with their bodily eyes, that thus influenced and supported them, yet they had a supernatural principle of love to something *unseen*; they loved Jesus Christ, for they saw him spiritually, whom the world saw not, and whom they themselves had never seen with bodily eyes.

2. *Joy in Christ.* Though their outward sufferings were very grievous, yet their inward spiritual joys were greater than their sufferings; and these supported them, and enabled them to suffer with cheerfulness.

There are two things which the apostle takes notice of in the text concerning this joy. 1. The manner in which it rises, the way in which Christ, though unseen, is the foundation of it, viz. by faith; which is the evidence of things not seen; *In whom, though now ye see him not, yet believing, ye rejoice.*— 2. The nature of this joy; *unspeakable, and full of glory.* *Unspeakable* in the kind of it; very different from worldly joys, and carnal delights; of a vastly more pure, sublime, and heavenly nature, being something supernatural, and truly divine, and so ineffably excellent; the sublimity and exquisite sweetness of which, there were no words to set forth. *Unspeakable* also in degree; it pleasing God to give them this holy joy, with a liberal hand, and in large measure, in their state of perfection.

Their joy was *full of glory.* Although the joy was unspeakable, and no words were sufficient to describe it; yet something might be said of it, and no words more fit to represent its excellency than these, that it was *full of glory*; or, as it is in the original, *glorified joy.* In rejoicing with this joy, their minds were filled, as it were, with a glorious brightness, and their natures exalted and perfected. It was a most worthy,

noble rejoicing, that did not corrupt and debase the mind, as many carnal joys do ; but did greatly beautify and dignify it : it was a prelibation of the joy of heaven, that raised their minds to a degree of heavenly blessedness ; it filled their minds with the light of God's glory, and made them themselves to shine with some communication of that glory.

Hence the proposition or doctrine, that I would raise from these words is this,

DOCT. *True religion, in great part, consists in holy affections.*

We see that the apostle, in observing and remarking the operations and exercises of religion, in the Christians he wrote to, wherein their religion appeared to be true and of the right kind, when it had its greatest trial of what sort it was, being tried by persecution as gold is tried in the fire, and when their religion not only proved true, but was most pure, and cleansed from its dross and mixtures of that which was not true, and when religion appeared in them most in its genuine excellency and native beauty, and was found to praise, and honour, and glory ; he singles out the religious affections of *love* and *joy*, that were then in exercise in them : these are the exercises of religion he takes notice of, wherein their religion did thus appear true and pure, and in its proper glory.

Here I would,

I. Shew what is intended by the *affections*.

II. Observe some things which make it evident, that a great part of true religion lies in the affections.

I. It may be inquired, what the affections of the mind are ?

I answer, The affections are no other, than the more vigorous and sensible exercises of the inclination and will of the soul.

God has endued the soul with two faculties : One is that by which it is capable of perception and speculation, or by which it discerns, and views, and judges of things ; which is called the understanding. The other faculty is that by which the soul does not merely perceive and view things, but is some way inclined with respect to the things it views or considers ; either is inclined *to them*, or is disinclined, and averse *from them* : or is the faculty by which the soul does not behold things, as an indifferent

indifferent unaffected spectator, but either as liking or disliking, pleased or displeased, approving or rejecting. This faculty is called by various names: it is sometimes called the *inclination*: and, as it has respect to the actions that are determined and governed by it, is called the *will*: and the mind, with regard to the exercises of this faculty, is often called the *heart*.

The exercises of this faculty are of two sorts; either those by which the soul is carried out towards the things that are in view, in *approving* of them, being pleased with them, and inclined to them; or those in which the soul opposes the things that are in view, in *disapproving* them, and in being displeased with them, averse from them, and rejecting them.

And as the exercises of the inclination and will of the soul are various in their *kinds*, so they are much more various in their *degrees*. There are some exercises of pleasedness or displeaseness, inclination or disinclination, wherein the soul is carried but a little beyond a state of perfect indifference. And there are other degrees above this, wherein the approbation or dislike, pleasedness or aversion, are stronger; wherein we may rise higher and higher, till the soul comes to act vigorously and sensibly, and the actings of the soul are with that strength, that (through the laws of the union which the Creator has fixed between soul and body) the motion of the blood and animal spirits begins to be sensibly altered; whence oftentimes arises some bodily sensation, especially about the heart and vitals, that are the fountain of the fluids of the body: from whence it comes to pass, that the mind, with regard to the exercises of this faculty, perhaps in all nations and ages, is called *the heart*. And it is to be noted, that they are these more vigorous and sensible exercises of this faculty, that are called the *affections*.

The *will*, and the *affections* of the soul, are not two faculties; the affections are not essentially distinct from the will, nor do they differ from the mere actings of the will and inclination of the soul, but only in the liveliness and sensibleness of exercise.

It must be confessed, that language is here somewhat imperfect, and the meaning of words in a considerable measure loose and unfixed, and not precisely limited by custom, which governs the use of language. In some sense, the affection of the soul differs nothing at all from the will and inclination, and the will never is in any exercise any further than it is *affected*; it is not moved out of a state of perfect indifference, any other-wise than as it is *affected* one way or other, and acts nothing any further. But yet there are many actings of the will and inclination,

inclination, that are not so commonly called *affections*; in every thing we do, wherein we act voluntarily, there is an exercise of the will and inclination, it is our inclination that governs us in our actions: but all the actings of the inclination and will, in all our common actions of life, are not ordinarily called *affections*. Yet, what are commonly called *affections* are not essentially different from them, but only in the degree and manner of exercise. In every act of the will whatsoever, the soul either likes or dislikes, is either inclined or disinclined to what is in view: these are not essentially different from those *affections of love and hatred*: that liking or inclination of the soul to a thing, if it be in a high degree, and be vigorous and lively, is the very same thing with the affection of *love*: and that disliking and disinclining, if in a great degree, is the very same with *hatred*. In every act of the will *for*, or *towards* something not present, the soul is in some degree inclined to that thing; and that inclination, if in a considerable degree, is the very same with the affection of *desire*. And in every degree of the act of the will, wherein the soul approves of something present, there is a degree of pleasedness; and that pleasedness, if it be in a considerable degree, is the very same with the affection of *joy or delight*. And if the will disapproves of what is present, the soul is in some degree displeased, and if that displeasedness be great, it is the very same with the affection of *grief or sorrow*.

Such seems to be our nature, and such the laws of the union of soul and body, that there never is in any case whatsoever, any lively and vigorous exercise of the will or inclination of the soul, without some effect upon the body, in some alteration of the motion of its fluids, and especially of the animal spirits. And on the other hand, from the same laws of the union of soul and body, the constitution of the body, and the motion of its fluids, may promote the exercise of the affections. But yet, it is not the body, but the mind only, that is the proper seat of the affections. The body of man is no more capable of being really the subject of love or hatred, joy or sorrow, fear or hope, than the body of a tree, or than the same body of man is capable of thinking and understanding. As it is the soul only that has ideas, so it is the soul only that is pleased or displeased with its ideas. As it is the soul only that thinks, so it is the soul only that loves or hates, rejoices or is grieved at what it thinks of. Nor are these motions of the animal spirits,

and

and fluids of the body, any thing properly belonging to the nature of the affections ; though they always accompany them, in the present state ; but are only effects or concomitants of the affections, that are entirely distinct from the affections themselves, and no way essential to them ; so that an unbodied spirit may be as capable of love and hatred, joy or sorrow, hope or fear, or other affections, as one that is united to a body."

The *affections* and *passions* are frequently spoken of as the same ; and yet, in the more common use of speech, there is in some respect a difference ; and *affection* is a word, that in its ordinary signification, seems to be something more extensive than *passion*, being used for all vigorous lively actings of the will or inclination ; but *passion* for those that are more sudden, and whose effects on the animal spirits are more violent, and the mind more overpowered, and less in its own command.

As all the exercises of the inclination and will, are either in approving and liking, or disapproving and rejecting ; so the affections are of two sorts ; they are those by which the soul is carried out to what is in view, cleaving to it, or *seeking* it ; or those by which it is averse from it, and *opposes* it.

Of the former sort are *love, desire, hope, joy, gratitude, complacence*. Of the latter kind, are *hatred, fear, anger, grief*, and such like ; which it is needless now to stand particularly to define.

And there are some affections wherein there is a composition of each of the aforementioned kinds of actings of the will ; as in the affection of *pity*, there is something of the *former kind*, towards the person suffering, and something of the *latter*, towards what he suffers. And so in *zeal*, there is in it high *approbation* of some person or thing, together with vigorous *opposition* to what is conceived to be contrary to it.

There are other mixed affections that might be also mentioned, but I hasten to

II. The second thing proposed, which was, to observe some things that render it evident, that true religion, in great part, consists in the affections. And here,

1. What has been said of the nature of the affections, makes this evident, and may be sufficient, without adding any thing further, to put this matter out of doubt : for who will deny that true religion consists in a great measure, in vigorous and lively actings of the *inclination* and *will* of the soul, or the fervent exercises of the *heart* ?

That

That religion which God requires, and will accept, does not consist in weak, dull, and lifeless woublings, raising us but a little above a state of indifference: God, in his word, greatly insists upon it, that we be in good earnest, *fervent in spirit*, and our hearts vigorously engaged in religion; Rom. xii. 11. "Be ye fervent in spirit, serving the Lord." Deut. x. 12. "And now Israel, what doth the Lord thy God require of thee, but to fear the Lord thy God, to walk in all his ways, and to love him, and to serve the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul?" And chap. vi. 4, 5. "Hear, O Israel, the Lord our God is one Lord: and thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy might." It is such a fervent, vigorous engagedness of the heart in religion, that is the fruit of a real circumcision of the heart, or true regeneration, and that has the promises of life; Deut. xxx. 6. "And the Lord thy God will circumcise thine heart, and the heart of thy seed, to love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, that thou mayst live."

If we be not in good earnest in religion, and our wills and inclinations be not strongly exercised, we are nothing. The things of religion are so great, that there can be no suitability in the exercises of our hearts, to their nature and importance, unless they be lively and powerful. In nothing is vigour in the actings of our inclinations so requisite, as in religion; and in nothing is lukewarmness so odious. True religion is evermore a powerful thing; and the power of it appears, in the first place, in the inward exercises of it in the heart, where is the principal and original seat of it. Hence true religion is called the *power of godliness*, in distinction from the external appearances of it, that are *the form* of it, 2 Tim. iii. 5. "Having a form of godliness, but denying, the power of it." The Spirit of God, in those that have sound and solid religion, is a spirit of powerful holy affection; and therefore, God is said to *have given them the Spirit of power, and of love, and of a sound mind*, 2 Tim. i. 7. And such, when they receive the Spirit of God, in his sanctifying and saving influences, are said to be *baptized with the Holy Ghost, and with fire*; by reason of the power and fervour of those exercises the Spirit of God excites in their hearts, whereby their hearts, when grace is in exercise, may be said to *burn within them*; as is said of the disciples, Luke xxiv. 32.

The business of religion is, from time to time, compared to those exercises, wherein men are wont to have their hearts and strength greatly exercised and engaged; such as running, wrestling, or agonizing for a great prize or crown, and fighting with strong enemies that seek our lives, and warring as those that by violence take a city or kingdom.

And though true grace has various degrees, and there are some that are but babes in Christ, in whom the exercise of the inclination and will towards divine and heavenly things, is comparatively weak; yet every one that has the power of godliness in his heart, has his inclinations and heart exercised towards God and divine things, with such strength and vigour, that these holy exercises do prevail in him above all carnal or natural affections, and are effectual to overcome them: for every true disciple of Christ, *loves him above father or mother, wife and children, brethren and sisters, houses and lands; yea, than his own life.* From hence it follows, that where-ever true religion is, there are vigorous exercises of the inclination and will towards divine objects: but by what was said before, the vigorous, lively, and sensible exercises of the will, are no other than the affections of the soul.

2. The Author of the human nature has not only given affections to men, but has made them very much the spring of mens actions. As the affections do not only necessarily belong to the human nature, but are a very great part of it; so (inasmuch as by regeneration, persons are renewed in the whole man, and sanctified throughout) holy affections do not only necessarily belong to true religion, but are a very great part of that. And as true religion is of a practical nature, and God hath so constituted the human nature, that the affections are very much the spring of mens actions, this also shews, that true religion must consist very much in the affections.

Such is man's nature, that he is very unactive, any otherwise than he is influenced by some affection, either *love* or *hatred*, *desire*, *hope*, *fear*, or some other. These affections we see to be the springs that set men a-going, in all the affairs of life, and engage them in all their pursuits: these are the things that put men forward, and carry them along, in all their worldly businesses; and especially are men excited and animated by these, in all affairs, wherein they are earnestly engaged, and which they pursue with vigor. We see the world of mankind to be exceeding
 busy

busy and active; and the affections of men are the springs of the motion: take away all *love* and *hatred*, all *hope* and *fear*, all *anger*, *zeal*, and affectionate *desire*, and the world would be, in a great measure, motionless and dead; there would be no such thing as activity amongst mankind, or any earnest pursuit whatsoever. It is affection that engages the covetous man, and him that is greedy of worldly profits, in his pursuits; and it is by the affections, that the ambitious man is put forward in his pursuit of worldly glory; and it is the affections also that actuate the voluptuous man, in his pursuit of pleasure and sensual delights: the world continues, from age to age, in a continual commotion and agitation, in a pursuit of these things; but take away all affection, and the spring of all this motion would be gone, and the motion itself would cease. And as in worldly things, worldly affections are very much the spring of mens motion and action; so in religious matters the spring of their actions are very much religious affections: he that has doctrinal knowledge and speculation only, without affection, never is engaged in the business of religion.

3. Nothing is more manifest *in fact*, than that the things of religion take hold of mens souls, no further than they *affect* them. There are multitudes that often hear the word of God, and therein hear of those things that are infinitely great and important, and that most nearly concern them, and all that is heard seems to be wholly ineffectual upon them, and to make no alteration in their disposition or behaviour; and the reason is, they are not affected with what they hear. There are many that often hear of the glorious perfections of God, his almighty power, and boundless wisdom, his infinite majesty, and that holiness of God, by which he is of purer eyes than to behold evil, and cannot look on iniquity, and the heavens are not pure in his sight, and of God's infinite goodness and mercy, and hear of the great works of God's wisdom, power and goodness, wherein there appear the admirable manifestations of these perfections; they hear particularly of the unspeakable love of God and Christ, and of the great things that Christ has done and suffered, and of the great things of another world, of eternal misery, in bearing the fierceness and wrath of almighty God, and of endless blessedness and glory in the presence of God, and the enjoyment of his dear love; they also hear the peremptory commands of God, and his gracious counsels and warnings, and the sweet invitations of the gospel; I say, they often hear these things, and yet remain as they were before,
with

with no sensible alterations on them, either in heart or practice, because they are not affected with what they hear; and ever will be so till they are affected. I am bold to assert, that there never was any considerable change wrought in the mind or conversation of any one person, by any thing of a religious nature, that ever he read, heard or saw, that had not his affections moved. Never was a natural man engaged earnestly to seek his salvation; never were any such brought to cry after wisdom, and lift up their voice for understanding, and to wrestle with God in prayer for mercy; and never was one humbled, and brought to the foot of God, from any thing that ever he heard or imagined of his own unworthiness and deservings of God's displeasure; nor was ever one induced to fly for refuge unto Christ, while his heart remained unaffected. Nor was there ever a saint awakened out of a cold, lifeless frame, or recovered from a declining state in religion, and brought back from a lamentable departure from God, without having his heart affected. And, in a word, there never was any thing considerable brought to pass in the heart or life of any man living, by the things of religion, that had not his heart deeply affected by those things.

4. The holy scriptures do every where place religion much in the affections; such as fear, hope, love, hatred, desire, joy, sorrow, gratitude, compassion, and zeal.

The scriptures place much of religion in godly *fear*; inasmuch that it is often spoken of as the character of those that are truly religious persons, that *they tremble at God's word*, that *they fear before him*, that *their flesh trembles for fear of him*, and that *they are afraid of his judgments*, that *his excellency makes them afraid*, and *his dread falls upon them*; and the like: and a compellation commonly given the saints in scripture, is, *fearers of God*, or *they that fear the Lord*. And because the fear of God is a great part of true godliness, hence true godliness in general, is very commonly called by the name of *the fear of God*; as every one knows, that knows any thing of the Bible.

So *hope* in God and in the promises of his word, is often spoken of in the scripture, as a very considerable part of true religion. It is mentioned as one of the three great things of which religion consists, 1 Cor. xiii. 13. Hope in the Lord is also frequently mentioned as the character of the saints: Psal. cxlvi. 5. "Happy is he that hath the God of Jacob for his help,

“ whose hope is in the Lord his God.” Jer. xvii. 7. “ Blessed is the man that trusteth in the Lord, and whose hope the Lord is.” Pſal. xxxi. 24. “ Be of good courage, and he shall strengthen your heart, all ye that hope in the Lord.” And the like in many other places. Religious fear and hope are, once and again, joined together, as jointly constituting the character of the true saints; Pſal. xxxiii. 18. “ Behold, the eye of the Lord is upon them that *fear* him, upon them that *hope* in his mercy.” Pſal. cxlvii. 11. “ The Lord taketh pleasure in them that *fear* him, in those that *hope* in his mercy.” Hope is so great a part of true religion, that the apostle says “ we are saved by hope.” Rom. viii. 24. And this is spoken of as the helmet of the Christian soldier, 1 Theſſ. v. 8. “ And for an helmet, the hope of salvation;” and the sure and stedfast anchor of the soul, which preserves it from being cast away by the storms of this evil world, Heb. vi. 19. “ Which hope we have as an anchor of the soul, both sure and stedfast, and which entereth into that within the veil.” It is spoken of as a great fruit and benefit which true saints receive by Christ’s resurrection, 1 Pet. i. 3. “ Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, which according to his abundant mercy, hath begotten us again unto a lively hope, by the resurrection of Jesus Christ from the dead.

The scriptures place religion very much in the affection of *love*, in love to God, and the Lord Jesus Christ, and love to the people of God, and to mankind. The texts in which this is manifest, both in the Old Testament and New, are innumerable. But of this more afterwards.

The contrary affection of *hatred* also, as having sin for its object, is spoken of in scripture, as no inconsiderable part of true religion. It is spoken of as that by which true religion may be known and distinguished, Prov. viii. 13. “ The fear of the Lord is to hate evil.” And accordingly the saints are called upon to give evidence of their sincerity by this, Pſal. cxvii. 10. “ Ye that love the Lord, hate evil.” And the psalmist often mentions it as an evidence of his sincerity; Pſal. ci. 2, 3. “ I will walk within my house with a perfect heart. I will set no wicked thing before mine eyes: I hate the work of them that turn aside.” Pſal. cxix. 104. “ I hate every false way.” So vers. 128. Again Pſal. cxxxix. 21. “ Do I not hate them, O Lord, that hate thee?”

So holy *desire*, exercised in longings, hungerings, and thirstings after God and holiness, is often mentioned in scripture as
an

an important part of true religion; II. xxvi. 8. "The desire of our soul is to thy name, and to the remembrance of thee." Pſal. xxvii. 4. "One thing have I deſired of the Lord, and that will I ſeek after, that I may dwell in the houſe of the Lord all the days of my life, to behold the beauty of the Lord, and to inquire in his temple." Pſal. xlii. 1, 2. "As the hart panteth after the water-brooks, ſo panteth my ſoul after thee, O God, my ſoul thiſteth for God, for the living God: when ſhall I come and appear before God?" Pſal. lxiii. 1, 2. "My ſoul thiſteth for thee, my fleſh longeth for thee in a dry and thiſty land, where no water is: to ſee thy power and thy glory, ſo as I have ſeen thee in the ſanctuary." Pſal. lxxxiv. 1, 2. "How amiable are thy tabernacles, O Lord, of hoſts! My ſoul longeth, yea, even fainteth for the courts of the Lord: my heart and my fleſh crieth out for the living God." Pſal. cxix. 20. "My ſoul breaketh for the longing that it hath unto thy judgments at all times." So Pſal. lxxiii. 25. and cxliii. 6, 7. and cxxx. 6. Cant. iii. 1, 2. and vi. 8. Such a holy deſire and thiſt of ſoul is mentioned, as one of thoſe great things which renders or denotes a man truly bleſſed, in the beginning of Chriſt's ſermon on the mount, Matt. v. 6. "Bleſſed are they that do hunger and thiſt after righteouſneſs: for they ſhall be filled." And this holy thiſt is ſpoken of, as a great thing in the condition of a participation of the bleſſings of eternal life, Rev. xx. 6. "I will give unto him that is athiſt, of the fountain of the water of life freely."

The ſcriptures ſpeak of holy *joy*, as a great part of true religion. So it is repreſented in the text. And as an important part of religion, it is often exhorted to, and preſſed, with great earneſtneſs; Pſal. xxxvii. 4. "Delight thyſelf in the Lord; and he ſhall give thee the deſires of thine heart." Pſal. xcvii. 12. "Rejoice in the Lord, ye righteous." So Pſal. xxxiii. 1. "Rejoice in the Lord, O ye righteous." Matt. v. 12. "Rejoice and be exceeding glad." Phil. iii. 1. "Finally, brethren, rejoice in the Lord." And chap. iv. 4. "Rejoice in the Lord alway: and again I ſay, Rejoice." 1 Theſſ. v. 16. "Rejoice evermore." Pſal. cxlix. 2. "Let Iſrael rejoice in him that made him: let the children of Zion be joyful in their King." This is mentioned among the principal fruits of the ſpirit of grace, Gal. v. 22. "The fruit of the Spirit is
" love

“love, joy, &c.—The psalmist mentions his holy joy, as an evidence of his sincerity, Psal. cxix. 14. “I have rejoiced in the way of thy testimonies, as much as in all riches.”

Religious *sorrow*, mourning, and brokenness of heart, are also frequently spoken of as a great part of true religion. These things are often mentioned as distinguishing qualities of the true saints, and a great part of their character; Matth. v. 4. “Blessed are they that mourn: for they shall be comforted.” Psal. xxxiv. 18. “The Lord is nigh unto them that are of a broken heart: and saveth such as be of a contrite spirit.” If. lxi. 1, 2. “The Lord hath anointed me—to bind up the broken-hearted,—to comfort all that mourn.” This godly sorrow and brokenness of heart is often spoken of, not only as a great thing in the distinguishing character of the saints, but that in them, which is peculiarly acceptable and pleasing to God; Psal. li. 17. “The sacrifices of God are a broken spirit: a broken and a contrite heart, O God, thou wilt not despise.” If. lvii. 15. “Thus saith the high and lofty One that inhabiteth eternity, whose name is holy, I dwell in the high and holy place; with him also that is of a contrite and humble spirit, to revive the spirit of the humble, and to revive the heart of the contrite ones.” Chap. lxvi. 2. “To this man will I look, even to him that is poor and of a contrite spirit.

Another affection often mentioned, as that in the exercise of which much of true religion appears, is *gratitude*; especially as exercised in thankfulness and praise to God. This being so much spoken of in the book of Psalms, and other parts of the holy scriptures, I need not mention particular texts.

Again, the holy scriptures do frequently speak of *compassion* or *mercy*, as a very great and essential thing in true religion; insomuch that good men are in scripture denominated from hence; and a merciful man, and a good man, are equivalent terms in scripture; If. lvii. 1. “The righteous perisheth and no man layeth it to heart: and merciful men are taken away.” And the scripture chooses out this quality, as that by which, in a peculiar manner, a righteous man is decyphered; Psal. xxxvii. 21. “The righteous sheweth mercy, and giveth;” and vers. 26. “He is ever merciful, and lendeth.” And Prov. xiv. 31. “He that honoureth the Lord, hath mercy on the poor.” And Col. iii. 12. “Put ye on, as the elect of God, holy and beloved, bowels of mercies, &c.” This is one of those great things, by which those who are truly blessed are described
by

by our Saviour, Matth. v. 7. "blessed are the merciful, for they shall obtain mercy." And this Christ also speaks of, as one of the weightier matters of the law, Matth. xxiii. 23. "Wo unto you, Scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites; for ye pay tithe of mint, and anise, and cummin, and have omitted the weightier matters of the law, judgment, mercy, and faith." To the like purpose is that, Mic. vi. 8. "He hath shewed thee, O man, what is good: and what doth the Lord require of thee, but to do justice, and love mercy, and walk humbly with thy God?" And also that, Hos. vi. 6. "For I desired mercy, and not sacrifice." Which seems to have been a text much delighted in by our Saviour, by his manner of citing it once and again, Matth. ix. 13. and xii. 7.

Zeal is also spoken of, as a very essential part of the religion of true saints. It is spoken of as a great thing Christ had in view, in giving himself for our redemption, Tit. ii. 14. "Who gave himself for us, that he might redeem us from all iniquity, and purify unto himself a peculiar people, zealous of good works." And this is spoken of, as the great thing wanting in the lukewarm Laodiceans, Rev. iii. 15, 16, 19.

I have mentioned but a few texts, out of an innumerable multitude, all over the scripture, which place religion very much in the affections. But what has been observed, may be sufficient to shew that they who would deny that much of true religion lies in the affections, and maintain the contrary, must throw away what we have been wont to own for our Bible, and get some other rule, by which to judge of the nature of religion.

5. The scriptures do represent true religion, as being summarily comprehended in *love*, the chief of the affections, and fountain of all other affections.

So our blessed Saviour represents the matter, in answer to the lawyer, who asked him, which was the great commandment of the law, Math. xxii. 37—40. "Jesus said unto him, Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind. This is the first and great commandment. And the second is like unto it, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself. On these two commandments hang all the law and the prophets." Which last words signify as much, as that these two commandments comprehend all the duty prescribed, and the religion taught in
the

the law and the prophets. And the apostle Paul does from time to time make the same representation of the matter; as in Rom. xiii. 8. "He that loveth another, hath fulfilled the law." And vers. 10. "Love is the fulfilling of the law." And Gal. v. 14. "For all the law is fulfilled in one word, even in this, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself." So likewise in 1 Tim. i. 5. "Now the end of the commandment is charity, out of a pure heart, &c." So the same apostle speaks of love, as the greatest thing in religion, and as the vitals, essence and soul of it; without which, the greatest knowledge and gifts, and the most glaring profession, and every thing else which appertains to religion, are vain and worthless; and represents it as the fountain from whence proceeds all that is good, in 1 Cor. xiii. throughout; for that which is there rendered *charity*, in the original, the proper English is *love*.

Now, although it be true, that the love thus spoken of, includes the whole of a sincerely benevolent propensity of the soul, towards God and man; yet it may be considered, that it is evident from what has been before observed, that this propensity or inclination of the soul, when in sensible and vigorous exercise, becomes *affection*, and is no other than affectionate love. And surely it is such vigorous and fervent love which Christ speaks of, as the sum of all religion, when he speaks of loving God with all our hearts, with all all our souls, and with all our minds, and our neighbour as ourselves, as the sum of all that was taught and prescribed in the law and the prophets.

Indeed it cannot be supposed, when this affection of love is here, and in other scriptures, spoken of as the sum of all religion, that hereby is meant the act, exclusive of the habit, or that the exercise of the understanding is excluded, which is implied in all reasonable affection. But it is doubtless true, and evident from these scriptures, that the *essence* of all true religion lies in holy love; and that in this divine affection, and an habitual disposition to it, and that light which is the foundation of it, and those things which are the fruits of it; consists the *whole* of religion.

From hence it clearly and certainly appears, that great part of true religion consists in the affections. For love is not only one of the affections, but it is the first and chief of the affections, and the fountain of all the affections. From *love* arises *hatred* of those things which are contrary to what we love, or
which

which oppose and thwart us in those things that we delight in : and from the various exercises of love and hatred, according to the circumstances of the objects of these affections, as present or absent, certain or uncertain, probable or improbable, arise all those other affections of *desire, hope, fear, joy, grief, gratitude, anger, &c.* From a vigorous, affectionate, and fervent *love to God*, will necessarily arise other *religious* affections ; hence will arise an intense *hatred* and abhorrence of sin, *fear* of sin, and a *dread* of God's displeasure, *gratitude* to God for his goodness, *complacency* and *joy* in God when God is graciously and sensibly present, and *grief* when he is absent, and a joyful *hope* when a future enjoyment of God is expected, and fervent *zeal* for the glory of God. And in like manner, from a fervent *love to men*, will arise all other virtuous affections towards men.

6. The religion of the most eminent saints we have an account of in the scripture, consisted much in holy *affections*.

I shall take particular notice of three eminent saints, which have expressed the frame and sentiments of their own hearts, and so described their own religion, and the manner of their intercourse with God, in the writings which they have left us, that are a part of the sacred canon.

The *first* instance I shall take notice of, is David, that *man after God's own heart* ; who has given us a lively portraiture of his religion in the book of Psalms. Those holy songs of his he has there left us, are nothing else but the expressions and breathings of devout and holy *affections* : such as an humble and fervent *love* to God, *admiration* of his glorious perfections and wonderful works, earnest *desires*, thirstings, and *pinnings* of soul after God, *delight* and *joy* in God, a sweet and melting *gratitude* to God for his great goodness, an holy *exultation* and triumph of soul in the favour, sufficiency, and faithfulness of God, his *love* to, and *delight* in the saints the excellent of the earth, his great *delight* in the word and ordinances of God, his *grief* for his own and others sins, and his fervent *zeal* for God, and against the enemies of God and his church. And these expressions of holy affections, which the psalms of David are every where full of, are the more to our present purpose, because those psalms are not only the expressions of the religion of so eminent a saint, that God speaks of as so agreeable to his mind ; but were also, by the direction of the Holy Ghost,

penned

penned for the use of the church of God in its public worship, not only in that age, but in after ages; as being fitted to express the religion of all saints, in all ages, as well as the religion of the psalmist. And it is moreover to be observed, that David, in the book of Psalms, speaks not as a private person, but as the *psalmist of Israel*, as the subordinate head of the church of God, and leader in their worship and praises; and in many of the psalms, speaks in the name of Christ, as personating him in these breathings forth of holy affection; and in many other psalms, he speaks in the name of the church.

Another instance I shall observe, is the apostle Paul; who was, in many respects, the chief of all the ministers of the New Testament; being above all others, a chosen vessel unto Christ, to bear his name before the Gentiles, and made the chief instrument of propagating and establishing the christian church in the world, and of distinctly revealing the glorious mysteries of the gospel, for the instruction of the church in all ages; and (as has not been improbably thought by some) the most eminent servant of Christ, that ever lived, received to the highest rewards in the heavenly kingdom of his Master. By what is said of him in the scripture, he appears to have been a person that was full of affection. And it is very manifest, that the religion he expresses in his epistles, consisted very much in holy affections. It appears by all his expressions of himself, that he was, in the course of his life, inflamed, actuated, and entirely swallowed up, by a most ardent love to his glorious Lord, esteeming all things as loss, for the excellency of the knowledge of him, and esteeming them but dung that he might win him. He represents himself, as overpowered by this holy affection, and so it were compelled by it to go forward in his service, through all difficulties and sufferings, 2 Cor. v. 14, 15. And his epistles are full of expressions of an overflowing affection towards the people of Christ: he speaks of his *dear love* to them, 2 Cor. xii. 19. Phil. iv. 1. 2 Tim. i. 2; of his *abundant love*, 2 Cor. ii. 4; and of his *affectionate and tender love*, as of a nurse towards her children, 1 Thess. ii. 7, 8. "But we were gentle among you, even as a nurse cherisheth her children: so, being affectionately desirous of you, we were willing to have imparted unto you, not the gospel of God only, but also our own souls, because you were dear unto us." So also he speaks of his *bowels of love*, Phil. i. 8. Philem. 5, 12, and 20. So he speaks of his *earnest care* for others, 2 Cor. viii. 16. and

of his bowels of pity or mercy towards them, Phil. ii. 1; and of his concern for others, even to *anguish of heart*, 2 Cor. ii. 4. "For out of much affliction and anguish of heart, I wrote unto you with many tears; not that you should be grieved, but that ye might know the love which I have more abundantly unto you." He speaks of the *great conflict* of his soul for them, Col. ii. 1. He speaks of *great and continual grief* that he had in his heart from *compassion* to the Jews, Rom. ix. 2. He speaks of *his mouth's being opened, and his heart enlarged* towards Christians, 2 Cor. vi. 11. "O ye Corinthians, our mouth is open unto you, our heart is enlarged." He often speaks of his *affectionate and longing desires*, 1 Theff. ii. 8. Rom. i. 11. Phil. i. 8. and Chap. iv. 1. 2 Tim. i. 4. The same apostle is very often, in his epistles, expressing the affection of *joy*, 2 Cor. i. 12. and Chap. vii. 7. and vers. 9. 16. Phil. i. 4. and Chap. ii. 1, 2. and Chap. iii. 3. Col. i. 24. 1 Theff. iii. 9. He speaks of his *rejoicing with great joy*, Phil. iv. 10. Philem. 1. 7. of his *joying and rejoicing*, Phil. ii. 1. 7. and of his *rejoicing exceedingly*, 2 Cor. vii. 13. and of his being *filled with comfort, and being exceeding joyful*, 2 Cor. vii. 4. He speaks of himself as *always rejoicing*, 2 Cor. vi. 10. So he speaks of the *triumphs* of his soul, 2 Cor. ii. 14. and of *his glorying in tribulation*, 2 Theff. i. 4. and Rom. v. 3. He also expresses the affection of *hope*; in Phil. i. 20. he speaks of his *earnest expectation, and his hope*. He likewise expresses an affection of *godly jealousy*, 2 Cor. xi. 2, 3. And it appears by his whole history, after his conversion, in the Acts, and also by all his epistles, and the accounts he gives of himself there, that the affection of *zeal*, as having the cause of his Master, and the interest and prosperity of his church, for its object, was mighty in him, continually inflaming his heart, strongly engaging to those great and constant labours he went through, in instructing, exhorting, warning, and reproofing others, *travailing in birth with them*; conflicting with those powerful and innumerable enemies who continually opposed him, wrestling with principalities and powers, not fighting as one who beats the air, running the race set before him, continually pressing forwards through all manner of difficulties and sufferings; so that others thought him quite beside himself. And how full he was of affection, does further appear by his being so full of tears; in 2 Cor. ii. 4. he speaks of his *many tears*; and so Acts xx. 19. and of his *tears* that he shed *continually, night and day*, vers.

Now if any one can consider these accounts given in the scripture of this great apostle, and which he gives of himself, and yet not see that his religion consisted much in affection, must have a strange faculty of managing his eyes, to shut out the light which shines most full in his face.

The other instance I shall mention, is of the apostle John, that beloved disciple, who was the nearest and dearest to his Master of any of the twelve, and was by him admitted to the greatest privileges of any of them; being not only one of the three who were admitted to be present with him in the mount at his transfiguration, and at the raising of Jairus's daughter, and whom he took with him when he was in his agony, and one of the three spoken of by the apostle Paul, as the three main pillars of the Christian church; but was favored above all, in being admitted to lean on his Master's bosom, at his last supper, and in being chosen by Christ, as the disciple to whom he would reveal his wonderful dispensations towards his church, to the end of time; as we have an account in the book of Revelation; and to shut up the canon of the New Testament, and of the whole scripture; being preserved much longer than all the rest of the apostles, to set all things in order in the Christian church, after their death.

It is evident by all his writings, (as is generally observed by divines) that he was a person remarkably full of affection: his addressees to those whom he wrote to, being inexpressibly tender and pathetic, breathing nothing but the most fervent love; as though he were all made up of sweet and holy affection. The proofs of which cannot be given without disadvantage, unless we should transcribe his whole writings.

7. He whom God sent into the world, to be the light of the world, and head of the whole church, and the perfect example of true religion and virtue, for the imitation of all, the Shepherd whom the whole flock should follow where-ever he goes, even the Lord Jesus Christ, was a person who was remarkably of a tender and affectionate heart; and his virtue was expressed very much in the exercise of holy affections. He was the greatest instance of ardency, vigour and strength of *love*, to both God and man, that ever was. It was these affections which got the victory, in that mighty struggle and conflict of his affections, in his agonies, when *he prayed more earnestly, and offered strong crying and tears*, and wrestled in tears and in blood. Such was the power of the exercises of his holy love,
that

that they were stronger than death, and in that great struggle, overcame those strong exercises of the natural affections of fear and grief, when he was sore amazed, and his soul was exceeding sorrowful, even unto death. And he also appeared to be full of affection, in the course of his life. We read of his great *zeal*, fulfilling that in the 69th Psalm, "The zeal of thine house hath eaten me up," John ii. 17. We read of his *grief* for the sins of men, Mark iii. 5. "He looked round about on them with anger, being grieved for the hardness of their hearts;" and his breaking forth in tears and exclamations, from the consideration of the sin and misery of ungodly men, and on the sight of the city of Jerusalem, which was full of such inhabitants, Luke xix. 41, 42. "And when he was come near, he beheld the city, and wept over it, saying, If thou hadst known, even thou, at least in this thy day, the things which belong unto thy peace! but now they are hid from thine eyes." With Chap. xiii. 34. "O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, which killest the prophets, and stonest them that are sent unto thee: how often would I have gathered thy children together, as a hen doth gather her brood under her wings, and ye would not?" We read of Christ's earnest *desire*, Luke xxii. 15. "With desire have I desired to eat this passover with you before I suffer." We often read of the affection of *pity* or *compassion* in Christ, Matth. xv. 32. and xviii. 34. Luke vii. 13. and of his *being moved with compassion*, Matth. ix. 36. and xiv. 14. and Mark vi. 34. And how tender did his heart appear to be, on occasion of Mary's and Martha's mourning for their brother, and coming to him with their complaints and tears? their tears soon drew tears from his eyes; he was affected with their grief, and *wept* with them; though he knew their sorrow should so soon be turned into joy, by their brother's being raised from the dead; see John xi. And how ineffably affectionate was that last and dying discourse, which Jesus had with his eleven disciples the evening before he was crucified; when he told them he was going away, and foretold them the great difficulties and sufferings they should meet with in the world, when he was gone; and comforted and counselled them, as his dear little children; and bequeathed to them his Holy Spirit, and therein his peace, and his comfort and joy, as it were in his last will and testament, in the 13th, 14th, 15th, and 16th chapters of John; and concluded the whole with that affectionate intercessory prayer for them, and his whole church, in chapter xvii. Of all the discourses ever penned, or uttered by the mouth of any man, this seems to be the most affectionate, and affecting.

8. The religion of heaven consists very much in affection.

There is doubtless true religion in heaven, and true religion in its utmost purity and perfection. But according to the scripture representation of the heavenly state, the religion of heaven consists chiefly in holy and mighty *love* and *joy*, and the expression of these in most fervent and exalted praises. So that the religion of the saints in heaven, consists in the same things with that religion of the saints on earth, which is spoken of in our text, viz. *love*, and *joy unspeakable, and full of glory*. Now, it would be very foolish to pretend, that because the saints in heaven be not united to flesh and blood, and have no animal fluids to be moved (through the laws of union of soul and body) with those great emotions of their souls, that therefore their exceeding love and joy are no affections—We are not speaking of the affections of the body, but of the affections of the soul, the chief of which are *love* and *joy*. When these are in the soul, whether that be in the body or out of it, the soul is affected and moved. And when they are in the soul, in that strength in which they are in the saints in heaven, the soul is mightily affected and moved, or, which is the same thing, has great affections. It is true, we do not experimentally know what love and joy are in a soul out of a body, or in a glorified body; *i. e.* we have not had experience of love and joy in a soul in these circumstances; but the saints on earth do know what divine love and joy in the soul are, and they know what love and joy are of the same kind with the love and joy which are in heaven, in separate souls there. The love and joy of the saints on earth, is the beginning and dawning of the light, life, and blessedness of heaven, and is like their love and joy there; or rather, the same in nature, though not the same with it, or like to it, in degree and circumstances. This is evident by many scriptures, as Prov. iv. 18. John iv. 14. and chap. vi. 40, 47, 50, 51, 54, 58. I John iii. 15, I Cor. xiii. 8—12. It is unreasonable therefore to suppose, that the love and joy of the saints in heaven, not only differ in degree and circumstances, from the holy love and joy of the saints on earth, but is so entirely different in nature, that they are no affections; and merely because they have no blood and animal spirits to be set in motion by them, which motion of the blood and animal spirits is not of the essence of these affections, in men on the earth, but the effect of them; although by their reaction they may make some circumstantial difference in the sensation of the mind. There is a sensation of the mind which loves and

rejoices.

rejoices, that is antecedent to any effects on the fluids of the body; and this sensation of the mind, therefore, does not depend on these motions in the body, and so may be in the soul without the body. And where-ever there are the exercises of love and joy, there is that sensation of the mind, whether it be in the body, or out; and that inward sensation, or kind of spiritual sense, or feeling, and motion of the soul, is what is called affection; the soul when it thus feels, (if I may so say) and is thus moved, is said to be affected, and especially when this inward sensation and motion are to a very high degree, as they are in the saints in heaven. If we can learn any thing of the state of heaven from the scripture, the love and joy that the saints have there, is exceeding great and vigorous; impressing the heart with the strongest and most lively sensation of inexpressible sweetness, mightily moving, animating, and engaging them, making them like to a flame of fire. And if such love and joy be not affections, then the word *affection* is of no use in language.—Will any say, that the saints in heaven, in beholding the face of their Father, and the glory of their Redeemer, and contemplating his wonderful works, and particularly his laying down his life for them, have their hearts nothing moved and affected by all which they behold or consider?

Hence, therefore, the *religion of heaven*, consisting chiefly in holy love and joy, consists very much in affection: and therefore, undoubtedly, *true religion* consists very much in affection. The way to learn the true nature of any thing, is to go where that thing is to be found in its purity and perfection. If we would know the nature of true gold, we must view it, not in the oar, but when it is refined. If we would learn what true religion is, we must go where there is true religion, and nothing but true religion, and in its highest perfection, without any defect or mixture. All who are truly religious are not of this world, they are strangers here, and belong to heaven; they are born from above, heaven is their native country, and the nature which they receive by this heavenly birth, is an heavenly nature, they receive *an anointing from above*; that principle of true religion which is in them, is a communication of the religion of heaven; their grace is the dawn of glory; and God fits them for that world by conforming them to it.

9. This appears from the nature and design of the ordinances and duties, which God hath appointed, as means and expressions of true religion,

To

To instance in the duty of prayer: It is manifest, we are not appointed, in this duty, to declare God's perfections, his majesty, holiness, goodness, and allsufficiency, and our own meanness, emptiness, dependence, and unworthiness, and our wants and desires, to inform God of these things, or to incline his heart, and prevail with him to be willing to shew us mercy; but suitably to affect our own hearts with the things we express, and so to prepare us to receive the blessings we ask. And such gestures, and manner of external behaviour in the worship of God, which custom has made to be significations of humility and reverence, can be of no further use, than as they have some tendency to affect our own hearts, or the hearts of others.

And the duty of singing praises to God, seems to be appointed wholly to excite and express religious affections. No other reason can be assigned, why we should express ourselves to God in verse, rather than in prose, and do it with music, but only, that such is our nature and frame, that these things have a tendency to move our affections.

The same thing appears in the nature and design of the sacraments, which God hath appointed. God considering our frame, hath not only appointed that we should be told of the great things of the gospel, and of the redemption of Christ, and instructed in them by his word; but also that they should be, as it were, exhibited to our view, in sensible representations, in the sacraments, the more to affect us with them.

And the impressing divine things on the hearts and affections of men, is evidently one great and main end for which God has ordained, that his word delivered in the holy scriptures, should be opened, applied, and set home upon men, in preaching. And therefore it does not answer the aim which God had in this institution, merely for men to have good commentaries and expositions on the scripture, and other good books of divinity; because, although these may tend, as well as preaching, to give men a good doctrinal or speculative understanding of the things of the word of God, yet they have not an equal tendency to impress them on mens hearts and affections. God hath appointed a particular, and lively application of his word to men, in the preaching of it, as a fit means to affect sinners with the importance of the things of religion, and their own misery, and necessity of a remedy, and the glory and sufficiency of a remedy provided; and to stir up the pure minds

minds of the saints, and quicken their affections, by often bringing the great things of religion to their remembrance, and setting them before them in their proper colours, though they know them, and have been fully instructed in them already, 2 Pet. i. 12, 13. And particularly, to promote those two affections in them, which are spoken of in the text, *love* and *joy*: “Christ gave some, apostles; and some, prophets; and some, evangelists; and some, pastors and teachers; that the body of Christ might be edified in love,” Eph. iv. 11, 12, 16. The apostle, in instructing and counselling Timothy, concerning the work of the ministry, informs him, that the great end of that word which a minister is to preach, is *love* or *charity*, 1 Tim. i. 3, 4, 5. And another affection which God has appointed preaching as a means to promote in the saints, is *joy*; and therefore ministers are called *helpers of their joy*, 2 Cor. i. 24.

10. It is an evidence that true religion, or holiness of heart, lies very much in the affection of the heart, that the scriptures place the sin of the heart very much in *hardness of heart*. Thus the scriptures do every where. It was hardness of heart, which excited grief and displeasure in Christ towards the Jews, Mark iii. 5. “He looked round about on them with anger, being grieved for the hardness of their hearts.” It is from mens having such a heart as this, that they treasure up wrath for themselves; Rom, ii. 5. “After thy hardness and impenitent heart, treasurest up unto thyself wrath against the day of wrath, and revelation of the righteous judgment of God.” The reason given why the house of Israel would not obey God, was, that they were hard-hearted; Ezek. iii. 7. “But the house of Israel will not hearken unto thee; for they will not hearken unto me: for all the house of Israel are impudent and hard-hearted.” The wickedness of that perverse rebellious generation in the wilderness, is ascribed to the hardness of their hearts; Psal. xcv. 7—10. “To-day if ye will hear my voice, harden not your heart, as in the provocation, and as in the day of temptation in the wilderness; when your fathers tempted me, proved me, and saw my work: forty years long was I grieved with this generation, and said, It is a people that do err in their heart, &c.”—This is spoken of as what prevented Zedekiah’s turning to the Lord, 2 Chron. xxxvi. 13. “He stiffened his neck, and hardened his heart from turning to the Lord God of Israel.” This principle is spoken

spoken of, as that from whence men are without the fear of God, and depart from God's ways: If. lxiii. 17. "O Lord, why hast thou made us to err from thy ways? and hardened our heart from thy fear?" And mens rejecting Christ, and opposing Christianity, is laid to this principle; Acts xix. 9. "But when divers were hardened, and believed not, but spake evil of that way before the multitude."—God's leaving men to the power of the sin and corruption of the heart, is often expressed by God's hardening their hearts; Rom. ix. 18. "Therefore hath he mercy on whom he will have mercy, and whom he will, he hardeneth." John xii. 40. "He hath blinded their minds, and hardened their hearts." And the apostle seems to speak of an *evil heart, that departs from the living God, and a hard heart*, as the same thing, Heb. iii. 8. "Harden not your heart, as in the provocation, &c." vers. 12, 13, "Take heed, brethren, lest there be in any of you an evil heart of unbelief, in departing from the living God: but exhort one another daily while it is called, To-day; lest any of you be hardened through the deceitfulness of sin." And that great work of God in conversion, which consists in delivering a person from the power of sin, and mortifying corruption, is expressed, once and again, by God's "taking away the heart of stone, and giving an heart of flesh," Ezek. xi. 19. and chap. xxxvi. 26.

Now, by a hard heart, is plainly meant an unaffected heart, or a heart not easy to be moved with virtuous affections, like a stone, insensible, stupid, unmoved, and hard to be impressed. Hence the hard heart is called a *stony heart*, and is opposed to an *heart of flesh*, that has feeling, and is sensibly touched and moved. We read in scripture of a *hard heart*, and a *tender heart*: and doubtless we are to understand these, as contrary the one to the other. But what is a tender heart, but a heart which is easily impressed with what ought to affect it? God commends Josiah, because his heart was tender: and it is evident by those things which are mentioned as expressions and evidences of this tenderness of heart, that by his heart being tender is meant, his heart being easily moved with religious and pious affection; 2 Kings xxii. 19. "Because thine heart was tender, and thou hast humbled thyself before the Lord, when thou heardst what I spake against this place, and against the inhabitants thereof, that they should become a desolation and a curse, and hast rent thy clothes, and wept before

“ before me, I also have heard thee, saith the Lord.” And this is one thing, wherein it is necessary we should *become as little children, in order to our entering into the kingdom of God*, even that we should have our hearts tender, and easily affected and moved in spiritual and divine things, as little children have in other things.

It is very plain in some places, in the texts themselves, that by hardness of heart is meant a heart void of affection. So, to signify the ostrich's being without natural affection to her young, it is said, Job xxxix. 16. “ She hardeneth her heart against her young ones, as though they were not hers.” So a person having a heart unaffected in time of danger, is expressed by his hardening his heart, Prov. xxviii. 14. “ Happy is the man that feareth alway : but he that hardeneth his heart, shall fall into mischief.”

Now therefore since it is so plain, that by a hard heart, in scripture, is meant a heart destitute of pious affections, and since also the scriptures do so frequently place the sin and corruption of the heart in hardness of heart ; it is evident, that the grace and holiness of the heart, on the contrary, must, in a great measure, consist in its having pious affections, and being easily susceptible of such affection. Divines are generally agreed, that sin radically and fundamentally consists in what is negative, or privative, having its root and foundation in a privation, or want of holiness. And therefore undoubtedly, if it be so that sin does very much consist in hardness of heart, and so in the want of pious affections of heart, holiness does consist very much *in those pious affections*.

I am far from supposing that all affections do shew a tender heart : hatred, anger, vain glory, and other selfish and self-exalting affections, may greatly prevail in the hardest heart. But yet it is evident, that *hardness of heart*, and *tenderness of heart*, are expressions that relate to the affections of the heart, and denote the heart's being susceptible of, or shut up against, *certain affections* ; of which I shall have occasion to speak more afterwards.

Upon the whole, I think it clearly and abundantly evident that true religion lies very much in the affections. Not that I think these arguments prove, that religion in the hearts of the truly godly, is ever in exact proportion to the degree of affection, and present emotion of the mind : for undoubtedly, there is much affection in the true saints which is not spiritual ; their

religious affections are often mixed; all is not from grace, but much from nature. And though the affections have not their seat in the body, yet the constitution of the body may very much contribute to the present emotion of the mind. And the degree of religion is rather to be judged of by the fixedness and strength of the habit that is exercised in affection, whereby holy affection is habitual, than by the degree of the present exercise: and the strength of that habit is not always in proportion to outward effects and manifestations, or inward effects, in the hurry and vehemence; and sudden changes of the course of the thoughts of the mind. But yet it is evident, that religion consists so much in affection, as that without holy affection there is no true religion: and no light in the understanding is good, which does not produce holy affection in the heart; no habit or principle in the heart is good, which has no such exercise; and no external fruit is good, which does not proceed from such exercises.

Having thus considered the evidence of the proposition laid down, I proceed to some inferences.

1. We may hence learn how great their error is, who are for discarding all religious affections, as having nothing solid or substantial in them.

There seems to be too much of a disposition this way, prevailing in this land at this time. Because many who, in the late extraordinary season, appeared to have great religious affections, did not manifest a right temper of mind, and run into many errors, in the time of their affection, and the heat of their zeal; and because the high affections of many seem to be so soon come to nothing, and some who seemed to be mightily raised and swallowed with joy and zeal, for a while, seem to have returned like the dog to his vomit: hence religious affections in general are grown out of credit with great numbers, as though true religion did not at all consist in them. Thus we easily and naturally run from one extreme to another. A little while ago we were in the other extreme; there was a prevalent disposition to look upon all high religious affections as eminent exercises of true grace, without much inquiring into the nature and source of those affections, and the manner in which they arose; if persons did but appear to be indeed very much moved and raised, so as to be full of religious talk, and express themselves with great warmth and earnestness, and to

be filled, or to be *very full*, as the phrases were; it was too much the manner, without further examination, to conclude such persons were full of the Spirit of God, and had eminent experience of his gracious influences. This was the extreme which was prevailing three or four years ago. But of late, instead of *esteeming* and *admiring* all religious *affections*, without *distinction*, it is a thing much more prevalent, to *reject* and *discard* all without *distinction*. Herein appears the subtlety of Satan. While he saw that *affections* were much in vogue, knowing the greater part of the land were not versed in such things, and had not had much experience of great *religious affections*, to enable them to judge well of them, and distinguish between true and false; then he knew he could best play his game, by sowing tares amongst the wheat, and mingling *false affections* with the works of God's Spirit: he knew this to be a likely way to delude and eternally ruin many souls, and greatly to wound religion in the saints, and entangle them in a dreadful wilderness, and by and by, to bring all religion into disrepute. But now, when the ill consequences of these *false affections* appear, and it is become very apparent, that some of those emotions which made a glaring shew, and were by many greatly admired, were in reality nothing; the devil sees it to be for his interest to go another way to work, and to endeavor to his utmost to propagate and establish a persuasion, that all affections and sensible emotions of the mind, in things of religion, are nothing at all to be regarded, but are rather to be avoided, and carefully guarded against, as things of a pernicious tendency. This he knows is the way to bring all religion to a mere lifeless formality, and effectually shut out the power of godliness, and every thing which is spiritual, and to have all true Christianity turned out of doors. For although to true religion, there must indeed be something else besides affection; yet true religion consists so much in the affections, that there can be no true religion without them. He who has no religious affection, is in a state of spiritual death, and is wholly destitute of the powerful, quickening, saving influences of the Spirit of God upon his heart. As there is no true religion where there is nothing else but affection, so there is no true religion where there is no *religious affection*. As on the one hand, there must be light in the understanding, as well as an *affected* fervent heart; where there is heat without light, there can be nothing divine or heavenly in that heart: so on the other hand, where there is a kind

of light without heat, a head stored with notions and speculations, with a cold and unaffected heart, there can be nothing divine in that light, that knowlege is no true spiritual knowlege of divine things. If the great things of religion are rightly understood, they will affect the heart. The reason why men are not affected by such infinitely great, important, glorious, and wonderful things, as they often hear and read of, in the word of God, is undoubtedly because they are blind; if they were not so, it would be impossible, and utterly inconsistent with human nature, that their hearts should be otherwise, than strongly impressed, and greatly moved by such things.

This manner of slighting all religious *affections*, is the way exceedingly to harden the hearts of men, and to encourage them in their stupidity and senselessness, and to keep them in a state of spiritual death as long as they live, and bring them at last to death eternal. The prevailing prejudice against *religious affections* at this day, in the land, is apparently of awful effect, to harden the hearts of sinners, and damp the graces of many of the saints, and stund the life and power of religion, and preclude the effect of ordinances, and hold us down in a state of dulness and apathy, and undoubtedly causes many persons greatly to offend God, in entertaining mean and low thoughts of the extraordinary work he has lately wrought in this land.

And for persons to despise and cry down all religious *affections*, is the way to shut all religion out of their own hearts, and to make thorough work in ruining their souls.

They who condemn high affections in others, are certainly not likely to have high affections themselves. And let it be considered, that they who have but little religious affection, have certainly but little religion. And they who condemn others for their *religious affections*, and have none themselves, have no religion.

There are false *affections*, and there are true. A man's having *much affection*, does not prove that he has any true religion: but if he has *no affection*, it proves that he has no true religion. The right way, is not to reject all affections, nor to approve all; but to distinguish between affections, approving some, and rejecting others; separating between the wheat and the chaff, the gold and the dross, the precious and the vile.

2. If it be so, that true religion lies much in the *affections*, hence we may infer, that such means are to be desired, as have
much

much of a tendency to move the affections. Such books, and such a way of preaching the word, and administration of ordinances, and such a way of worshipping God in prayer, and singing praises, is much to be desired, as has a tendency deeply to affect the hearts of those who attend these means.

Such a kind of means would formerly have been highly approved of, and applauded by the generality of the people of the land, as the most excellent and profitable, and having the greatest tendency to promote the ends of the means of grace. But the prevailing taste seems of late strangely to be altered: that pathetic manner of praying and preaching, which would formerly have been admired and extolled, and that for this reason because it had such a tendency to move the affections, now, in great multitudes, immediately excites disgust, and moves no other affections, than those of displeasure and contempt.

Perhaps, formerly the generality (at least of the common people) were in the extreme, of looking too much to an affectionate address, in public performances: but now, a very great part of the people seem to have gone far into a contrary extreme. Indeed there may be such means, as may have a great tendency to stir up the passions of weak and ignorant persons, and yet have no great tendency to benefit their souls: for though they may have a tendency to excite affections, they may have little or none to excite gracious affections, or any affections tending to grace. But undoubtedly, if the things of religion, in the means used, are treated according to their nature, and exhibited truly, so as tends to convey just apprehensions, and a right judgment of them; the more they have a tendency to move the affections, the better.

3. If true religion lies much in the affections, hence we may learn, what great cause we have to be ashamed and confounded before God, that we are no more affected with the great things of religion. It appears from what has been said, that this arises from our having so little true religion.

God has given to mankind affections, for the same purpose which he has given all the faculties and principles of the human soul for, viz. that they might be subservient to man's chief end, and the great business for which God has created him, that is, the business of religion. And yet how common is it among mankind, that their affections are much more exercised and engaged in other matters, than in religion! In things
which

which concern mens worldly interest, their outward delights, their honour and reputation, and their natural relations, they have their desires eager, their appetites vehement, their love warm and affectionate, their zeal ardent; in these things their hearts are tender and sensible, easily moved, deeply impressed, much concerned, very sensibly affected, and greatly engaged; much depressed with grief at worldly losses, and highly raised with joy at worldly successes and prosperity. But how insensible and unmoved are most men, about the great things of another world! how dull are their affections! how heavy and hard their hearts in these matters! here their love is cold, their desires languid, their zeal low, and their gratitude small. How they can sit and hear of the infinite height, and depth, and length, and breadth of the love of God in Christ Jesus, of his giving his infinitely dear Son, to be offered up a sacrifice for the sins of men, and of the unparallelled love of the innocent, holy and tender Lamb of God, manifested in his dying agonies, his bloody sweat, his loud and bitter cries, and bleeding heart, and all this for enemies, to redeem them from deserved, eternal burnings, and to bring to unspeakable and everlasting joy and glory; and yet be cold, and heavy, insensible, and regardless! Where are the exercises of our affections proper, if not here? what is it that does more require them? and what can be a fit occasion of their lively and vigorous exercise, if not such an one as this? can any thing be set in our view, greater and more important? any thing more wonderful and surprizing? or more nearly concerning our interest? Can we suppose the wise Creator implanted such principles in the human nature as the affections, to be of use to us, and to be exercised on certain proper occasions, but to lie still on such an occasion as this? can any Christian, who believes the truth of these things, entertain such thoughts?

If we ought ever to exercise our affections at all, and if the Creator has not unwisely constituted the human nature, in making these principles a part of it, when they are vain and useless; then they ought to be exercised about those objects which are most worthy of them. But is there any thing, which Christians can find in heaven or earth, so worthy to be the objects of their admiration and love, their earnest and longing desires, their hope, and their rejoicing, and their fervent zeal, as those things that are held forth to us in the gospel of Jesus Christ? in which, not only are things declared most worthy to

affect

affect us, but they are exhibited in the most affecting manner. The glory and beauty of the blessed ЖЕHOVAH, which is most worthy in itself, to be the object of our admiration and love, is there exhibited in the most affecting manner that can be conceived of, as it appears shining in all its lustre, in the face of an incarnate, infinitely loving, meek, compassionate, dying Redeemer. All the virtues of the Lamb of God, his humility, patience, meekness, submission, obedience, love and compassion, are exhibited to our view, in a manner the most tending to move our affections, of any that can be imagined; as they all had their greatest trial, and their highest exercise, and so their brightest manifestation, when he was in the most affecting circumstances; even when he was under his last sufferings, those unutterable and unparallelled sufferings, he endured, from his tender love and pity to us. There also, the hateful nature of our sins is manifested in the most affecting manner possible; as we see the dreadful effects of them, in what our Redeemer, who undertook to answer for us, suffered for them. And there we have the most affecting manifestations of God's hatred of sin, and his wrath and justice in punishing it; as we see his justice in the strictness and inflexibleness of it, and his wrath in its terribleness, in so dreadfully punishing our sins, in one who was infinitely dear to him, and loving to us. So has God disposed things, in the affair of our redemption, and in his glorious dispensations, revealed to us in the gospel, as though every thing were purposely contrived in such a manner, as to have the greatest possible tendency to reach our hearts in the most tender part, and move our affections most sensibly and strongly. How great cause have we therefore to be humbled to the dust, that we are no more affected!

P A R T II.

Shewing what are no certain Signs that religious Affections are truly gracious, or that they are not.

IF any one, on the reading of what has been just now said, is ready to acquit himself, and say, "I am not one of those who have no religious affections; I am often greatly moved with the consideration of the great things of religion;" let him not content himself with this, that he has religious affections: for, as was observed before, as we ought not to reject and condemn all affections, as though true religion did not at all consist in affection; so, on the other hand, we ought not to approve of all, as though every one that was religiously affected had true grace, and was therein the subject of the saving influences of the Spirit of God: and that therefore the right way is to distinguish among religious affections, between one sort and another. Therefore let us now endeavour to do this: and in order to it, I would do two things.

I. I would mention some things, which are no signs one way or the other, either that affections are such as true religion consists in, or that they are otherwise; that we may be guarded against judging of affections by false signs.

II. I would observe some things, wherein those affections which are spiritual and gracious, differ from those which are not so, and may be distinguished and known.

FIRST, I would take notice of some things, which are no signs that affections are gracious, or that they are not.

I. It is no sign one way or the other, that religious affections are very great, or raised very high.

Some are ready to condemn all high affections: if persons appear to have their religious affections raised to an extraordinary

nary pitch, they are prejudiced against them, and determine that they are delusions, without further inquiry. But if it be as has been proved, that true religion lies very much in religious affections, then it follows, that if there be a great deal of true religion, there will be great religious affections; if true religion in the hearts of men be raised to a great height, divine and holy affections will be raised to a great height.

Love is an affection; but will any Christian say, men ought not to love God and Jesus Christ in a high degree? and will any say, we ought not to have a very great hatred of sin, and a very deep sorrow for it? or that we ought not to exercise a high degree of gratitude to God, for the mercies we receive of him, and the great things he has done for the salvation of fallen men? or that we should not have very great and strong desires after God and holiness? Is there any who will profess, that his affections in religion are great enough; and will say, "I have no cause to be humbled, that I am no more affected with the things of religion than I am; I have no reason to be ashamed, that I have no greater exercises of love to God, and sorrow for sin, and gratitude for the mercies which I have received?" Who is there that will go and bless God, that he is affected enough with what he has read and heard of the wonderful love of God to worms and rebels, in giving his only begotten Son to die for them, and of the dying love of Christ; and will pray that he may not be affected with them in any higher degree, because high affections are improper, and very unlovely in Christians, being enthusiastical, and ruinous to true religion?

Our text plainly speaks of great and high affections, when it speaks of *rejoicing with joy unspeakable, and full of glory*: here the most superlative expressions are used, which language will afford. And the scriptures often require us to exercise very high affections: thus in the first and great commandment of the law, there is an accumulation of expressions, as though words were wanting to express the degree in which we ought to love God; *Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, with all thy soul, with all thy mind, and with all thy strength*. So the saints are called upon to exercise high degrees of joy: "Rejoice, (says Christ to his disciples,) and be exceeding glad," Matth. v. 12. So it is said, Psal. lxxviii. 3. "Let the righteous be glad: let them rejoice before God: yea, let them exceedingly rejoice." So in the same book of Psalms, the saints are often called upon to *shout for joy*; and in Luke vi. 23. to "leap

“ for joy.” So they are abundantly called upon to exercise high degrees of gratitude for mercies, to *praise God with all their hearts, with hearts lifted up in the ways of the Lord, and their souls magnifying the Lord, singing his praises, talking of his wonderful works, declaring his doings, &c.*

And we find the most eminent saints in scripture often professing high affections. Thus the psalmist *speaks* of his love, as if it were *unspeakable*; Psal. cxix. 97. “ O how love I thy law !” so he expresses a great degree of hatred of sin; Psal. cxxxix. 21, 22. “ Do not I hate them, O Lord, that hate thee? and am not I grieved with them that rise up against thee? I hate them with perfect hatred.” He also expresses a high degree of sorrow for sin: he speaks of his sins *going over his head, as an heavy burden, that was too heavy for him*; and of his *roaring all the day, and his moisture’s being turned into the drought of summer, and his bones being as it were broken* with sorrow. So he often expresses great degrees of spiritual desires, in a multitude of the strongest expressions which can be conceived of; such as *his longing, his soul’s thirsting as a dry and thirsty land where no water is, his panting, his flesh and heart crying out, his soul’s breaking for the longing it hath, &c.* He expresses the exercises of great and extreme grief for the sins of others, Psal. cxix. 136. “ Rivers of water run down mine eyes, because they keep not thy law.” And vers. 53. “ Horror hath taken hold upon me, because of the wicked that forsake thy law.” He expresses high exercises of joy, Psal. xxi. 1. “ The king shall joy in thy strength, and in thy salvation how greatly shall he rejoice !” Psal. lxxi. 23. “ My lips shall greatly rejoice, when I sing unto thee.” Psal. lxiii. 3, 4, 5, 6, 7. “ Because thy loving kindness is better than life: my lips shall praise thee. Thus will I bless thee, while I live: I will lift up my hands in thy name. My soul shall be satisfied as with marrow and fatness; and my mouth shall praise thee with joyful lips: when I remember thee upon my bed, and meditate on thee in the night-watches. Because thou hast been my help; therefore in the shadow of thy wings will I rejoice.”

The apostle Paul expresses high exercises of affection. Thus he expresses the exercises of pity and concern for others good; even to *anguish of heart*; a *great, fervent and abundant love, and earnest and longing desires, and exceeding joy*; and speaks of the *exultation and triumphs* of his soul, and his *earnest expectation*

expectation and hope, and his abundant tears, and the travails of his soul, in pity, grief, earnest desires, godly jealousy, and fervent zeal, in many places that have been cited already, and which therefore I need not repeat. John the Baptist expressed "great joy," John iii. 39. Those blessed women that anointed the body of Jesus, are represented as in a very high exercise of religious affection, on occasion of Christ's resurrection; Matth. xxviii. 8. "And they departed from the sepulchre, with "fear and great joy."

It is often foretold of the church of God, in her future happy seasons here on earth, that they shall exceedingly rejoice; Psal. lxxxix. 15, 16. "They shall walk, O Lord, in the light of thy countenance. In thy name shall they rejoice all the day; and in thy righteousness shall they be exalted." Zech. ix. 9. "Rejoice greatly, O daughter of Zion; shout, O daughter of Jerusalem: behold, thy King cometh, &c." The same is represented in innumerable other places. And because high degrees of joy are the proper and genuine fruits of the gospel of Christ, therefore the angel calls this gospel, *good tidings of great joy, that should be to all people.*

The saints and angels in heaven, that have religion in its highest perfection, are exceedingly affected with what they behold and contemplate of God's perfections and works. They are all as a pure heavenly flame of fire, in their love, and in the greatness and strength of their joy and gratitude: their praises are represented, *as the voice of many waters, and as the voice of a great thunder.* Now the only reason why their affections are so much higher than the holy affections of saints on earth, is, they see the things they are affected by, more according to their truth, and have their affections more conformed to the nature of things. And therefore, if religious affections in men here below, are but of the same nature and kind with theirs, the higher they are, and the nearer they are to theirs in degree, the better; because therein they will be so much the more conformed to truth, as theirs are.

From these things it certainly appears, that religious affections being in a very high degree, is no evidence that they are not such as have the nature of true religion. Therefore they do greatly err, who condemn persons as enthusiasts, merely because their affections are very high.

And on the other hand, it is no evidence that religious affections are of a spiritual and gracious nature, because they are great.

It is very manifest by the holy scripture, our sure and infallible rule to judge of things of this nature, that there are religious affections which are very high, that are not spiritual and saving. The apostle Paul speaks of affections in the Galatians, which had been exceedingly elevated, and which yet he manifestly speaks of, as fearing that they were vain, and had come to nothing, Gal. iv. 15. "Where is the blessedness you spake of? for I bear you record, that if it had been possible, you would have plucked out your own eyes, and have given them to me." And in the 11th verse he tells them, "he was afraid of them, lest he had bestowed upon them labour in vain," So the children of Israel were greatly affected with God's mercy to them, when they had seen how wonderfully he wrought for them at the Red sea, where they sang *God's praise*; though they soon forgot his works. So they were greatly affected again, at mount Sinai, when they saw the marvellous manifestations God made of himself there; and seemed mightily engaged in their minds, and with great forwardness made answer, when God proposed his holy covenant to them, saying, *All that the Lord hath spoken will we do, and be obedient.* But how soon was there an end to all this mighty forwardness and engagedness of affection? how quickly were they turned aside after other Gods, rejoicing and shouting around their golden calf? So great multitudes who were affected with the miracle of raising Lazarus from the dead, were elevated to a high degree, and made a mighty ado, when Jesus presently after entered into Jerusalem, exceedingly magnifying Christ, as though the ground were not good enough for the ass he rode to tread upon; and therefore cut down branches of palm-trees, and strowed them in the way; yea, pulled off their garments, and spread them in the way; and cried with loud voices, *Hosanna to the son of David, blessed is he that cometh in the name of the Lord, hosannah in the highest*; so as to make the whole city ring again, and put all into an uproar. We learn by the evangelist John, that the reason why the people made this ado, was because they were affected with the miracle of raising Lazarus, John xii. 18. Here was a vast multitude crying *Hosanna* on this occasion, so that it gave occasion to the Pharisees to say, "Behold, the world is gone after him," John xii. 19; but Christ had at that time but few true disciples. And how quickly was this ado at an end? all of this nature is quelled and dead, when this Jesus stands bound, with

a mock robe and a crown of thorns, to be derided, spit upon, scourged, condemned, and executed. Indeed there was a great and loud outcry concerning him, among the multitude then, as well as before; but of a very different kind: it is not then, *Hosanna, hosanna*, but *Crucify, crucify*.

And it is the concurring voice of all orthodox divines, that there may be religious affections, which are raised to a very high degree, and yet there be nothing of true religion.*

II. It is no sign that affections have the nature of true religion, or that they have not, that they have great effects on the body.

All affections whatsoever, have in some respect or degree, an effect on the body. As was observed before, such is our nature, and such are the laws of union of soul and body, that the mind can have no lively or vigorous exercise, without some effect upon the body. So subject is the body to the mind, and so much do its fluids, especially the animal spirits, attend the motions and exercises of the mind, that there cannot be so much as an intense thought, without an effect upon them. Yea it is questionable, whether an imbodyed soul ever so much as thinks one thought, or has any exercise at all, but that there is some corresponding motion or alteration of motion, in some degree, of the fluids, in some part of the body. But universal experience shews, that the exercise of the affections have in a special manner a tendency to some sensible effect upon the body. And if this be so, that all affections have some effect on the body, we may then well suppose, the greater those affections be, and the more vigorous their exercise, (other circumstances being equal) the greater will be the effect on the body. Hence it is not to be wondered at, that very *great* and strong exercises of the affections should have *great* effects on the body. And therefore, seeing there are very great affections, both common and spiritual; hence it is not to be wondered at, that great effects on the body should arise from both these kinds of affections. And consequently these effects are no signs, that the affections they arise from, are of one kind or the other.

Great effects on the body certainly are no sure evidences that affections are spiritual; for we see that such effects oftentimes arise from great affections about temporal things, and when religion is no way concerned in them. And if great affections

about

* Mr. Stoddard observes, "That common affections are sometimes stronger than saving." *Guide to Christ*, P. 21.

about secular things, that are purely natural, may have these effects, I know not by what rule we should determine, that high affections about religious things, which arise in like manner from nature, cannot have the like effect.

Nor on the other hand, do I know of any rule any have to determine, that gracious and holy affections, when raised as high as any natural affections, and have equally strong and vigorous exercises, cannot have a great effect on the body. No such rule can be drawn from reason: I know of no reason, why a being affected with a view of God's glory should not cause the body to faint, as well as being affected with a view of Solomon's glory. And no such rule has as yet been produced from the scripture: none has ever been found in all the late controversies which have been about things of this nature. There is a great power in spiritual affections: we read of the power which worketh in Christians,* and of the Spirit of God being in them, as the Spirit of power,† and of the effectual working of his power in them,‡ yea, of the working of God's mighty power in them.¶ But man's nature is weak: flesh and blood are represented in scripture as exceeding weak; and particularly with respect to its unfitness for great spiritual and heavenly operations and exercises, Matthew xxvi. 41. 1 Cor. xv. 43. and 50. The text we are upon speaks of *joy unspeakable, and full of glory*. And who that considers what man's nature is, and what the nature of the affections are, can reasonably doubt but that such unutterable and glorious joys, may be too great and mighty for weak dust and ashes, so as to be considerably overbearing to it? It is evident by the scripture, that true divine discoveries, or ideas of God's glory, when given in a great degree, have a tendency, by affecting the mind, to overbear the body; because the scripture teaches us often, that if these ideas or views should be given to such a degree, as they are given in heaven, the weak frame of the body could not subsist under it, and that no man can, in that manner, see God and live. The knowledge which the saints have of God's beauty and glory in this world, and those holy affections that arise from it, are of the same nature and kind with what the saints are the subjects of in heaven, differing only in degree and circumstances: what God gives them here, is a foretaste of heavenly happiness, and an earnest of their future inheritance. And who shall limit God in his giving this earnest, or say he shall give so much of the inheritance, such a part of the future reward,

* Eph. iii. 7. † 2 Tim. i. 7. ‡ Eph. iii. 7. 20. ¶ Eph. i. 19.

reward, as an earnest of the whole, and no more? And seeing God has taught us in his word, that the whole reward is such, that it would at once destroy the body, is it not too bold a thing for us, so to set bounds to the sovereign God, as to say, that in giving the earnest of this reward in this world, he shall never give so much of it, as in the least to diminish the strength of the body, when God has no where thus limited himself?

The psalmist speaking of vehement religious affections he had, speaks of an effect in his flesh or body, besides what was in his soul, expressly distinguishing one from the other, once and again, Psal. lxxxiv. 2. "My soul longeth, yea, even fainteth for the courts of the Lord: my *heart* and my *flesh* crieth out for the living God." Here is a plain distinction between the heart and the flesh, as being each affected. So Psal. lxiii. 1. "My *soul* thirsteth for thee, my *flesh* longeth for thee in a dry and thirsty land, where no water is." Here also is an evident designed distinction between the soul and the flesh.

The prophet Habakkuk speaks of his body's being overborn, by a sense of the majesty of God, Hab. iii. 16. "When I heard, my belly trembled: my lips quivered at the voice: rottenness entered into my bones, and I trembled in myself." So the psalmist speaks expressly of his flesh trembling, Psal. cxix. 120. "My flesh trembleth for fear of thee."

That such ideas of God's glory, as are sometimes given in this world, have a tendency to overbear the body, is evident, because the scripture gives us an account, that this has sometimes actually been the effect of those external manifestations God has made of himself, to some of the saints, which were made to that end, *viz.* to give them an idea of God's majesty and glory. Such instances we have in the prophet Daniel, and the apostle John. Daniel giving an account of an external representation of the glory of Christ, says, Dan. x. 8. "And there remained no strength in me; for my comeliness was turned into corruption, and I retained no strength." And the apostle John giving an account of a like manifestation made to him, says, Rev. i. 17. "And when I saw him, I fell at his feet as dead." It is in vain to say here, these were only external manifestations or symbols of the glory of Christ, which these saints beheld: for though it be true, that they were outward representations of Christ's glory, which they beheld with their bodily eyes; yet the end and use of these external symbols or representations, was to give to these prophets an idea of the
thing

thing represented, and that was the true divine glory and majesty of Christ, which is his spiritual glory; they were made use of only as significations of this spiritual glory, and thus undoubtedly they received them, and improved them, and were affected by them. According to the end for which God intended these outward signs, they received by them a great and lively apprehension of the real glory and majesty of God's nature, which they were signs of; and thus were greatly affected, their souls swallowed up, and their bodies overborn. And I think, they are very bold and daring, who will say God cannot, or shall not give the like clear and affecting ideas and apprehensions of the same real glory and majesty of his nature, to none of his saints, without the intervention of any such external shadows of it.

Before I leave this head, I would farther observe, that it is plain the scripture often makes use of bodily effects, to express the strength of holy and spiritual affections; such as *trembling*, * *groaning*, † *being sick*, ‖ *crying out*, ‡ *panting*, § and *fainting*. ** Now if it be supposed, that these are only figurative expressions, to represent the degree of affection; yet I hope all will allow, that they are fit and suitable figures to represent the high degree of those spiritual affections, which the Spirit of God makes use of them to represent: which I do not see how they would be, if those spiritual affections, let them be in never so high a degree, have no tendency to any such things; but that on the contrary, they are the proper effects, and sad tokens of false affections, and the delusion of the devil, I cannot think, God would commonly make use of things which are very alien from spiritual affections, and are shrewd marks of the hand of Satan, and smell strong of the bottomless pit, as beautiful figures, represent the high degree of holy and heavenly affections.

III. It is no sign that affections are truly gracious affections, or that they are not, that they cause those who have them, to be fluent, fervent and abundant, in talking of the things of religion.

There

* Pſal. cxix. 120. Ezra ix. 4. If. lxvi. 2, 5. Hab. iii. 16.
 † Rom. viii. 26. ‖ Cant. ii. 5. and v. 8. ‡ Pſal. lxxxiv. 2. § Pſal. xxxviii. 10. and xlii. 1. and cxix. 131. ** Pſal. lxxxiv. 2. and cxix. 81.

There are many persons, who if they see this in others, are greatly prejudiced against them. Their being so full of talk, is with them, a sufficient ground to condemn them, as Pharisees, and ostentatious hypocrites. On the other hand, there are many, who if they see this effect in any, are very ignorantly and imprudently forward, at once to determine that they are the true children of God, and are under the saving influences of his Spirit, and speak of it as a great evidence of a new creature: they say, *such an one's mouth is now opened: he used to be slow to speak; but now he is full and free: he is free now to open his heart, and tell his experiences, and declare the praises of God; it comes from him, as free as water from a fountain;* and the like. And especially are they captivated into a confident and undoubting persuasion that they are savingly wrought upon, if they are not only free and abundant, but very affectionate and earnest in their talk.

But this is the fruit of but little judgment, a scanty and short experience; as events do abundantly shew: and is a mistake persons often run into, through their trusting to their own wisdom and discerning, and making their own notions their rule, instead of the holy scripture. Though the scripture be full of rules, both how we should judge of our own state, and also how we should be conducted in our opinion of others; yet we have no where any rule, by which to judge ourselves or others to be in a good estate, from any such effect: for this is but the religion of the mouth and of the tongue, and what is in the scripture represented by the leaves of a tree, which though the tree ought not to be without them, yet are no where given as an evidence of the goodness of the tree.

That persons are disposed to be abundant in talking of things of religion, may be from a good cause, and it may be from a bad one. It may be because their hearts are very full of holy affections; for *out of the abundance of the heart, the mouth speaketh*: and it may be because persons hearts are very full of religious affection which is not holy; for still out of the abundance of the heart the mouth speaketh. It is very much the nature of the affections, of whatever kind they be, and whatever objects they are exercised about, if they are strong, to dispose persons to be very much in speaking of that which they are affected with; and not only to speak much, but to speak very earnestly

estly. and fervently. And therefore persons talking abundantly and very fervently about the things of religion, can be an evidence of no more than this, that they are very much affected with the things of religion ; but this may be, (as has been already shown,) and there be no grace. That which men are greatly affected with, while the high affection lasts, they will be earnestly engaged about, and will be likely to shew that earnestness in their talk and behaviour ; as the greater part of the Jews, in all Judah and Galilee, did for a while, about John the Baptist's preaching and baptism, when they were willing for a season to rejoice in his light : a mighty ado was made, all over the land, and among all sorts of persons, about this great prophet and his ministry. And so the multitude in like manner, often manifested a great earnestness, a mighty engagedness of spirit, in every thing that was external, about Christ and his preaching and miracles, *being astonished at his doctrine, anon with joy receiving the word*, following him, sometimes night and day, leaving meat, drink, and sleep to hear him ; once following him into the wilderness, fasting three days going, to hear him ; sometimes crying him up to the clouds, saying, *Never man spake like this man !* being fervent and earnest in what they said. But what did these things come to, in the greater part of them ?

A person may be over-full of talk of his own experiences ; commonly falling upon it, every where, and in all companies ; and when it is so, it is rather a dark sign than a good one. As a tree that is over-full of leaves, seldom bears much fruit : and as a cloud, though to appearance very pregnant and full of water, if it brings with it over-much wind, seldom affords much rain to the dry and thirsty earth : which very thing the Holy Spirit is pleased several times to make use of, to represent a great shew of religion with the mouth, without answerable fruit in the life, Prov. xxv. 14. "Who so boasteth himself of a false gift, is like clouds and wind without rain." And the apostle Jude, speaking of some in the primitive times, that *crept in unawares* among the saints, and having a great shew of religion, were for a while not suspected, *These are clouds* (says he) *without water, carried about of winds*, Jude vers. 4. and 12. And the apostle Peter, speaking of the same, says, 2 Pet. ii. 17. "These are clouds without water, carried with a tempest."

False affections, if they are equally strong, are much more forward to declare themselves, than true: because it is the nature of false religion, to affect shew and observation; as it was with the Pharisees. †

IV. It is no sign that affections are gracious, or that they are otherwise, that persons did not make them themselves, or excite them of their own contrivance, and by their own strength.

There are many in these days, that condemn all affections which are excited in a way that the subjects of them can give no account of, as not seeming to be the fruit of any of their own endeavours, or the natural consequence of the faculties and principles of human nature, in such circumstances, and under such means; but to be from the influence of some extrinsic and supernatural power upon their minds. How greatly has the doctrine of the inward experience or sensible perceiving of the immediate power and operation of the Spirit of God, been reproached and ridiculed by many of late? They say, the manner of the Spirit of God, is to co-operate in a silent, secret and undiscernible way with the use of means, and our own endeavours;

† That famous experimental divine Mr. Shepard, says, “ A Pharisee’s trumpet shall be heard to the town’s end; when simplicity walks through the town unseen. Hence a man will sometimes covertly commend himself, (and *myself* ever comes in,) and tells you a long story of conversion: and an hundred to one if some lie or other slip not out with it. Why, the secret meaning is, *I pray admire me.* Hence complain of wants and weaknesses; *pray think what a broken-hearted Christian I am.*” *Parab. of the ten virgins*, Part I. page 179, 180.

And holy Mr. Flavel says thus, “ O reader, if thy heart were right with God, and thou didst not cheat thyself with a vain profession, thou wouldst have frequent business with God, which thou wouldst be loth thy dearest friend, or the wife of thy bosom should be privy to. *Non est religio, ubi omnia patent.* Religion doth not lie open to all, to the eyes of men. Observed duties maintain our credit; but secret duties maintain our life. It was the saying of an heathen, about his secret correspondency with his friend, *What need the world be acquainted with it? Thou and I are theatre enough to each other.* There are inclosed pleasures in religion, which none but renewed spiritual souls do feelingly understand.” *Flavel’s Touchstone of sincerity*, Chap. II. sect. 2.

yours; so that there is no distinguishing by sense, between the influences of the Spirit of God, and the natural operations of the faculties of our own minds.

And it is true, that for any to expect to receive the saving influences of the Spirit of God, while they neglect a diligent improvement of the appointed means of grace, is unreasonable presumption. And to expect that the Spirit of God will savingly operate upon their minds, without the Spirit's making use of means, as subservient to the effect, is enthusiastical. It is also undoubtedly true, that the spirit of God is very various in the manner and circumstances of his operations, and that sometimes he operates in a way more secret and gradual, and from smaller beginnings, than at others.

But if there be indeed a power, entirely different from and beyond our power, or the power of all means and instruments, and above the power of nature, which is requisite in order to the production of saving grace in the heart, according to the general profession of the country; then certainly, it is in no wise unreasonable to suppose, that this effect should very frequently be produced after such a manner, as to make it very manifest, apparent, and sensible that it is so. If grace be indeed owing to the powerful and efficacious operation of an extrinsic agent, or divine efficient out of ourselves, why is it unreasonable to suppose, it should seem to be so, to them who are the subjects of it? Is it a strange thing that it should seem to be as it is? When grace in the heart indeed is not produced by our strength, nor is the effect of the natural power of our own faculties, or any means or instruments, but is properly the workmanship and production of the Spirit of the Almighty, is it a strange and unaccountable thing, that it should seem to them who are subjects of it, agreeable to truth, and not right contrary to truth; so that if persons tell of effects that they are conscious to in their own minds, that seem to them not to be from the natural power or operation of their minds, but from the supernatural power of some other agent, it should at once be looked upon as a sure evidence of their being under a delusion, because things seem to them to be as they are? For this is the objection which is made: it is looked upon as a clear evidence, that the apprehensions and affections that many persons have, are not really from such a cause, because they seem to them to be from that cause: they declare that what they are conscious of, seems to them evidently not to be from themselves but from the mighty power of the spirit of God: and others from hence condemn

condemn them, and determine what they experience is not from the spirit of God, but from themselves, or from the devil. Thus unreasonably are multitudes treated at this day, by their neighbours.

If it be indeed so, as the scripture abundantly teaches, that grace in the soul, is so the effect of God's power, that it is fitly compared to those effects, which are farthest from being owing to any strength in the subject, such as a *generation*, or a *being begotten*, and *resurrection* or a *being raised from the dead*, and *creation*, or a *being brought out of nothing into being*, and that it is an effect wherein the mighty power of God is greatly glorified, and the exceeding greatness of his power is manifested;* then what account can be given of it, that the Almighty, in so great a work of his power, should so carefully hide his power, that the subjects of it should be able to discern nothing of it? or what reason or revelation have any to determine that he does so? If we may judge by the scripture, this is not agreeable to God's manner, in his operations and dispensations; but on the contrary, it is God's manner, in the great works of his power and mercy which he works for his people, to order things so, as to make his hand visible, and his power conspicuous, and mens dependence on him most evident, that no flesh should glory in his presence,† that God alone might be exalted,‡ and that the excellency of the power might be of God and not of man,|| and that Christ's power might be manifested in our weakness,§ and none might say, mine own hand hath saved me.** So it was in most of those temporal salvations which God wrought for Israel of old, which were types of the salvation of God's people from their spiritual enemies. So it was in the redemption of Israel from their Egyptian bondage; he redeemed them with a strong hand, and an outstretched arm; and that his power might be the more conspicuous, he suffered Israel first to be brought into the most helpless and forlorn circumstances. So it was in the great redemption of Gideon; God would have his army diminished to a handful, and they without any other arms, than trumpets, and lamps, and earthen pitchers. So it was in the deliverance of Israel from Goliath, by a stripling, with a sling and a stone. So it was in that great work of God, his calling the Gentiles, and converting the Heathen world, after Christ's ascension, after that the world by wisdom

* Eph. i. 17--20. † 1 Cor. i. 27. 28. 29. ‡ If. ii. 11.--17.
 § 2 Cor. iv. 7. § 2 Cor. xii. 9. ** Judg. vii. 2.

wisdom knew not God, and all the endeavours of philosophers had proved in vain, for many ages, to reform the world, and it was by every thing become abundantly evident, that the world was utterly helpless, by any thing else but the mighty power of God. And so it was in most of the conversions of particular persons, we have an account of in the history of the New-Testament: they were not wrought on in that silent, secret, gradual, and insensible manner, which is now insisted on; but with those manifest evidences of a supernatural power, wonderfully and suddenly causing a great change, which in these days are looked upon as certain signs of delusion and enthusiasm.

The apostle in Eph. i. 18, 19. speaks of God's enlightening the minds of Christians, and so bringing them to believe in Christ, to the end that they *might know* the exceeding greatness of his power to them who believe. The words are, *The eyes of your understanding being enlightened; that ye may know what is the hope of his calling, and what the riches of the glory of his inheritance in the saints, and what is the exceeding greatness of his power to us-ward who believe, according to the working of his mighty power, &c.* Now when the apostle speaks of their being thus the subjects of his power, in their enlightening and effectual calling, to the end that they might know what his mighty power was to them who believe, he can mean nothing else, than *that they might know by experience*. But if the saints know this power by experience, than they feel it, and discern it, and are conscious of it; as sensibly distinguishable from the natural operations of their own minds, which is not agreeable to a notion of God's operating so secretly, and undiscernibly, that it cannot be known that they are the subjects of the influence of any extrinsic power at all, any otherwise than as they may argue it from scripture assertions; which is a different thing from knowing it by experience.

So that it is very unreasonable and unscriptural, to determine that affections are not from the gracious operations of God's Spirit, because they are sensibly not from the persons themselves, that are the subjects of them.

On the other hand, it is no evidence that affections are gracious, that they are not purposely produced by those who are the subjects of them, or that they arise in their minds in a manner they cannot account for.

There

There are some who make this an argument in their own favour, when speaking of what they have experienced, they say, "I am sure I did not make it myself: it was a fruit of no contrivance or endeavour of mine; it came when I thought nothing of it; if I might have the world for it, I cannot make it again when I please." And hence they determine, that what they have experienced, must be from the mighty influence of the Spirit of God, and is of a saving nature; but very ignorantly, and without grounds. What they have been the subjects of, may indeed not be from themselves directly, but may be from the operation of an invisible agent, some spirit besides their own: but it does not thence follow, that it was from the Spirit of God. There are other spirits who have influence on the minds of men, besides the Holy Ghost. We are directed not to believe every spirit, but to try the spirits whether they be of God. There are many false spirits, exceeding busy with men, who often transform themselves into angels of light, and do in many wonderful ways, with great subtilty and power, mimic the operations of the Spirit of God. And there are many of Satan's operations, which are very distinguishable from the voluntary exercises of mens own minds. They are so, in those dreadful and horrid suggestions, and blasphemous injections with which he follows many persons; and in vain and fruitless frights and terrors, which he is the author of. And the power of Satan may be as immediate, and as evident in false comforts and joys, as in terrors and horrid suggestions; and oftentimes is so in fact. It is not in mens power to put themselves into such raptures, as the Anabaptists in Germany, and many other raving Enthusiasts like them, have been the subjects of.

And besides, it is to be considered, that persons may have those impressions on their minds, which may not be of their own producing, nor from an evil spirit, but from the Spirit of God, and yet not be from any saving, but a common influence of the Spirit of God: and the subjects of such impressions, may be of the number of those we read of, Heb. vi. 4, 5. "that are once enlightened, and taste of the heavenly gift, and are made partakers of the Holy Ghost, and taste the good word of God, and the power of the world to come;" and yet may be wholly unacquainted with those *better things that accompany salvation*, spoken of vers. 9.

And

And where neither a good nor evil spirit have any immediate hand, persons, especially such as are of a weak and vapoury habit of body, and the brain weak, and easily susceptible of impressions, may have strange apprehensions and imaginations, and strong affections attending them, unaccountably arising, which are not voluntarily produced by themselves. We see that such persons are liable to such impressions, about temporal things; and there is equal reason, why they should about spiritual things. As a person who is asleep, has dreams, that he is not the voluntary author of; so may such persons, in like manner, be the subjects of involuntary impressions, when they are awake.

V. It is no sign that religious affections are truly holy and spiritual, or that they are not, that they come with texts of scripture, remarkably brought to the mind.

It is no sign that affections are not gracious, that they are occasioned by scriptures so coming to mind; provided it be the scripture itself, or the truth which the scripture so brought contains and teaches, that is the foundation of the affection, and not merely or mainly, the sudden and unusual manner of its coming to the mind.

But on the other hand, neither is it any sign that affections are gracious, that they arise on occasion of scriptures brought suddenly and wonderfully to the mind; whether those affections be fear or hope, joy or sorrow, or any other. Some seem to look upon this, as a good evidence that their affections are saving, especially if the affections excited are hope or joy, or any other which are pleasing and delightful. They will mention it as an evidence that all is right, that their experience *came with the word*, and will say, "There were such and such sweet promises brought to my mind: they came suddenly, as if they were spoke to me: I had no hand in bringing such a text to my own mind; I was not thinking of any thing leading to it; it came all at once, so that I was surpris'd. I had not thought of it a long time before; I did not know at first that it was scripture; I did not remember that ever I had read it." And it may be, they will, add, "One scripture came flowing in after another, and so texts all over the Bible, the most sweet and pleasant, and the most apt and suitable, which could be devised; and filled me full as I could hold: I could not but stand and admire: the tears flow'd; I was full of joy, and could not doubt any longer." And thus

thus they think they have undoubted evidence, that their affections must be from God, and of the right kind, and their state good : but without any manner of grounds. How come they by any such rule, as that if any affections or experiences arise with promises, and comfortable texts of scripture, unaccountably brought to mind, without their recollection, or if a great number of sweet texts follow one another in a chain, that this is a certain evidence their experiences are saving? where is any such rule to be found in the Bible, the great and only sure directory in things of this nature?

What deceives many of the less understanding and considerate sort of people, in this matter, seems to be this; that the scripture is the word of God, and has nothing in it which is wrong, but is pure and perfect: and therefore, those experiences which come from the scripture must be right. But then it would be considered, affections may arise on *occasion* of the scripture, and not properly come *from* the scripture, as the genuine fruit of the scripture, and by a right use of it; but from an abuse of it. All that can be argued from the purity and perfection of the word of God, with respect to experiences, is this, that those experiences which are *agreeable* to the word of God, are right, and cannot be otherwise; and not that those affections must be right, which arise *on occasion* of the word of God coming to the mind.

What evidence is there that the devil cannot bring texts of scripture to the mind, and misapply them, to deceive persons? There seems to be nothing in this which exceeds the power of Satan. It is no work of such mighty power, to bring sounds or letters to persons minds, that we have any reason to suppose, nothing short of omnipotence can be sufficient for it. If Satan has power to bring any words or sounds at all to persons minds, he may have power to bring words contained in the Bible. There is no higher sort of power required in men, to make the sounds which express the words of a text of scripture, than to make sounds which express the words of an idle story or song. And so the same power in Satan, which is sufficient to renew one of those kinds of sounds in the mind, is sufficient to renew the other: the different signification, which depends wholly on custom, alters not the case, as to ability to make or revive the sounds or letters. Or will any suppose, that texts of scripture are such sacred things, that the devil durst not abuse them, nor touch them? In this also they are

mistaken. He who was bold enough to lay hold on Christ himself, and carry him hither and thither, into the wilderness, and into an high mountain, and to a pinnacle of the temple, is not afraid to touch the scripture, and abuse that for his own purposes : as he shewed at the same time that he was so bold with Christ, he then brought one scripture and another, to deceive and tempt him. And if Satan did presume, and was permitted, to put Christ himself in mind of texts of scripture to tempt *him*, what reason have we to determine, that he dare not, or will not be permitted, to put wicked men in mind of texts of scripture, to tempt and deceive *them* ? And if Satan may thus abuse one text of scripture, so he may another. Its being a very excellent place of scripture, a comfortable and precious promise, alters not the case, as to his courage or ability. And if he can bring one comfortable text to the mind, so he may a thousand ; and may choose out such scriptures as tend most to serve his purpose ; and may heap up scripture-promises, tending, according to the perverse application he makes of them, wonderfully to remove the rising doubts, and to confirm the false joy and confidence of a poor deluded sinner.

We know the devil's instruments, corrupt and heretical teachers, can and do pervert the scripture, to their own and others damnation, 2 Pet. iii. 16. We see they have the free use of scripture, in every part of it ; there is no text so precious and sacred, but they are permitted to abuse it, to the eternal ruin of multitudes of souls ; and there are no weapons they make use of with which they do more execution. And there is no manner of reason to determine, that the devil is not permitted thus to use the scripture, as well as his instruments. For when the latter do it, they do it as his instruments and servants, and through his instigation and influence : and doubtless he does the same he instigates others to do ; the devil's servants do but follow their master, and do the same work that he does himself,

And as the devil can abuse the scripture, to deceive and destroy men, so may mens own folly and corruptions as well. The sin which is in men, acts like its father. Mens own hearts are deceitful like the devil, and use the same means to deceive.

So that it is evident, that persons may have high affections of hope and joy, arising on occasion of texts of scripture, yea precious promises of scripture coming suddenly and remarkably

to their minds, as though they were spoke to them, yea a great multitude of such texts, following one another in a wonderful manner, and yet all this be no argument that these affections are divine, or that they are any other than the effects of Satan's delusions.

And I would further observe, that persons may have raised and joyful affections, which may come with the word of God, and not only so, but from the word, and those affections not be from Satan, nor yet properly from the corruptions of their own hearts, but from some influence of the Spirit of God with the word, and yet have nothing of the nature of true and saving religion in them. Thus the stony-ground hearers had great joy from the word; yea, which is represented as arising from the word, as growth from a seed; and their affections had, in their appearance, a very great and exact resemblance with those represented by the growth on the good ground, the difference not appearing, until it was discovered by the consequences in a time of trial: and yet there was no saving religion in these affections. ||

VI. It is no evidence that religious affections are saving, or that they are otherwise, that there is an appearance of love in them.

There are no professing Christians who pretend, that this is an argument against the truth and saving nature of religious affections. But on the other hand, there are some who suppose, it is a good evidence that affections are from the sanctifying and saving influences of the Holy Ghost. Their argument is, that *Satan cannot love*; this affection being directly contrary to the devil, whose very nature is enmity and malice. And it is true, that nothing is more excellent, heavenly and divine, than a spirit of true Christian love to God and men: it is more excellent than *knowledge*, or *prophecy*, or *miracles*, or *speaking with the tongue of men and angels*. It is the chief of the graces of God's Spirit, and the life, essence and sum of all true religion; and that by which we are most conformed to
heaven

|| Mr. Stoddard, in his *Guide to Christ*, speaks of it as a *common thing*, for persons while in a natural condition, and before they have ever truly *accepted of Christ*, to have scripture-promises come to them, with a *great deal of refreshing*; which they take as tokens of God's love, and hope that God has accepted them; and so are confident of their good estate. Page 8, 9. Impression anno 1735.

heaven, and most contrary to hell and the devil. But yet it is ill arguing from hence, that there are no counterfeits of it. It may be observed, that the more excellent any thing is, the more will be the counterfeits of it. Thus there are many more counterfeits of silver and gold, than of iron and copper: there are many false diamonds and rubies, but who goes about to counterfeit common stones? Though the more excellent things are, the more difficult it is to make any thing that shall be like them, in their essential nature and internal virtue; yet the more manifold will the counterfeits be, and the more will art and subtilty be exercised and displayed, in an exact imitation of the outward appearance. Thus there is the greatest danger of being cheated in buying of medicines that are most excellent and sovereign, though it be most difficult to imitate them, with any thing of the like value and virtue, and their counterfeits are good for nothing when we have them. So it is with Christian virtues and graces; the subtilty of Satan, and mens deceitful hearts, are wont chiefly to be exercised in counterfeiting those that are in highest repute. So there are perhaps no graces that have more counterfeits than love and humility; these being virtues wherein the beauty of a true Christian does especially appear.

But with respect to love; it is plain by the scripture, that persons may have a kind of religious love, and yet have no saving grace. Christ speaks of many professing Christians that have such love, whose love will not continue, and so shall fail of salvation, Matth. xxiv. 12, 13. "And because iniquity shall abound, the love of many shall wax cold. But he that shall endure unto the end, the same shall be saved." Which latter words plainly shew, that those spoken of before, whose love shall not *endure to the end*, but *wax cold*, should not be saved.

Persons may seem to have love to God and Christ, yea to have very strong and violent affections of this nature, and yet have no grace. For this was evidently the case with many graceless Jews, such as cried Jesus up so high, following him day and night, without meat, drink, or sleep; such as said, *Lord, I will follow thee whithersoever thou goest*, and cried, *Hosanna to the son of David*. †

The

† Agreeable to this Mr. Stoddard observes, in his *Guide to Christ*, that some sinners have pangs of affection, and give an account that they find a spirit of love to God, and of their aiming at the glory of

The apostle seems to intimate, that there were many in his days, who had a counterfeit love to Christ, in Eph. vi. 24. *Grace be with all them that love our Lord Jesus Christ in sincerity.* The last word, in the original, signifies *in incorruption*; which shews, that the apostle was sensible that there were many who had a kind of love to Christ, whose love was not pure and spiritual.

So also Christian love to the people of God may be counterfeited. It is evident by the scripture, that there may be strong affections of this kind, without saving grace; as there were in the Galatians towards the apostle Paul, when they were ready to pluck out their eyes and give them to him; although the apostle expresses his fear that their affections were come to nothing, and that he had bestowed upon them labour in vain, Gal. iv. 11, 15.

VII. Persons having religious affections of many kinds, accompanying one another, is not sufficient to determine whether they have any gracious affections or no.

Though false religion is wont to be maimed and monstrous, and not to have that entireness and symmetry of parts, which is to be seen in true religion; yet there may be a great variety of false affections together, that may resemble gracious affections.

It is evident that there are counterfeits of all kinds of gracious affections; as of *love to God*, and *love to the brethren*, as has been just now observed; so of *godly sorrow for sin*, as in Pharaoh, Saul, and Ahab, and the children of Israel in the wilderness, Exod. ix. 27. 1 Sam. xxiv. 16, 17. and xxvi. 21. 1 Kings xxi. 27. Numb. xiv. 39, 40. and of the *fear of God*, as in the Samaritans, *who feared the Lord, and served their own gods* at the same time, 2 Kings xvii. 32, 33. and those enemies of God we read of, Psal. lxvi. 3. *who through the greatness of God's power, submit themselves to him, or, as it is in the Hebrew, lie unto him, i. e. yield a counterfeit reverence* and

of God, having that which has a great resemblance of saving grace; and that sometimes their common affections are stronger than saving. And supposes, that sometimes natural men may have such violent pangs of false affection to God, that they may think themselves willing to be damned. Page 21, and 65.

and submission: so of a *gracious gratitude*, as in the children of Israel, who sang God's praise at the Red sea, Psal. cvi. 12. and Naaman the Syrian, after his miraculous cure of his leprosy, 2 Kings v. 15, &c.

So of *spiritual joy*, as in the stony-ground hearers, Matth. xiii. 20. and particularly many of John the Baptist's hearers, John v. 35. So of *zeal*, as in Jehu, 2 Kings x. 16. and in Paul before his conversion, Gal. i. 14. Phil. iii. 6. and the unbelieving Jews, Acts xxi. 3. Rom. x. 2. So graceless persons may have earnest religious *desires*, which may be like Balaam's desires, which he expresses under an extraordinary view that he had of the happy state of God's people, as distinguished from all the rest of the world, Numb. xxiii. 9, 10. They may also have a strong *hope* of eternal life, as the Pharisees had.

And as men, while in a state of nature, are capable of a resemblance of all kinds of religious affections, so nothing hinders but that they may have many of them together. And what appears in fact, does abundantly evince that it is very often so indeed. It seems commonly to be so, that when false affections are raised high, there are many false affections attend each other. The multitude that attended Christ into Jerusalem, after that great miracle of raising Lazarus, seem to be moved with many religious affections at once, and all in a high degree. They seem to be filled with *admiration*, and there was a shew of an high affection of *love*, and also of a great degree of *reverence*, in their laying their garments on the ground for Christ to tread upon; and also of great *gratitude* to him, for the great and good works he had wrought, praising him with loud voices for his salvation; and earnest *desires* of the coming of God's kingdom, which they supposed Jesus was now about to set up, and shewed great *hopes* and raised expectations of it, *expecting it would immediately appear*; and hence were filled with *joy*, by which they were so animated in their acclamations, as to make the whole city ring with the noise of them; and appeared great in their *zeal* and forwardness to attend Jesus, and assist him without further delay, now in the time of the great feast of the *passover*, to set up his kingdom. And it is easy, from nature, and the nature of the affections, to give an account why, when one affection is raised very high, that it should excite others; especially if the affection which is raised high, be that of counterfeit *love*, as it was in the multitude
who

who cried *Hosanna*. This will naturally draw many other affections after it. For, as was observed before, love is the chief of the affections, and as it were the fountain of them. Let us suppose a person who has been for some time in great exercise and terror through fear of hell, and his heart weakened with distress and dreadful apprehensions, and upon the brink of despair, and is all at once delivered, by being firmly made to believe, through some delusion of Satan, that God has pardoned him, and accepts him as the object of his dear love, and promises him eternal life; as suppose through some vision, or strong idea or imagination, suddenly excited in him, of a person with a beautiful countenance, smiling on him, and with arms open, and with blood dropping down, which the person conceives to be Christ, without any other enlightening of the understanding, to give a view of the spiritual divine excellency of Christ and his fulness, and of the way of salvation revealed in the gospel; or perhaps by some voice or words coming as if they were spoke to him, such as these, *Son, be of good cheer, thy sins be forgiven thee*; or, *Fear not, it is the Father's good pleasure to give you the kingdom*, which he takes to be immediately spoken by God to him, though there was no preceding acceptance of Christ, or closing of the heart with him: I say, if we should suppose such a case, what various passions would naturally crowd at once, or one after another, into such a person's mind? It is easy to be accounted for, from mere principles of nature, that a person's heart, on such an occasion, should be raised up to the skies with transports of joy, and be filled with fervent affection, to that imaginary God or Redeemer, who he supposes has thus rescued him from the jaws of such dreadful destruction, that his soul was so amazed with the fears of, and has received him with such endearment, as a peculiar favourite; and that now he should be filled with admiration and gratitude, and his mouth should be opened, and be full of talk about what he has experienced; and that, for a while, he should think and speak of scarce any thing else, and should seem to magnify that God who has done so much for him, and call upon others to rejoice with him, and appear with a cheerful countenance, and talk with a loud voice: and however, before his deliverance, he was full of quarrellings against the justice of God, that now it should be easy for him to submit to God, and own his unworthiness, and cry out against himself, and appear to be very humble before God, and lie at
his

his feet as tame as a lamb ; and that he should now confess his unworthiness, and cry out, *Why me ? why me ?* (Like Saul, who when Samuel told him that God had appointed him to be king, makes answer, *Am not I a Benjamite, of the smallest of the tribes of Israel, and my family the least of all the families of the tribe of Benjamin ? wherefore then speakest thou so to me ?* Much in the language of David, the true saint, 2 Sam. vii. 18, “ Who am I, and what is my father’s house, that thou hast brought me hitherto ?”) Nor is it to be wondered at, that now he should delight to be with them who acknowledge and applaud his happy circumstances, and should love all such as esteem and admire him and what he has experienced, and have violent zeal against all such as would make nothing of such things, and be disposed openly to separate, and as it were to proclaim war with all who be not of his party, and should now glory in his sufferings, and be very much for condemning and censuring all who seem to doubt, or make any difficulty of these things ; and while the warmth of his affections last, should be mighty forward to take pains, and deny himself, to promote the interest of the party who he imagines favour such things, and seem earnestly desirous to increase the number of them, as the Pharisees compassed sea and land to make one *profelyte*. † And so I might go on, and mention many other things, which will naturally arise in such circumstances. He must have but slightly considered human nature, who thinks such things as these cannot arise in this manner, without any supernatural interposition of divine power.

As from true divine love flow all Christian affections, so from a counterfeit love in like manner naturally flow other false affections. In both cases, love is the fountain, and the other affections are the streams. The various faculties, principles and affections of the human nature, are as it were many channels from one fountain : if there be sweet water in the fountain, sweet water will from thence flow out into those various channels ; but if the water in the fountain be poisonous, then poisonous streams will also flow out into all those channels. So that

† “ Associating with godly men does not prove that a man has grace : Abithophel was David’s companion. Sorrows for the afflictions of the church, and desires for the conversion of souls, do not prove it. These things may be found in carnal men, and so can be no evidences of grace.” Stoddard’s *Nature of saving conversion*, p. 82.

that the channels and streams will be alike, corresponding one with another ; but the great difference will lie in the nature of the water. Or, man's nature may be compared to a tree, with many branches, coming from one root : if the sap in the root be good, there will also be good sap distributed throughout the branches, and the fruit that is brought forth will be good and wholesome ; but if the sap in the root and stock be poisonous, so it will be in many branches, (as in the other case,) and the fruit will be deadly. The tree in both cases may be alike ; there may be an exact resemblance in shape ; but the difference is found only in eating the fruit. It is thus (in some measure at least) oftentimes, between saints and hypocrites. There is sometimes a very great similitude between true and false experiences, in their appearance, and in what is expressed and related by the subjects of them : and the difference between them is much like the difference between the dreams of Pharaoh's chief butler and baker ; they seemed to be much alike, insomuch that when Joseph interpreted the chief butler's dream, that he should be delivered from his imprisonment, and restored to the king's favour, and his honourable office in the palace, the chief baker had raised hopes and expectations, and told his dream also ; but he was woefully disappointed ; and though his dream was so much like the happy and well-boding dream of his companion, yet it was quite contrary in its issue.

VIII. Nothing can certainly be determined concerning the nature of the affections by this, that comforts and joys seem to follow awakenings and convictions of conscience, in a *certain order*.

Many persons seem to be prejudiced against affections and experiences that come in such a method, as has been much insisted on by many divines ; first, such awakenings, fears and awful apprehensions followed with such legal humblings, in a sense of total sinfulness and helplessness, and then, such and such light and comfort : they look upon all such schemes, laying down such methods and steps, to be of mens devising : and particularly if high affections of joy follow great distress and terror, it is made by many an argument against those affections. But such prejudices and objections are without reason or scripture. Surely it cannot be unreasonable to suppose, that before God delivers persons from a state of sin and exposedness to eternal destruction, he should give them some considerable sense of the evil he delivers from : that they may be delivered

sensibly, and understand their own salvation, and know something of what God does for them. As men that are saved are in two exceeding different states, first a state of condemnation, and then in a state of justification and blessedness; and as God in the work of the salvation of mankind, deals with them suitably to their intelligent rational nature: so it seems reasonable, and agreeable to God's wisdom, that men who are saved, should be in these two states sensibly, first, that they should sensibly to themselves, be in a state of condemnation, and so in a state of woful calamity and dreadful misery, and so afterwards sensibly in a state of deliverance and happiness; and that they should be first sensible of their absolute extreme necessity, and afterwards of Christ's sufficiency and God's mercy through him.

And that it is God's manner of dealing with men, to *lead them into a wilderness, before he speaks comfortably to them*, and so to order it, that they shall be brought into distress, and made to see their own helplessness, and absolute dependence on his power and grace, before he appears to work any great deliverance for them, is abundantly manifest by the scripture. Then is God wont to *repent himself for his professing people, when their strength is gone, and there is none shut up or left*, and when they are brought to see that their false gods cannot help them, and that the rock in whom they trusted is vain, Deut. xxxii. 36, 37. Before God delivered the children of Israel out of Egypt, they were prepared for it, by being made to *see that they were in an evil case, and to cry unto God, because of their hard bondage*, Exod. ii. 23. and v. 19. And before God wrought that great deliverance for them at the Red sea, they were brought into great distress, *the wilderness had shut them in*, they could not turn to the right hand nor the left, and the Red sea was before them, and the great Egyptian host behind, and they were brought to see that they could do nothing to help themselves, and that if God did not help them, they should be immediately swallowed up; and then God appeared, and turned their cries into songs. So before they were brought to their rest, and to enjoy the milk and honey of Canaan, *God led them through a great and terrible wilderness, that he might humble them, and teach them what was in their heart, and so do them good in their latter end*, Deut. viii. 2, 16. The woman that had the issue of blood twelve years, was not delivered, until she had first *spent all her living on earthly physicians, and could not be healed of any*, and so was left helpless, having no more money to spend;

pend; and then she came to the great Physician, without any money or price, and was healed by him, Luke viii. 43, 44. Before Christ would answer the request of the woman of Canaan, he first seemed utterly to deny her, and humbled her, and brought her to own herself worthy to be called a dog; and then he shewed her mercy, and received her as a dear child, Matth. xv. 22. &c. The apostle Paul, before a remarkable deliverance, was *pressed out of measure, above strength, insomuch that he despaired even of life; but had the sentence of death in himself, that he might not trust in himself, but in God that raised the dead,* 2 Cor. i. 8, 9, 10. There was first a great tempest, and the ship was covered with the waves, and just ready to sink, and the disciples were brought to cry to Jesus, *Lord, save us, we perish;* and then the winds and seas were rebuked, and there was a great calm, Matth. viii. 24, 25, 26. The leper, before he is cleansed, must have his mouth stopped, by a covering on his upper lip, and was to acknowledge his great misery and utter uncleanness, by rending his cloaths, and crying, "Unclean, unclean," Lev. xiii. 45. And backsliding Israel, before God heals them, are brought to *acknowledge that they have sinned, and have not obeyed the voice of the Lord, and to see that they lie down in their shame, and that confusion covers them, and that in vain is salvation hoped for from the hills, and from the multitude of mountains, and that God only can save them.* Jer. iii. 23, 24, 25. Joseph, who was sold by his brethren, and therein was a type of Christ, brings his brethren into great perplexity and distress, and brings them to reflect on their sin, and to say, we are verily guilty; and at last to resign up themselves entirely into his hands for bondmen; and then reveals himself to them, as their brother and their saviour.

And if we consider those extraordinary manifestations which God made of himself to saints of old, we shall find that he commonly first manifested himself in a way which was terrible, and then by those things that were comfortable. So it was with Abraham; first, a *horror of great darkness fell upon him,* and then God revealed himself to him in sweet promises, Gen. xv. 12, 13. So it was with Moses at mount Sinai; first, God appeared to him in all the terrors of his dreadful majesty, so that Moses said, *I exceedingly fear and quake,* and then he made all his goodness to pass before him, and proclaimed his name; *The Lord God gracious and merciful,* &c. So it was with Elijah; first, there is a stormy wind, and earthquake, and devouring fire, and then a still, small, sweet voice, 1 Kings xix. So it

was with Daniel ; he first saw Christ's countenance as lightning, that terrified him, and caused him to faint away ; and then he is strengthened and refreshed with such comfortable words as these, *O Daniel, a man greatly beloved*, Dan. x. So it was with the apostle John, Rev. i. And there is an analogy observable in God's dispensations and deliverances which he works for his people, and the manifestation which he makes of himself to them, both ordinary and extraordinary.

But there are many things in scripture which do more directly shew, that this is God's ordinary manner in working salvation for the souls of men, and in the manifestations God makes of himself and of his mercy in Christ, in the ordinary works of his grace on the hearts of sinners. The servant that owed his prince ten thousand talents, is first held to his debt, and the king pronounces sentence of condemnation upon him, and commands him to be sold, and his wife and children, and payment to be made ; and thus he humbles him, and brings him to own the whole debt to be just, and then forgives him all. The prodigal son spends all he has, and is brought to see himself in extreme circumstances, and to humble himself, and own his unworthiness, before he is relieved and feasted by his father, Luke xv. Old inveterate wounds must be searched to the bottom, in order to healing : and the scripture compares sin, the wound of the soul, to this, and speaks of healing this wound without thus searching of it, as vain and deceitful, Jer. viii. 11. Christ, in the work of his grace on the hearts of men, is compared to rain on the mown grass, grass that is cut down with a scythe, Psa. lxxii. 6. representing his refreshing, comforting influences on the wounded spirit. Our first parents, after they had sinned, were first terrified with God's majesty and justice, and had their sin, with its aggravations, set before them by their Judge, before they were relieved by the promise of thee seed of the woman. Christians are spoken of as those " that have fled " for refuge, to lay hold on the hope set before them," Heb. vi. 18. which representation implies great fear, and sense of danger preceding. To the like purpose, Christ is called " a hiding-place from the wind, and a covert from the tempest, and " as rivers of water in a dry place, and as the shadow of a " great rock in a weary land," Is. xxxii. at the beginning. And it seems to be the natural import of the word *gospel*, glad tidings, that it is news of deliverance and salvation, after great fear and distress. There is all reason to suppose, that God deals
with

with particular believers, as he dealt with his church, which he first made to hear his voice in the law, with terrible thunders and lightnings, and kept her under that schoolmaster, to prepare her for Christ; and then comforted her with the joyful sound of the gospel from mount Sion. So likewise John the Baptist came to prepare the way for Christ, and prepare mens hearts for his reception, by shewing them their sins, and by bringing the self-righteous Jews off from their own righteousness, telling them that they were a *generation of vipers*, and shewing them their danger of *the wrath to come*, telling them that *the ax was laid at the root of the trees*, &c.

And if it be indeed God's manner, (as I think the foregoing considerations shew that it undoubtedly is,) before he gives men the comfort of a deliverance from their sin and misery, to give them a considerable sense of the greatness and dreadfulfulness of those evils, and their extreme wretchedness by reason of them; surely it is not unreasonable to suppose, that persons, at least oftentimes, while under these views, should have great distresses and terrible apprehensions of mind: especially if it be considered what these evils are, that they have a view of; which are no other than great and manifold sins, against the infinite majesty of the great JEHOVAH, and the suffering of the fierceness of his wrath to all eternity. And the more so still, when we have many plain instances in scripture, of persons that have actually been brought into extreme distress, by such convictions, before they have received saving consolations: as the multitude at Jerusalem, who were *pricked in their heart, and said unto Peter, and the rest of the apostles, Men and brethren, what shall we do?* and the apostle Paul, who *trembled and was astonished*, before he was comforted: and the jailor, when *he called for a light, and sprang in, and came trembling, and fell down before Paul and Silas, and said, Sirs, what must I do to be saved?*

From these things it appears to be very unreasonable in professing Christians, to make this an objection against the truth and spiritual nature of the comfortable and joyful affections which any have, that they follow such awful apprehensions and distresses, as have been mentioned.

And on the other hand, it is no evidence that comforts and joys are right, because they succeed great terrors, and amazing

ing fears of hell.* This seems to be what some persons lay great weight upon; esteeming great terrors an evidence of a great work of the law wrought on the heart, well preparing the way for solid comfort: not considering that terror, and a conviction of conscience, are different things. For though convictions of conscience do often cause terror; yet they do not consist in it; and terrors do often arise from other causes. Convictions of conscience, through the influences of God's Spirit, consist in conviction of sinfulness of heart and practice, and of the dreadfulness of sin, as committed against a God of terrible majesty, infinite holiness and hatred of sin, and strict justice in punishing of it. But there are some persons that have frightful apprehensions of hell, a dreadful pit ready to swallow them up, and flames just ready to lay hold of them, and devils around them, ready to seize them; who at the same time seem to have very little proper enlightenings of conscience, really convincing them of their sinfulness of heart and life. The devil, if permitted, can terrify men as well as the Spirit of God, it is a work natural to him, and he has many ways of doing it, in a manner tending to no good. He may exceedingly affright persons, by impressing on them many external images and ideas, of a countenance frowning, a sword drawn, black clouds of vengeance, words of an awful doom pronounced, † hell gaping, devils coming, and the like, not to convince persons of things that are true, and revealed in the word of God, but to lead them to vain and groundless determination;

* Mr. Shepard speaks of "mens being cast down as low as hell. by sorrow and lying under chains, quaking in apprehension of terror to come, and then raised up to heaven in joy, not able to live; and yet not rent from lust: and such are objects of pity now, and are like to be the objects of terror at the great day." *Parable of the ten Virgins*, P. i. p. 125.

† "The way of the Spirit's working, when it does convince men, is by enlightening natural conscience. The Spirit does not work by giving a testimony, but by assisting natural conscience to do its work. Natural conscience is the instrument in the hand of God, to accuse, condemn, terrify, and to urge to duty. The Spirit of God leads men into the consideration of their danger, and makes them to be affected therewith, Prov. xx. 27. *The spirit of man is the candle of the Lord, searching all the inward parts of the belly.*" Stoddard's *Guide to Christ*, page 44.

inations ; as that their day is past, that they are reprobated, that God is implacable, that he has come to a resolution immediately to cut them off, &c.

And the terrors which some persons have, are very much owing to the particular constitution and temper they are of. Nothing is more manifest, than that some persons are of such a temper and frame, that their imaginations are more strongly impressed with every thing they are affected with, than others ; and the impression on the imagination re-acts on the affection, and raises that still higher ; and so affection and imagination act reciprocally, one on another, till their affection is raised to a vast height, and the person is swallowed up, and loses all possession of himself.*

And some speak of a great sight they have of their wickedness, who really, when the matter comes to be well examined into and thoroughly weighed, are found to have little or no convictions of conscience. They tell of a dreadful hard heart, and how their heart lies like a stone ; when truly they have none of those things in their minds or thoughts, wherein the hardness of mens heart does really consist. They tell of a dreadful load and sink of sin, a heap of black and loathsome filthiness within them ; when, if the matter be carefully inquired into, they have not in view any thing wherein the corruption of nature does truly consist, nor have they any thought of any particular thing wherein their hearts are sinfully defective, or fall short of what ought to be in them, or any exercises at all of corruption in them. And many think also they have great convictions of their actual sins, who truly have none. They tell how their sins are set in order before them, they see them stand encompassing them round in a row, with a dreadful frightful appearance ; when really they have not so much as one of the sins they have been guilty of in the course of their lives, coming into view, that they are affected with the aggravations of.

And if persons have had great terrors which really have been from the awakening and convincing influences of the Spirit of God,

* The famous Mr. Perkins distinguishes between “ those sorrows that come through convictions of conscience, and melancholic passions arising only from mere imaginations, strongly conceived in the brain ; which he says, usually come on a sudden, like lightning into a house.” vol. 1. of his works, page 385.

God, it doth not thence follow that their terrors must needs issue in true comfort. The unmortified corruption of the heart may quench the Spirit of God, (after he has been striving,) by leading men to presumptuous, and self-exalting hopes and joys, as well as otherwise. It is not every woman who is really in travail, that brings forth a real child; but it may be a monstrous production, without any thing of the form or properties of human nature belonging to it. Pharaoh's chief baker, after he had lain in the dungeon with Joseph, had a vision that raised his hopes, and he was lifted up out of the dungeon, as well as the chief butler; but it was to be hanged.

But if comforts and joys do not only come after great terrors and awakenings, but there be an appearance of *such* preparatory convictions and humiliations, and brought about very distinctly, by *such* steps, and in *such* a method, as has frequently been observable in true converts; this is no certain sign that the light and comforts which follow are true and saving. And for these following reasons,

First, As the devil can counterfeit all the saving operations and graces of the Spirit of God, so he can counterfeit those operations that are preparatory to grace. If Satan can counterfeit those effects of God's Spirit which are special, divine and sanctifying; so that there shall be a very great resemblance, in all that can be observed by others; much more easily may he imitate those works of God's Spirit which are common, and which men, while they are yet his own children, are the subjects of. These works are in no wise so much above him as the other. There are no works of God that are so high and divine, and above the powers of nature, and out of the reach of the power of all creatures, as those works of his Spirit, whereby he forms the creature in his own image, and makes it to be a partaker of the divine nature. But if the devil can be the author of such resemblances of these as have been spoken of, without doubt he may of those that are of an infinitely inferior kind. And it is abundantly evident in fact, that there are false humiliations, and false submissions, as well as false comforts.* How far was Saul brought, though a very wicked man, and of a haughty spirit, when he (though a great king) was

* The venerable Stoddard observes, "A man may say, that now he can justify God however he deals with him, and not be brought off from his own righteousness; and that some men do justify God,

was brought, in conviction of his sin, as it were to fall down all in tears, weeping aloud, before David his own subject, (and one that he had for a long time mortally hated, and openly treated as an enemy,) and condemn himself before him, crying out, "Thou art more righteous than I: for thou hast rewarded me good, whereas I have rewarded thee evil?" And at another time, "I have sinned, I have played the fool, I have erred exceedingly," 1 Sam. xxiv. 16, 17. and chap. xxvi. 21. And yet Saul seems then to have had very little of the influences of the Spirit of God, it being after God's Spirit had departed from him, and given him up, and an evil spirit from the Lord troubled him. And if this proud monarch, in a pang of affection, was brought to humble himself so low, before a subject that he hated, and still continued an enemy to; there doubtless may be appearances of great conviction and humiliation in men, before God, while they yet remain enemies to him, and though they finally continue so. There is oftentimes in men, who are terrified through fears of hell, a great appearance of their being brought off from their own righteousness, when they are not brought off from it in all ways, although they are in many ways that are more plain and visible. They have only exchanged some ways of trusting in their own righteousness, for others that are more secret and subtil. Oftentimes a great degree of discouragement, as to many things they used to depend upon, is taken for humiliation: and that is called a submission to God, which is no absolute submission, but has some secret bargain in it, that it is hard to discover.

Secondly, If the operations and effects of the Spirit of God, in the convictions and comforts of true converts, may be sophisticated, then the order of them may be imitated. If Satan can imitate the things themselves, he may easily put them one after another, in such a certain order. If the devil can make A, B, and C, it is as easy for him to put A first, and B next, and C next, as to range them in a contrary order. The nature of

A a divine

"God, from a partial conviction of the righteousness of their condemnation; conscience takes notice of their sinfulness, and tells them that they may be righteously damned; as Pharaoh, who justified God, Exod. ix. 27. And they give some kind of consent to it, but many times it does not continue, they have only a pang upon them, that usually dies away after a little time." *Guide to Christ*, page 71.

divine things is harder for the devil to imitate, than their order. He can *exactly* imitate divine operations in their nature, though his counterfeits many be very much like them in external appearance; but he can *exactly* imitate their order. When counterfeits are made, there is no divine power needful in order to the placing one of them first, and another last. And therefore no order or method of operations and experiences, is any certain sign of their divinity. That only is to be trusted to, as a certain evidence of grace, which Satan cannot do, and which it is impossible should be brought to pass by any power short of divine.

Thirdly, We have no certain rule to determine how far God's own Spirit may go in those operations and convictions which in themselves are not spiritual and saving, and yet the person that is the subject of them, never be converted, but fall short of salvation at last. There is no necessary connection in the nature of things, between any thing that a natural man may experience while in a state of nature, and the saving grace of God's Spirit. And if there be no connection in the nature of things, then there can be no known and certain connection at all, unless it be by divine revelation. But there is no revealed certain connection between a state of salvation, and any thing that a natural man can be the subject of, before he believes in Christ. God has revealed no certain connection between salvation, and any qualifications in men, but only grace and its fruits. And therefore we do not find any legal convictions, or comforts following these legal convictions, in any certain method or order, ever once mentioned in the scripture, as certain signs of grace, or things peculiar to the saints; although we do find gracious operations and effects themselves, so mentioned, thousands of times. Which should be enough with Christians, who are willing to have the word of God, rather than their own philosophy and experiences, and conjectures, as their sufficient and sure guide in things of this nature.

Fourthly, Experience does greatly confirm, that persons seeming to have convictions and comforts following one another in such a method and order, as is frequently observable in true converts, is no certain sign of grace. * I appeal to all those
ministers

* Mr. Stoddard, who had much experience of things of this nature, long ago observed, that converted and unconverted men cannot be certainly distinguished by the account they give of their experience:
the

ministers in this land, who have had much occasion of dealing with souls, in the late extraordinary season, whether there has not been many who do not prove well, that have given a fair account of their experiences, and have seemed to be converted according to rule, *i. e.* with convictions and affections, succeeding distinctly and exactly, in that order and method, which has been ordinarily insisted on; as the order of the operations of the Spirit of God in conversion.

And as a seeming to have this distinctness as to steps and method, is no certain sign that a person is converted; so a being without it, is no evidence that a person is not converted. For though it might be made evident to a demonstration, on scripture-principles, that a sinner cannot be brought heartily to receive Christ as his Saviour, who is not convinced of his sin and misery, and of his own emptiness and helplessness, and his just desert of eternal condemnation; and that therefore such convictions must be some way *implied* in what is wrought in his soul; yet nothing proves it to be necessary, that all those things which are implied or presupposed in an act of faith in Christ, must be plainly and distinctly wrought in the soul, in so many successive and separate works of the Spirit, that shall be each one plain and manifest, in all who are truly converted. On the contrary, (as Mr. Shepard observes) sometimes the change made in a sinner, at first work, is like a confused chaos; so that the saints know not what to make of it. The manner of the Spirit's proceeding in them that are born of the Spirit, is very often exceeding mysterious and unsearchable: we, as it were, hear the sound of it, the effect of it is discernible; but no man can tell whence it came, or whither it went. And it is oftentimes as difficult to know the way of the Spirit in the new birth, as in the first birth: Eccl. xi. 5. "Thou knowest not what is the way of the Spirit, or how the bones do grow in the womb of her that is with child: even so thou knowest not the works of God, that worketh all." The ingenerating of a principle of grace in the soul, seems in scripture to be compared to the conceiving of Christ in the womb, Gal. iv. 19. And therefore the church is called Christ's mother, Cant. iii. 11. And so is every particular believer, Matth. xii. 49, 50. And the conception of Christ in the womb of the blessed virgin, by the same relation of experiences being common to both. And that many persons have given a fair account of a work of conversion, that have carried well in the eye of the world for several years, but have not proved well at last. *Appeal to the learned*, p. 75, 76.

by the power of the Holy Ghost, seems to be a designed resemblance of the conception of Christ in the soul of a believer, by the power of the same Holy Ghost. And we know not what is the way of the Spirit, nor how the bones do grow, either in the womb, or heart that conceives this holy Child. The new creature may use that language in Psal. cxxxix. 14, 15. "I am fearfully and wonderfully made; marvellous are thy works, and that my soul knoweth right well. My substance was not hid from thee, when I was made in secret." Concerning the generation of Christ, both in his person, and also in the hearts of his people, it may be said, as in Is. liii. 8. "Who can declare his generation?" We know not the works of God, that worketh all. *It is the glory of God to conceal a thing,* (Prov. xxv. 2.) and to have *his path as it were in the mighty waters, that his footsteps may not be known*; and especially in the works of his Spirit on the hearts of men, which are the highest and chief of his works. And therefore it is said, Is. xl. 13. "Who hath directed the Spirit of the Lord, or being his counsellor hath taught him?" It is to be feared that some have gone too far towards directing the Spirit of the Lord, and marking out his footsteps for him, and limiting him to certain steps and methods. Experience plainly shews, that God's Spirit is unsearchable and untraceable, in some of the best of Christians, in the method of his operations, in their conversion. Nor does the Spirit of God proceed discernibly in the steps of a particular established scheme, one half so often as is imagined. A scheme of what is necessary, and according to a rule already received and established by common opinion, has a vast (though to many a very insensible) influence in forming persons notions of the steps and method of their own experiences. I know very well what their way is; for I have had much opportunity to observe it. Very often, at first, their experiences appear like a confused chaos, as Mr. Shepard expresses it: but then those passages of their experience are picked out, that have most of the appearance of such particular steps that are insisted on; and these are dwelt upon in the thoughts, and these are told of from time to time, in the relation they give: these parts grow brighter and brighter in their view; and others, being neglected, grow more and more obscure: and what they have experienced is insensibly strained to bring all to an exact conformity to the scheme that is established. And it becomes natural for ministers, who have to deal with them, and direct

them

them that insist upon distinctness and clearness of method, to do so too. But yet there has been so much to be seen of the operations of the Spirit of God, of late, that they who have had much to do with souls, and are not blinded with a seven-fold veil of prejudice, must know that the Spirit is so exceeding various in the manner of his operating, that in many cases it is impossible to trace him, or find out his way.

What we have principally to do with, in our inquiries into our own state, or directions we give to others, is the *nature* of the effect that God has brought to pass in the soul. As to the steps which the Spirit of God took to bring that effect to pass, we may leave them to him. We are often in scripture expressly directed to try ourselves by the *nature* of the fruits of the Spirit; but no where by the Spirit's *method* of producing them.* Many do greatly err in their notions of a clear work of conversion; calling that a clear work, where the successive steps of influence, and method of experience is clear: whereas that indeed is the clearest work, (not where the order of *doing* is clearest, but) where the spiritual and divine nature of the work *done*, and effect *wrought*, is most clear.

IX. It is no certain sign that the religious affections which persons have are such as have in them the nature of true religion, or that they have not, that they dispose persons to spend much time in religion, and to be zealously engaged in the external duties of worship.

This

* Mr. Shepard, speaking of the soul's closing with Christ, says. "As a child cannot tell how his soul comes into it, nor it may be when; but afterwards it sees and feels that life; so that he were as bad as a beast, that should deny an immortal soul; so here." *Parable of the ten Virgins*, Part II. p. 171.

"If the man do not know the time of his conversion, or first closing with Christ; the minister may not draw any peremptory conclusion from thence, that he is not godly." *Stoddard's Guide to Christ*, p. 83.

"Do not think there is no compunction, or sense of sin, wrought in the soul, because you cannot so clearly discern and feel it; nor the time of the working, and first beginning of it. I have known many that have come with their complaints, that they *were never humbled, they never felt it so*; yet there it hath been, and many times they have seen it, by the other spectacles, and blessed God for it." *Shepard's Sound Believer*, page 38. The late impression in Boston.

This has, very unreasonably, of late been looked upon as an argument against the religious affections which some have had, that they spend so much time in reading, praying, singing, hearing sermons, and the like. It is plain from the scripture, that it is the tendency of true grace to cause persons very much to delight in such religious exercises. True grace had this effect on Anna the prophetess; Luke ii. 37. "She departed not from the temple, but served God with fastings and prayers night and day." And grace had this effect upon the primitive Christians in Jerusalem; Acts ii. 46, 47. "And they continuing daily with one accord in the temple, and breaking bread from house to house, did eat their meat with gladness and singleness of heart, praising God." Grace made Daniel delight in the duty of prayer, and solemnly to attend it three times a day: as it also did David, Psal. lv. 17. "Evening, morning, and at noon will I pray." Grace makes the saints delight in singing praises to God: Psal. cxxxv. 3. "Sing praises unto his name, for it is pleasant." And cxlvii. 1. "Praise ye the Lord: for it is good to sing praises unto our God; for it is pleasant, and praise is comely." It also causes them to delight to hear the word of God preached: it makes the gospel a joyful sound to them, Psal. lxxxix. 15. and makes the feet of those who publish these good tidings, to be beautiful; Is. liii. 7. "How beautiful upon the mountains are the feet of him that bringeth good tidings!" &c. It makes them love God's public worship; Psal. xxvi. 8. "Lord I have loved the habitation of thy house, and the place where thine honor dwelleth." And xxvii. 4. "One thing have I desired of the Lord, that will I seek after, that I may dwell in the house of the Lord all the days of my life, to behold the beauty of the Lord, and to inquire in his temple." Psal. lxxxiv. 1, 2, &c. "How amiable are thy tabernacles, O Lord of hosts! my soul longeth, yea, even fainteth for the courts of the Lord.—Yea, the sparrow hath found an house, and the swallow a nest for herself, where she may lay her young, even thine altars, O Lord of hosts, my King, and my God. Blessed are they that dwell in thy house: they will be still praising thee.—Blessed is the man in whose heart are the ways of them, who passing through the valley of Baca,—go from strength to strength, every one of them in Zion appeareth before God."—vers. 10. "A day in thy courts is better than a thousand."

This is the nature of true grace. But yet, on the other hand, persons being disposed to abound and to be zealously engaged in the external exercises of religion, and to spend much time in them, is no sure evidence of grace; because such a disposition is found in many that have no grace. So it was with the Israelites of old, whose services were abominable to God; they attended the "new moons, and sabbaths, and calling of assemblies, and spread forth their hands, and made many prayers," *Is. i. 12—15.* So it was with the Pharisees; they *made long prayers and fasted twice a week.* False religion may cause persons to be loud and earnest in prayer: *Is. lviii. 4.* "Ye shall not fast as ye do this day, to cause your voice to be heard on high." That religion which is not spiritual and saving, may cause men to delight in religious duties and ordinances: *Is. lviii. 2.* "Yet they seek me daily, and delight to know my ways, as a nation that did righteousness, and forsook not the ordinance of their God: they ask of me the ordinances of justice: they take delight in approaching to God." It may cause them to take delight in hearing the word of God preached; as it was with Ezekiel's hearers, *Ezek. xxxiii. 31, 32.* "And they come unto thee as the people cometh, and they sit before thee as my people, and they hear thy words, but they will not do them: for with their mouth they shew much love, but their heart goeth after their covetousness. And lo, thou art unto them as a very lovely song of one that hath a pleasant voice, and can play well on an instrument: for they hear thy words, but they do them not." So it was with Herod; he *heard* John the Baptist *gladly,* *Mark vi. 20.* So it was with others of his hearers, "for a season they rejoiced in his light," *John v. 35.* So the stony-ground hearers *heard the word with joy.*

Experience shews, that persons, from false religion, may be inclined to be exceeding abundant in the external exercises of religion; yea, to give themselves up to them, and devote almost their whole time to them. Formerly a sort of people were very numerous in the Romish church, called *recluses*, who forsook the world, and utterly abandoned the society of mankind, and shut themselves up close, in a narrow cell, with a vow never to stir out of it, nor to see the face of any of mankind any more; (unless that they might be visited in case of sickness;) to spend all their days in the exercises of devotion and converse with God. There were also in old time, great multitudes call-

ed Hermites and Anchorites, that left the world to spend all their days in lonesome deserts, to give themselves up to religious contemplations and exercises of devotion ; some sorts of them having no dwellings, but the caves and vaults of the mountains, and no food, but the spontaneous productions of the earth.—I once lived, for many months, next door to a Jew, (the houses adjoining one to another,) and had much opportunity daily to observe him ; who appeared to me the devoutest person that ever I saw in my life ; great part of his time being spent in acts of devotion, at his eastern window, which opened next to mine, seeming to be most earnestly engaged, not only in the day-time, but sometimes whole nights.

X. Nothing can be certainly known of the nature of religious affections by this, that they much dispose persons with their mouths to praise and glorify God. This indeed is implied in what has been just now observed, of abounding and spending much time in the external exercises of religion, and was also hinted before : but because many seem to look upon it as a bright evidence of gracious affection, when persons appear greatly disposed to praise and magnify God, to have their mouths full of his praises, and affectionately to be calling on others to praise and extol him, I thought it deserved a more particular consideration.

No Christian will make it an argument against a person, that he seems to have such a disposition. Nor can it reasonably be looked upon as an evidence for a person, if those things that have been already observed and proved, be duly considered, *viz.* that persons, without grace, may have high affections towards God and Christ, and that their affections being strong, may fill their mouths, and incline them to speak much, and very earnestly, about the things they are affected with, and that there may be counterfeits of all kinds of gracious affection. But it will appear more evidently and directly, that this is no certain sign of grace, if we consider what instances the scripture gives us of it in those that were graceless. We often have an account of this, in the multitude that were present when Christ preached and wrought miracles ; Mark ii. 12. “ And immediately he arose, “ took up his bed, and went forth before them all, insomuch “ that they were all amazed, and glorified God, saying, We “ never saw it on this fashion.” So Matth. ix. 8. and Luke v. 26. Also Matth. xv. 31. “ Insomuch that the multitude “ wondered when they saw the dumb to speak, the maimed to “ be whole, the lame to walk, and the blind to see : and they “ glorified

“ glorified the God of Israel.” So we are told, that on occasion of Christ’s raising the son of the widow of Nain, Luke vii. 16. “ There came a fear on all: and they glorified God, saying, That a great prophet is risen up among us; and, That God hath visited his people.” So we read of their glorifying Christ, or speaking exceeding highly of him, Luke iv. 15. “ And he taught in their synagogues, being glorified of all.” And how did they praise him with loud voices, crying, *Hosanna to the son of David, hosanna in the highest; blessed is he that cometh in the name of the Lord*, a little before he was crucified! And after Christ’s ascension, when the apostles had healed the impotent man, we are told, that “ all men glorified God for that which was done,” Acts iv. 21. When the Gentiles in Antioch of Pisidia, heard from Paul and Barnabas, that God would reject the Jews, and take the Gentiles to be his people in their room, they were affected with this goodness of God to the Gentiles, *and glorified the word of the Lord*: but all that did so were not true believers; but only a certain elect number of them; as is intimated in the account we have of it, Acts xiii. 48. “ And when the Gentiles heard this, they were glad, and glorified the word of the Lord: and as many as were ordained to eternal life, believed.” So of old the children of Israel at the Red sea, *sang God’s praise; but soon forgot his works*. And the Jews in Ezekiel’s time, *with their mouths shewed much love, while their hearts went after their covetousness*. And it is foretold of false professors, and real enemies of religion, that they should shew a forwardness to glorify God; Is. lxvi. 5. “ Hear the word of the Lord, ye that tremble at his word, Your brethren that hated you, that cast you out for my name’s sake, said Let the Lord be glorified.”

It is no certain sign that a person is graciously affected, if in the midst of his hopes and comforts, he is greatly affected with God’s unmerited mercy to him that is so unworthy, and seems greatly to extol and magnify free grace. Those that yet remain with unmortified pride and enmity against God, may, when they imagine that they have received extraordinary kindness from God, cry out of their unworthiness, and magnify God’s undeserved goodness to them, from no other conviction of their ill-deservings, and from no higher principle, than Saul had, who while he yet remained with unsubdued pride and enmity against David, was brought, though a king, to acknowledge his unworthiness, and cry out, *I have played the fool*,

I have erred exceedingly, and with great affection and admiration, to magnify and extol David's unmerited and unexampled kindness to him, 1 Sam. xxv. 16—19. and xxvi. 21. and from no higher principle, than that from whence Nebuchadnezzar was affected with God's dispensations, that he saw and was the subject of, and praises, extols and honours the King of heaven; and both he, and Darius, in their high affections, call upon all nations to praise God, Dan. iii. 28, 29, 30. and iv. 1, 2, 3, 34, 35, 37. and vi. 25, 26, 27.

XI. It is no sign that affections are right, or that they are wrong, that they make persons that have them, exceeding confident that what they experience is divine, and that they are in a good estate.

It is an argument with some, against persons, that they are deluded if they pretend to be assured of their good estate, and to be carried beyond all doubting of the favor of God; supposing that there is no such thing to be expected in the church of God, as a full and absolute assurance of hope; unless it be in some very extraordinary circumstances; as in the case of martyrdom: contrary to the doctrine of Protestants, which has been maintained by their most celebrated writers against the Papists; and contrary to the plainest scripture-evidence. It is manifest, that it was a common thing for the saints that we have a history or particular account of in scripture, to be assured. God in the plainest and most positive manner, revealed and testified his special favor to Noah, Abraham, Isaac, Jacob, Moses, Daniel, and others. Job often speaks of his sincerity and uprightness with the greatest imaginable confidence and assurance, often calling God to witness to it; and says plainly, "I know that my Redeemer liveth, and that I shall see him for myself, and not another," Job xix. 25, &c. David, throughout the book of Psalms, almost every where speaks without any hesitancy, and in the most positive manner, of God as his God; glorying in him as his portion and heritage, his rock and confidence, his shield, salvation, and high tower, and the like. Hezekiah appeals to God, as one that knew that he had walked before him in truth, and with a perfect heart, 2 Kings xx. 3. Jesus Christ, in his dying discourse with his eleven disciples, in the 14th, 15th, and 16th chapters of John, (which was as it were Christ's last will and testament to his disciples, and to his whole church) often declares his
 special

special and everlasting love to them, in the plainest and most positive terms; and promises them a future participation with him in his glory, in the most absolute manner; and tells them at the same time, that he does so, to the end, that their joy might be *full*; John xv. 11. "These things have I spoken unto you, that my joy might remain in you, and that your joy might be full." See also at the conclusion of his whole discourse, Chap. xvi. 33. "These things have I spoken unto you, that in me ye might have peace. In the world ye shall have tribulation: but be of good cheer, I have overcome the world." Christ was not afraid of speaking too plainly and positively to them; he did not desire to hold them in the least suspense. And he concluded that last discourse of his, with a prayer in their presence, wherein he speaks positively to his Father of those eleven disciples, as having all of them savingly known him, and believed in him, and received and kept his word; and that they were not of the world; and that for their sakes he sanctified himself; and that his will was, that they should be with him in his glory: and tells his Father, that he spake these things in his prayer, to the end, that his joy might be fulfilled in them, vers. 13. By these things it is evident, that it is agreeable to Christ's designs, and the contrived ordering and disposition Christ makes of things in his church, that there should be sufficient and abundant provision made, that his saints might have full assurance of their future glory.

The apostle Paul, through all his epistles, speaks in an assured strain; ever speaking positively of his special relation to Christ, his Lord and Master and Redeemer, and his interest in, and expectation of the future reward. It would be endless to take notice of all places that might be enumerated; I shall mention but three or four: Gal. ii. 20. "Christ liveth in me: and the life which I now live in the flesh, I live by the faith of the Son of God, who loved me, and gave himself for me." Phil. i. 21. "For me to live is Christ, and to die is gain." 2 Tim. i. 12. "I know whom I have believed, and I am persuaded that he is able to keep that which I have committed unto him against that day." 2 Tim. iv. 7, 8. "I have fought a good fight, I have finished my course, I have kept the faith. Henceforth there is laid up for me a crown of righteousness, which the Lord the righteous judge will give me at that day."

And the nature of the covenant of grace, and God's declared ends in the appointment and constitution of things in that covenant, do plainly shew it to be God's design to make ample provision for the saints, having an assured hope of eternal life, while living here upon earth. For so are all things ordered and contrived in that covenant, that every thing might be made sure on God's part. *The covenant is ordered in all things and sure*: the promises are most full, and very often repeated, and various ways exhibited; and there are many witnesses, and many seals; and God has confirmed his promises with an oath. And God's declared design in all this is, that the heirs of the promises might have an undoubting hope, and full joy, in an assurance of their future glory, Heb. vi. 17, 18, "Wherein
 " God willing more abundantly to shew unto the heirs of pro-
 " mise the immutability of his counsel, confirmed it by an oath:
 " that by two immutable things, in which it was impossible for
 " God to lie, we might have a strong consolation, who have
 " fled for refuge to lay hold upon the hope set before us." But all this would be in vain, to any such purpose, as the saints strong consolation, and hope of their obtaining future glory, if their interest in those sure promises in ordinary cases, was not attainable. For God's promises and oaths, let them be as sure as they will, cannot give strong hope and comfort to any particular person, any further than he can know that those promises are made to him. And in vain is provision made in Jesus Christ, that believers might be perfect as pertaining to the conscience, as is signified Heb. ix. 9. if assurance of freedom from the guilt of sin is not attainable.

It further appears that assurance is not only attainable in some very extraordinary cases, that *all* Christians are directed to give all diligence to make their calling and election sure, and are told how they may do it, 2 Pet. i. 5—8. And it is spoken of as a thing very unbecoming of Christians, and an argument of something very blamable in them, not to know whether Christ be in them or no, 2 Cor. xiii. 5, "Know ye not your own selves, how that Jesus Christ is in you, except ye be reprobates?" And it is implied that it is an argument of a very blameable negligence in Christians, if they practice Christianity after such a manner as to remain uncertain of the reward, in that 1 Cor. ix. 26. "I therefore so run, as not uncertainly." And to add no more, it is manifest, that Christians knowing their interests in the saving benefits of Christianity is a thing ordinarily attainable, because the apostles tell us by what means *Christians* (and
 not

not only *apostles* and *martyrs*) were wont to know this; 1 Cor. ii. 12. "Now we have received, not the spirit of the world, but the Spirit which is of God; that we might know the things that are freely given to us of God. And 1 John ii. 3. "And hereby we do know that we know him, if we keep his commandments. And vers. 5. "Hereby know we that we are in him." Chap. iii. 14. "We know that we have passed from death unto life, because we love the brethren." vers. 19. "Hereby we know that we are of the truth, and shall assure our hearts before him." vers. 24. "Hereby we know that he abideth in us, by the Spirit which he hath given us." So Chap. iv. 13. and Chap. v. 2. and vers. 19.

Therefore it must needs be very unreasonable to determine, that persons are hypocrites, and their affections wrong, because they seem to be out of doubt of their own salvation, and the affections they are the subjects of seem to banish all fears of hell.

On the other hand, it is no sufficient reason to determine that men are saints, and their affections gracious, because the affections they have are attended with an exceeding confidence that their state is good, and their affections divine.† Nothing can be certainly argued from their confidence, how great and strong soever it seems to be. If we see a man that boldly calls God his Father, and commonly speaks in the most bold, familiar,

† "O professor, look carefully to your foundation: *Be not high minded, but fear.* You have, it may be, done and suffered many things in and for religion; you have excellent gifts and sweet comforts; a warm zeal for God, and high confidence of your integrity: all this may be right, for ought that I, or (it may be) you know: but yet it is possible it may be false also. You have sometimes judged yourselves, and pronounced yourselves upright; but remember your final sentence is not yet pronounced by your Judge. And what if God weigh you over again, in his more equal balance, and should say, *Mene, Tekel, Thou art weighed in the balance, and art found wanting?* What a confounded man wilt thou be, under such a sentence! *Quæ splendent in conspectu hominis, sordent in conspectu Judicis;* Things that are highly esteemed of men, are an abomination in the sight of God: he seeth not as men seeth. Thy heart may be false, and thou not know it: yea, it may be false, and thou strongly confident of its integrity." *Flavel's Touchstone of Sincerity*, Chap. ii. sect. 5.

"Some hypocrites are a great deal more confident than many saints." *Stoddard's discourse on the way to know sincerity and hypocrisy*, p. 128,

liar, and appropriating language in prayer, *My Father, my dear Redeemer, my sweet Saviour, my beloved*, and the like;—and it is a common thing for him to use the most confident expressions before men, about the goodness of his state; such as, *I know certainly that God is my Father; I know so surely as there is a God in heaven, that he is my God; I know I shall go to heaven, as well as if I were there; I know that God is now manifesting himself to my soul, and is now smiling upon me*; and seems to have done for ever with any inquiry or examination into his state, as a thing sufficiently known, and out of doubt, and to condemn all that so much as intimate or suggest that there is some reason to doubt or fear whether all is right; such things are no signs at all that it is indeed so as he is confident it is.* Such an over-bearing, high-handed and violent sort of confidence as this, so affecting to declare itself with a most glaring show in the sight of men, which is to be seen in many, has not the countenance of a true Christian assurance: it favours more of the spirit of the Pharisees, who never doubted but that they were saints, and the most eminent of saints, and were bold to go to God, and come up near to him, and lift up their eyes, and thank him for the great distinction he had made between them and other men: and when Christ intimated that they were blind and graceless, despised the suggestion, John ix. 40. “And some of the Pharisees which were with him, heard these words, and said unto him, Are we blind also?” If they had more of the spirit of the Publican, with their confidence, who in a sense of his exceeding unworthiness, stood afar off, and durst not so much as lift up his eyes to heaven, but smote on his breast, and cried out of himself as a sinner, their confidence would have more of the aspect of the confidence of one that humbly trusts and hopes in Christ, and has no confidence in himself.

If

* “Doth the work of faith in some believers, bear upon its top-branches, the full ripe fruits of a blessed assurance? Lo, what strong confidence, and high built persuasions of an interest in God, have sometimes been found in unsanctified ones! Yea, so strong may this false assurance be, that they dare boldly venture to go to the judgment-seat of God, and there defend it. Doth the Spirit of God fill the heart of the assured believer with joy unspeakable, and full of glory, giving them, through faith, a prelibation or foretaste of heaven itself, in those first-fruits of it? how near to this comes what the apostle supposes may be found in apostates!” *Flavel's Husbandry spiritualized*, Chap. xii.

If we do but consider what the hearts of natural men are, what principles they are under the dominion of, what blindness and deceit, what self-flattery, self-exultation, and self-confidence reigns there, we need not at all wonder that their high opinion of themselves, and confidence of their happy circumstances, be as high and strong as mountains, and as violent as a tempest, when once conscience is blinded, and convictions killed, with false, high affections, and those forementioned principles let loose, fed up and prompted by false joys and comforts, excited by some pleasing imaginations impressed by Satan, transforming himself into an angel of light.

When once a hypocrite is thus established in a false hope, he has not those things to cause him to call his hope in question, that oftentimes are the occasion of the doubting of true saints; as, *first*, he has not that cautious spirit, that great sense of the vast importance of a sure foundation, and that dread of being deceived. The comforts of the true saints increase awakening and caution, and a lively sense how great a thing it is to appear before an infinitely holy, just, and omniscient Judge. But false comforts put an end to these things, and dreadfully stupify the mind. *Secondly*, The hypocrite has not the knowledge of his own blindness, and the deceitfulness of his own heart, and that mean opinion of his own understanding, that the true saint has. Those that are deluded with false discoveries and affections, are evermore highly conceited of their light and understanding. *Thirdly*, The devil does not assault the hope of the hypocrite, as he does the hope of a true saint. The devil is a great enemy to a true Christian hope, not only because it tends greatly to the comfort of him that hath it, but also because it is a thing of a holy, heavenly nature, greatly tending to promote and cherish grace in the heart, and a great incentive to strictness and diligence in the Christian life. But he is no enemy to the hope of a hypocrite, which above all things establishes his interest in him that has it. A hypocrite may retain his hope without opposition, as long as he lives, the devil never disturbing it, not attempting to disturb it. But there is perhaps no true Christian but what has his hope assaulted by him. Satan assaulted Christ himself, upon this, whether he were the Son of God or no: and the servant is not above his Master, nor the disciple above his Lord; it is enough for the disciple, that is most privileged in this world, to be as his Master. *Fourthly*, He who has a false hope, has not that fight
of

of his own corruptions, which the saint has. A true Christian has ten times so much to do with his heart, and its corruptions, as an hypocrite: and the sins of his heart and practice, appear to him in their blackness; they look dreadful; and it often appears a very mysterious thing, that any grace can be consistent with such corruption, or should be in such a heart. But a false hope hides corruption, covers it all over, and the hypocrite looks clean and bright in his own eyes.

There are two sorts of hypocrites: one that are deceived with their outward morality and external religion; many of which are professed Arminians, in the doctrine of justification: and the other are those that are deceived with false discoveries and elevations; which often cry down works, and mens own righteousness, and talk much of free grace; but at the same time make a righteousness of their discoveries, and of their humiliation, and exalt themselves to heaven with them. These two kinds of hypocrites Mr. Shepard, in his exposition of the Parable of the ten virgins, distinguishes by the names of *legal* and *evangelical* hypocrites; and often speaks of the latter as the worst. And it is evident that the latter are commonly by far the most confident in their hope, and with the most difficulty brought off from it: I have scarcely known the instance of such an one, in my life, that has been undeceived. The chief grounds of the confidence of many of them, are the very same kind of impulses and supposed revelations, (sometimes with texts of scripture, and sometimes without,) that so many of late have had concerning future events; calling these impulses about their good estate, the witness of the Spirit; entirely misunderstanding the nature of the witness of the Spirit, as I shall shew hereafter. Those that have had visions and impulses about other things, it has generally been to reveal such things as they are desirous and fond of: and no wonder that persons who give heed to such things, have the same sort of visions or impressions about their own eternal salvation, to reveal to them that their sins are forgiven them, that their names are written in the book of life, that they are in high favour with God, &c. and especially when they earnestly seek, expect and wait for evidence of their election and salvation this way, as the surest and most glorious evidence of it. Neither is it any wonder, that when they have such a supposed revelation of their good estate, it raises in them the highest degree of confidence of it. It is found by abundant experience, that those

who

who are led away by impulses and imagined revelations, are extremely confident: they suppose that the great JEHOVAH has declared these and those things to them; and having his immediate testimony, a strong confidence is the highest virtue. Hence they are bold to say, *I know this or that;—I know certainly;—I am as sure as that I have a being*, and the like: and they despise all argument and inquiry in the case. And above all things else, it is easy to be accounted for, that impressions and impulses about that which is so pleasing, so suiting their self love and pride, as their being the dear children of God, distinguished from most in the world in his favor, should make them strongly confident: especially when with their impulses and revelations they have high affections, which they take to be the most eminent exercises of grace. I have known of several persons, that have had a fond desire of something of a temporal nature, through a violent passion that has possessed them, and they have been earnestly pursuing the thing they have desired should come to pass, and have met with great difficulty and many discouragements in it, but at last have had an impression or supposed revelation that they should obtain what they sought; and they have looked upon it as a sure promise from the Most High, which has made them most ridiculously confident, against all manner of reason to convince them to the contrary, and all events working against them. And there is nothing hinders, but that persons who are seeking their salvation, may be deceived by the like delusive impressions, and be made confident of that, the same way.

The confidence of many of this sort of hypocrites, that Mr. Shepard calls *evangelical hypocrites*, is like the confidence of some mad men, who think they are kings: they will maintain it against all manner of reason and evidence. And in one sense, it is much more immovable than a truly gracious assurance; a true assurance is not upheld, but by the soul's being kept in a holy frame, and grace maintained in lively exercise. If the actings of grace do much decay in the Christian, and he falls into a lifeless frame, he loses his assurance: but this kind of confidence of hypocrites will not be shaken by sin; they (at least some of them) will maintain their boldness in their hope, in the most corrupt frames and wicked ways; which is a sure evidence of their delusion.*

C c

And

* Mr. Shepard speaks of it, as a "presumptuous peace, that is not interrupted and broke by evil works." And says, That "the spirit

And here I cannot but observe, that there are certain doctrines often preached to the people, which need to be delivered with more caution and explanation than they frequently are; for as they are by many understood, they tend greatly to establish this delusion and false confidence of hypocrites. The doctrines I speak of are those of *Christians living by faith, not by sight; their giving glory to God, by trusting him in the dark; living upon Christ, and not upon experiences; not making their good frames the foundation of their faith*: which are excellent and important doctrines indeed, rightly understood, but corrupt and destructive, as many understand them. The scripture speaks of living or walking by faith, and not by sight, in no other way than these, *viz.* a being governed by a respect to eternal things, that are the objects of faith, and are not seen, and not by a respect to temporal things, which are seen; and believing things revealed, that we never saw with bodily eyes; and also living by faith in the promise of future things, without yet seeing or enjoying the things promised, or knowing the way how they can be fulfilled. This will be easily evident to any one that looks over the scriptures, which speak of *faith* in opposition to *sight*; as 2 Cor. iv. 18. and v. 7. Heb. xi. 1, 8, 13, 17, 29. Rom. viii. 24. John xx. 29. But this doctrine, as it is understood by many, is, that Christians ought firmly to believe and trust in Christ, without spiritual sight or light, and although they are in a dark dead frame, and, for the present, have no spiritual experiences or discoveries. And it is truly the duty of those who are thus in darkness, to come out of darkness into light, and believe. But that they should confidently believe and trust, while they yet remain without spiritual light or sight, is an antiscritural and absurd doctrine. The scripture is ignorant of any such faith in Christ of the operation

“ spirit will sigh, and not sing in that bosom, whence corrupt dispositions and passions break out.” And that “ though men in such frames may seem to maintain the consolation of the Spirit, and not suspect their hypocrisy, under pretence of trusting the Lord’s mercy; yet they cannot avoid the condemnation of the world.” *Parable of the ten virgins*, Part I. P. 139.

Dr. Ames speaks of it as a thing, by which the peace of a wicked man may be distinguished from the peace of a godly man, “ that the peace of a wicked man continues, whether he performs the duties of piety and righteousness, or no; provided those crimes are avoided that appear horrid to nature itself.” *Cases of conscience*, lib. III. Chap. vii.

operation of God, that is not founded in a spiritual sight of Christ. That believing on Christ, which accompanies a title to everlasting life, is a "seeing the Son, and believing on him." John vi. 40. True faith in Christ is never exercised, any further than persons "behold as in a glass the glory of the Lord, and have the knowledge of the glory of God in the face of Jesus Christ," 2 Cor. iii. 18. and iv. 6. They into whose minds "the light of the glorious gospel of Christ, who is the image of God, does not shine, they believe not," 2 Cor. iv. 4. That faith, which is without spiritual light, is not the faith of the children of the light, and of the day; but the presumption of the children of darkness. And therefore to press and urge them to believe, without any spiritual light or sight, tends greatly to help forward the delusions of the prince of darkness. Men not only cannot exercise faith without some spiritual light, but they can exercise faith only just in such proportion as they have spiritual light. Men will trust in God no further than they know him: and they cannot be in the exercise of faith in him one ace further than they have a sight of his fulness and faithfulness *in exercise*. Nor can they have the exercise of trust in God, any further than they are in a *gracious frame*. They that are in a dead carnal frame, doubtless ought to trust God; because that would be the same thing as coming out of their bad frame, and turning to God: but to exhort men confidently to trust in God, and so hold up their hope and peace, though they are not in a gracious frame, and continue still to be so, is the same thing in effect, as to exhort them confidently to trust in God, but not with a gracious trust: and what is that but a wicked presumption? It is just so impossible for men to have a strong or lively trust in God, when they have no lively exercises of grace, or sensible Christian experiences, as it is for them to be in the lively exercises of grace, without the exercises of grace.

It is true, that it is the duty of God's people to trust in him when in darkness, and though they remain still in darkness, in that sense, that they ought to trust in God when the aspects of his providence are dark, and look as though God had forsaken them, and did not hear their prayers, and many clouds gather, and many enemies surround them, with a formidable aspect, threatening to swallow them up, and all events of providence seem to be against them, all circumstances seem to render the promises of God difficult to be fulfilled, and God

must

must be trusted out of sight, *i. e.* when we cannot see which way it is possible for him to fulfil his word, every thing but God's mere word makes it look unlikely, so that if persons believe, they must hope against hope. Thus the ancient Patriarchs, and Job, and the Psalmist, and Jeremiah, Daniel, Shadrach, Meshech and Abednego, and the apostle Paul gave glory to God by trusting in God in darkness. And we have many instances of such a glorious victorious faith in the eleventh of the Hebrews. But how different a thing is this, from trusting in God, without spiritual sight, and being at the same time in a dead and carnal frame!

There is also such a thing as spiritual light's being let into the soul in one way, when it is not in another; and so there is such a thing as the saints trusting in God, and also knowing their good estate, when they are destitute of some kinds of experience. As for instance, they may have clear views of God's sufficiency and faithfulness, and so confidently trust in him, and know that they are his children; and at the same time, not have those clear and sweet ideas of his love, as at other times: for it was thus with Christ himself in his last passion. And they may have views of much of God's sovereignty, holiness, and allsufficiency, enabling them quietly to submit to him, and exercise a sweet and most encouraging hope in God's fulness, when they are not satisfied of their own good estate. But how different things are these, from confidently trusting in God, without spiritual light or experience!

Those that thus insist on persons living by faith, when they have no experience, and are in very bad frames, are also very absurd in their notions of faith. What they mean by faith is, believing that they are in a good estate. Hence they count it a dreadful sin for them to doubt of their state, whatever frames they are in, and whatever wicked things they do, because it is the great and heinous sin of unbelief; and he is the best man, and puts most honor upon God, that maintains his hope of his good estate the most confidently and immoveably, when he has the least light or experience; that is to say, when he is in the worst and wickedest frame and way; because, forsooth, that is a sign that he is strong in faith, giving glory to God, and against hope believes in hope. But what Bible do they learn this notion of faith out of, that it is a man's confidently believing

believing that he is in a good estate? * If this be faith, the Pharisees had faith in an eminent degree; some of which, Christ teaches, committed the unpardonable sin against the Holy Ghost. The scripture represents faith, as that by which men are *brought into* a good estate; and therefore it cannot be the same thing, as believing that they *are already* in a good estate. To suppose that faith consists in persons believing that they are in a good estate, is in effect the same thing, as to suppose that faith consists in a person's believing that he has faith, or in believing that he believes.

Indeed persons doubting of their good estate, may in several respects *arise from* unbelief. It may be from unbelief or because they have so little faith; that they have so little *evidence* of their good estate: If they had more experience of the actings of faith, and so more experience of the exercise of grace, they would have clearer evidence that their state was good; and so their doubts would be removed. And then their doubting of their state may be from unbelief thus, when though there be many things that are good evidences of a work of grace in them, yet they doubt very much whether they are really in a state of favour with God, because it is *they*, those that are so unworthy, and have done so much to provoke God to anger against them. Their doubts in such a case arise from unbelief, as they arise from want of a sufficient sense *of*, and reliance *on* the infinite riches of God's grace, and the sufficiency of Christ for the chief of sinners. They may also be from unbelief, when they doubt of their state, because of the mystery of God's dealings with them: they are not able to reconcile such dispensations with God's favour to them: or when they doubt whether they have any interest in the promises, because the promises

* “ Men do not know that they are godly, by believing that they are godly. We know many things by faith, Heb. xi. 3. *By faith we understand that the worlds were made by the word of God.* Faith is the evidence of things not seen, Heb. xi. 1. Thus men know the Trinity of persons of the Godhead; that Jesus Christ is the Son of God; that he that believes in him will have eternal life; the resurrection of the dead. And if God should tell a saint that he hath grace, he might know it by believing the word of God. But it is not this way, that godly men do know that they have grace. It is not revealed in the word, and the Spirit of God doth not testify it to particular persons.” *Stoddard's nature of saving conversion*, p. 83, 84.

promises from the aspect of providence appear so unlikely to be fulfilled; the difficulties that are in the way, are so many and great. Such doubting arises from want of dependence upon God's almighty power, and his knowledge and wisdom, as infinitely above theirs. But yet, in such persons, their unbelief, and their doubting of their state, are not the same thing; though one arises from the other.

Persons may be greatly to blame for doubting of their state, on such grounds as these last mentioned; and they may be to blame, that they have no more grace, and no more of the present exercises and experiences of it, to be an evidence to them of the goodness of their state: men are doubtless to blame for being in a dead carnal frame; but when they are in such a frame, and have no sensible experience of the exercises of grace, but on the contrary, are very much under the prevalence of their lusts, and an unchristian spirit, they are not to blame for doubting of their state. It is as impossible, in the nature of things, that a holy and Christian hope, should be kept alive, in its clearness and strength, in such circumstances, as it is to keep the light in the room, when the candle is put out; or to maintain the bright sun-shine in the air, when the sun is gone down. Distant experiences, when darkened by present prevailing lust and corruption, will never keep alive a gracious confidence and assurance; but that sickens and decays upon it, as necessarily as a little child by repeated blows on the head with a hammer. Nor is it at all to be lamented, that persons doubt of their state in such circumstances; but on the contrary, it is desirable and every way best that they should. It is agreeable to that wise and merciful constitution of things, which God hath established, that it should be so. For so hath God contrived and constituted things, in his dispensations towards his own people, that when their *love* decays, and the exercises of it fail, or become weak, *fear* should arise; for then they need it to restrain them from sin, and to excite them to care for the good of their souls, and so to stir them up to watchfulness and diligence in religion: but God hath so ordered that when love rises, and is in vigorous exercise, then fear should vanish, and be driven away; for then they need it not, having a higher and more excellent principle in exercise, to restrain them from sin, and stir them up to their duty. There are no other principles, which human nature is under the influence of, that will ever make
men

men conscientious, but one of these two, *fear or love*: and therefore, if one of these should not prevail as the other decayed, God's people when fallen into dead and carnal frames, when love is asleep, would be lamentably exposed indeed. And therefore God has wisely ordained, that these two opposite principles of love and fear, should rise and fall, like the two opposite scales of a balance; when one rises, the other sinks. As light and darkness necessarily and unavoidably succeed each other; if light prevails, so much does darkness cease, and no more; and if light decays, so much does darkness prevail: so it is in the heart of a child of God; if divine love decays and falls asleep, and lust prevails, the light and joy of hope goes out, and dark fear and doubting arises; and if on the contrary, divine love prevails, and comes into lively exercise, this brings in the brightness of hope, and drives away black lust, and fear with it. Love is the *spirit of adoption*, or the childlike principle; if that slumbers, men fall under fear, which is the *spirit of bondage*, or the servile principle: and so on the contrary. And if it be so, that love, or the spirit of adoption, be carried to a great height, it quite drives away all fear, and gives full assurance; agreeable to that of the apostle, 1 John iv. 18. "There is no fear in love, but perfect love casts out fear" These two opposite principles of lust and holy love, bring hope and fear into the hearts of God's children, in proportion as they prevail; that is, when left to their own natural influence, without something adventitious, or accidental intervening; as the distemper of melancholy, doctrinal ignorance, prejudices of education, wrong instruction, false principles, peculiar temptations, &c.

Fear is cast out by the Spirit of God, no other way than by the prevailing of love: nor is it ever maintained by his Spirit, but when love is asleep. At such a time, in vain is all the faint's self-examinations, and poring on past experience, in order to establish his peace, and get assurance. For it is contrary to the nature of things, as God hath constituted them, that he should have assurance at such a time.

They therefore do directly thwart God's wise and gracious constitution of things, who exhort others to be confident in their hope, when in dead frames; under a notion of *living by faith*, and *not by sight*, and *trusting God in the dark*, and *living upon Christ*, and *not upon experiences*; and warn them not to doubt of their good estate, lest they should be guilty of the dreadful

dreadful sin of unbelief. And it has a direct tendency to establish the most presumptuous hypocrites, and to prevent their ever calling their state in question, how much soever wickedness rages, and reigns in their hearts, and prevails in their lives; under a notion of honouring God, by *hoping against hope*, and confidently trusting in God, when things look very dark. And doubtless vast has been the mischief that has been done this way.

Persons cannot be said to forsake Christ, and live on their experiences of the exercises of grace, merely because they take them and use them as evidences of grace; for there are no other evidences that they can or ought to take. But then may persons be said to live upon their experiences, when they make a righteousness of them; and instead of keeping their eye on God's glory, and Christ's excellency, they turn their eyes off these objects without them, on to themselves, to entertain their minds, by viewing their own attainments, and high experiences, and the great things they have met with, and are bright and beautiful in their own eyes, and are rich and increased with goods in their own apprehensions, and think that God has as admiring an esteem of them, on the same account, as they have of themselves: this is living on experiences, and not on Christ; and is more abominable in the sight of God, than the gross immoralities of those who make no pretences to religion. But this is a far different thing from a mere improving experiences as evidences of an interest in a glorious Redeemer.

But to return from this digression, I would mention one thing more under the general head that I am upon.

XII. Nothing can be certainly concluded concerning the nature of religious affections, that any are the subjects of, from this, that the outward manifestations of them, and the relation persons give of them, are very affecting and pleasing to the truly godly, and such as greatly gain their charity, and win their hearts.

The true saints have not such a spirit of discerning, that they can certainly determine who are godly, and who are not. For though they know experimentally what true religion is, in the internal exercises of it; yet these are what they can neither feel,

feel, nor see, in the heart of another.* There is nothing in others, that comes within their view, but outward manifestations and appearances: but the scripture plainly intimates, that this way of judging what is in men by outward appearances, is at best uncertain, and liable to deceit; 1 Sam. xvi. 7. "The Lord
 " seeth not as man seeth; for man looketh on the outward ap-
 " pearance, but the Lord looketh on the heart." If. xi. 3.
 " He shall not judge after the sight of his eyes, neither reprove
 " after the hearing of his ears."† They commonly are but
 poor judges, and dangerous counsellors in soul cases, who are
 quick and peremptory in determining persons states, vaunting
 themselves in their extraordinary faculty of discerning and dis-
 tinguishing, in these great affairs: as though all was open and
 clear to them. They betray one of these three things; either
 that they have had but little experience; or are persons of a
 weak judgment; or that they have a great degree of pride and
 self-confidence, and so ignorance of themselves. Wise and ex-
 periented men will proceed with great caution in such an
 affair.

When there are many probable appearances of piety in others,
 it is the duty of the saints to receive them cordially into their
 charity, and to love them and rejoice in them, as their brethren
 in Christ Jesus. But yet the best of men may be deceived,
 when the appearances seem to them exceeding fair and bright,
 even so as entirely to gain their charity, and conquer their hearts.

D d

It

* " Men may have the knowlege of their own conversion: the
 " knowlege that other men have of it is uncertain; because no man
 " can look into the heart of another, and see the workings of grace
 " there." *Stoddard's nature of saving conversion*, chap. xv. at the
 beginning.

† Mr. Stoddard observes, That " all visible signs are common to
 " converted and unconverted men; and a relation of experiences,
 " among the rest." *Appeal to the learned*, p. 75.

" O how hard is it for the eye of man to discern betwixt chaff and
 " wheat! and how many upright hearts are now censured, whom
 " God will clear! how many false hearts are now approved, whom
 " God will condemn! Men ordinarily have no convictive proofs,
 " but only probable symptoms; which at most beget but a con-
 " jectural knowlege of another's state. And they that shall perempto-
 " rily judge either way, may possibly wrong the generation of the
 " upright, or on the other side, absolve and justify the wicked. And
 " truly considering what hath been said, it is no wonder that dange-
 " rous mistakes are so frequently made in this matter." *Flavel's*
husbandry spiritualized, chap. xii.

It has been a common thing in the church of God, for such bright professors, that are received as eminent saints, among the saints, to fall away and come to nothing.* And this we need not wonder at, if we consider the things that have been already observed: what things it has been shown, may appear in men who are altogether graceless. Nothing hinders but that all these things may meet together in men, and yet they be without a spark of grace in their hearts. They may have religious affections of many kinds together; they may have a sort of affection towards God, that bears a great resemblance of dear love to him; and so a kind of love to the brethren, and great appearances of admiration of God's perfections and works, and sorrow for sin, and reverence, submission, self-abasement, gratitude, joy, religious longings, and zeal for the interest of religion and the good of souls. And these affections may come after great awakenings and convictions of conscience; and there may be great appearances of a work of humiliation; and counterfeit love and joy, and other affections may seem to follow these, and one another, just in the same order, that is commonly observable in the holy affections of true converts. And these religious affections may be carried to a great height, and may cause abundance of tears, yea, may overcome the nature of those who are the subjects of them, and may make them affectionate, and fervent, and fluent in speaking of the things of God, and dispose them to be abundant in it; and may be attended with many sweet texts of scripture, and precious promises, brought with great impression on their

* "Be not offended, if you see great cedars fall, stars fall from heaven, great professors die and decay: do not think they be all such: do not think that the elect shall fall. Truly, some are such that when they fall, one would think a man truly sanctified might fall away, as the Arminians think: 1 John ii. 19. "They were not of us." I speak this, because the Lord is shaking; and I look for great apostasies: for God is trying all his friends, through all the Christian world. In Germany what profession was there! who would have thought it? The Lord who delights to manifest that openly, which was hid secretly, sends a sword and they fall." *Shepard's Parab.* Part I. p. 118, 119.

"The saints may approve thee, and God condemn thee; Rev. iii. 1 "Thou hast a name that thou livest, and art dead." Men may say, There is a true Nathanael; and God may say, There is a self-cozening Pharisee. Reader, Thou hast heard of Judas and Demas, of Ananias and Sapphira, of Hymeneus and Philetus, once renowned and famous professors, and thou hast heard how they proved at last." *Flavel's Touchstone of Sincerity*, chap. ii. sect. 5.

their minds; and may dispose them with their mouths to praise and glorify God, in a very ardent manner, and fervently to call upon others to praise him, crying out of their unworthiness, and extolling free grace. And may, moreover, dispose them to abound in the external duties of religion, such as prayer, hearing the word preached, singing, and religious conference; and these things attended with a great resemblance of a Christian assurance, in its greatest height, when the saints mount on eagles wings, above all darkness and doubting. I think it has been made plain, that there may be all these things, and yet there be nothing more than the common influences of the Spirit of God, joined with the delusions of Satan, and the wicked and deceitful heart. To which I may add, that all these things may be attended with a sweet natural temper, and a good doctrinal knowledge of religion, and a long acquaintance with the saints way of talking and of expressing their affections and experiences, and a natural ability and subtilty in accommodating their expressions and manner of speaking to the dispositions and notions of the hearers, and a taking decency of expression and behaviour, formed by a good education. How great therefore may the resemblance be, as to all outward expressions and appearances, between an hypocrite and a true saint! Doubtless it is the glorious prerogative of the omniscient God, as the great searcher of hearts, to be able well to separate between sheep and goats. Any what an indecent, self-exaltation, and arrogance is it, in poor fallible dark mortals, to pretend that they can determine and know, who are really sincere and upright before God, and who are not!

Many seem to lay great weight on that, and to suppose it to be what may determine them with respect to others real piety, when they not only tell a plausible story, but when, in giving an account of their experiences, they make such a representation, and speak after such a manner, that they *feel* their talk; that is to say, when their talk seems to harmonize with their own experience, and their hearts are touched and affected and delighted, by what they hear them say, and drawn out by it, in dear love to them. But there is not that certainty in such things, and that full dependence to be had upon them, which many imagine. A true saint greatly delights in holiness; it is a most beautiful thing in his eyes; and God's work, in savingly renewing and making holy and happy, a poor, and before perishing soul, appears to him a most glorious work: no wonder therefore, that his heart is touched, and greatly affected, when he hears another give a probable account of this work,
wrought

wrought on his own heart, and when he sees in him probable appearances of holiness; whether those pleasing appearances have any thing real to answer them, or no. And if he uses the same words, which are commonly made use of, to express the affections of true saints, and tells of many things following one another in an order, agreeable to the method of the experience of him that hears him, and also speaks freely and boldly, and with an air of assurance; no wonder that the other thinks his experiences harmonize with his own. And if besides all this, in giving his relation, he speaks with much affection; and above all, if in speaking, he seems to shew much affection to him to whom he speaks, such an affection as the Galatians did to the apostle Paul; these things will naturally have a powerful influence, to affect and draw his hearer's heart, and open wide the doors of his charity towards him. David speaks as one who had felt Ahithophel's talk, and had once a sweet savour and relish of it. And therefore exceeding great was his surprize and disappointment, when he fell; it was almost too much for him. Psal. lv. 12, 13, 14. "It was not an enemy—then I could have borne it;—but it was thou, a man, mine equal, my guide, and mine acquaintance: we took sweet counsel together, and walked unto the house of God in company."

It is with professors of religion, especially such as become so in a time of outpouring of the Spirit of God, as it is with the blossoms in the spring;* there are vast numbers of them upon the trees, which all look fair and promising; but yet very many of them never come to any thing. And many of those, that in a little time wither up, and drop off, and rot under the trees; yet for a while, look as beautiful and gay as others; and not only so, but smell sweet, and send forth a pleasant odour; so that we cannot, by any of our senses, certainly distinguish those blossoms which have in them that secret virtue, which will afterwards appear in the fruit, and that inward solidity and strength which shall enable them to bear, and cause them to be perfected by the hot summer sun, that will dry up the others. It is the mature fruit which comes afterwards, and not

* A time of outpouring of the Spirit of God, reviving religion, and producing the pleasant appearances of it, in new converts, is in scripture compared to this very thing, *viz.* the spring season, when the benign influences of the heavens cause the blossoms to put forth. Cant. ii. 11, 12.

not the beautiful colours and smell of the blossom, that we must judge by. So new converts, (professedly so,) in their talk about things of religion, may appear fair, and be very favourable, and the saints may think they talk feelingly. They may relish their talk, and imagine they perceive a divine favour in it; and yet all may come to nothing.

It is strange how hardly men are brought to be contented with the rules and directions Christ has given them, but they must needs go by other rules of their own inventing, that seem to them wiser and better. I know of no directions or counsels which Christ ever delivered more plainly, than the rules he has given us, to guide us in our judging of others sincerity; viz. that we should judge of the tree chiefly by the fruit: but yet this will not do; but other ways are found out, which are imagined to be more distinguishing and certain. And woful have been the mischievous consequences, of this arrogant setting up mens wisdom above the wisdom of Christ. I believe many saints have gone much out of the way of Christ's word, in this respect: and some of them have been chastised with whips, and (I had almost said) scorpions, to bring them back again. But many things which have lately appeared, and do now appear, may convince, that ordinarily, those who have gone farthest this way, that have been most highly conceited of their faculty of discerning, and have appeared most forward, peremptorily and suddenly to determine the state of mens souls, have been hypocrites, who have known nothing of true religion.

In the parable of the wheat and tares, it is said, Matth. xiii. 26. "When the blade was sprung up, and brought forth fruit, then appeared the tares also." As though the tares were not discerned, nor distinguishable from the wheat, *until then*, as Mr. Flavel observes;† who mentions it as an observation of Jerome's, that *wheat and tares are so much alike, until the blade of the wheat comes to bring forth the ear, that it is next to impossible to distinguish them.* And then, Mr. Flavel adds, "How difficult so ever it be to discern the difference between wheat and tares; yet doubtless the eye of sense can much easier discriminate them, than the most quick and piercing eye of man, can discern the difference between special and common grace. For all saving graces in the saints, have
" their

† Husbandry spiritualized, Chap. xii.

“ their counterfeits in hypocrites ; there are similar works in those, which a spiritual and very judicious eye may easily mistake, for the saving and genuine effects of a sanctifying spirit.”

As it is the ear or the fruit which distinguishes the wheat from the tares, so this is the true Shibboleth, that he who stands as judge at the passages of Jordan, makes use of to distinguish those that shall pass over Jordan into the true Canaan, from those that should be slain at the passages. For the Hebrew word Shibboleth, signifies an ear of corn. And perhaps the more full pronunciation of Jephthah's friends, Shibboleth, may represent a full ear with fruit in it, typifying the fruits of the friends of Christ, the antitype of Jephthah ; and the more lean pronunciation of the Ephraimites his enemies, may represent their empty ears, typifying the show of religion in hypocrites, without substance and fruit. This is agreeable to the doctrine we are abundantly taught in scripture, *viz.* That he who is set to judge those that pass through death, whether they have a right to enter into the heavenly Canaan or no, or whether they should not be slain, will judge every man according to his works.

We seem to be taught the same things, by the rules given for the priest's discerning the leprosy. In many cases it was impossible for the priest to determine whether a man had the leprosy, or whether he were clean, by the most narrow inspection of the appearances that were upon him, until he had waited to see what the appearances would come to, and had shut up the person who shewed himself to him, one seven days after another ; and when he judged, he was to determine by the hair, which grew out of the spot that was shewed him, which was as it were the fruit that it brought forth.

And here, before I finish what I have to say under this head, I would say something to a strange notion some have of late been led away with, of certainly knowing the good estate that others are in, as though it were immediately revealed to them from heaven, by their love flowing out to them in an extraordinary manner. They argue thus, that their love being very sensible and great, it may be certainly known by them who feel it, to be a true Christian love : and if it be a true Christian love, the Spirit of God must be the author of it : and inasmuch as the Spirit of God, who knows certainly, whether others are the children of God or no, and is a spirit of truth, is pleased, by an uncommon influence upon them, to cause their love to
flow

flow out, in an extraordinary manner, towards such a person, as a child of God; it must needs be that this infallible Spirit, who deceives none, knows that that person is a child of God. But such persons might be convinced of the falseness of their reasoning, if they would consider whether or no it be not their duty, and what God requires of them, to love those as the children of God, who they think are the children of God, and whom they have no reason to think otherwise of, from all that they can see in them, though God, who searches the hearts, knows them not to be his children. If it be their duty, then it is good, and the want of it sin; and therefore, surely, the Spirit of God may be the author of it: the Spirit of God, without being a spirit of falsehood, may in such a case assist a person to do his duty, and keep him from sin. But then they argue from the uncommon degree and special manner, in which their love flows out to the person; which they think the Spirit of God never would cause, if he did not know the object to be a child of God. But then I would ask them, whether or no it is not their duty to love all such as they are bound to think are the children of God, from all that they can see in them, to a very great degree, though God, from other things which he sees, that are out of sight to them, knows them not to be so. It is mens duty to love all whom they are bound in charity to look upon as the children of God, with a vastly dearer affection than they commonly do. As we ought to love Christ to the utmost capacity of our nature, so it is our duty to love those who we think are so near and dear to him as his members, with an exceeding dear affection, as Christ has loved us; and therefore it is sin in us not to love them so. We ought to pray to God that he would by his Spirit keep us from sin, and enable us to do our duty: and may not his Spirit answer our prayers, and enable us to do our duty, in a particular instance, without lying? If he cannot, then the Spirit of God is bound not to help his people to do their duty in some instances, because he cannot do it without being a spirit of falsehood. But surely God is so sovereign as that comes to, that he may enable us to do our duty when he pleases, and on what occasion he pleases. When persons think others are his children, God may have other ends in causing their exceedingly endeared love to flow out to them, besides revealing to them whether their opinion of them be right or no: he may have that merciful end in it, to enable them to do their duty, and to keep them

from

from that dreadful infinite evil, sin. And will they say God shall not show them that mercy in such a case? If I am at a distance from home, and hear, that in my absence, my house is burnt, but my family have, in some extraordinary manner, all escaped the flames; and every thing in the circumstances of the story, as I hear it, makes it appear very credible; it would be sin in me, in such a case, not to feel a very great degree of gratitude to God, though the story indeed be not true. And is not God so sovereign, that he may if he pleases, shew me that mercy on that occasion, and enable me to do my duty in a much further degree than I used to do it, and yet not incur the charge of deceitfulness, in confirming a falsehood?

It is exceeding manifest, that error or mistake may be the occasion of a gracious exercise, and consequently a gracious influence of the Spirit of God, by Rom. xiv. 6. "He that eateth to the Lord, he eateth, and giveth God thanks; and he that eateth not to the Lord, he eateth not, and giveth God thanks." The apostle is speaking of those, who through erroneous and needless scruples, avoided eating legally unclean meats.—By this it is very evident, that there may be true exercises of grace, a true respect to the Lord, and particularly, a true thankfulness, which may be occasioned, both by an erroneous judgment and practice. And consequently, an error may be the occasion of those truly holy exercises that are from the infallible Spirit of God. And if so, it is certainly too much for us to determine, to how great a degree the Spirit of God may give this holy exercise, on such an occasion.

This notion, of certainly discerning another's state, by love flowing out, is not only not founded on reason or scripture, but it is anti-scriptural, it is against the rules of scripture; which say not a word of any such way of judging the state of others as this, but direct us to judge chiefly by the fruits that are seen in them. And it is against the doctrines of scripture, which do plainly teach us, that the state of others souls towards God, cannot be known by us, as in Rev. ii. 17. "To him that overcometh will I give to eat of the *hidden manna*, and I will give him a white stone, and in the stone a new name written, which *no man knoweth, saving he that receiveth it.*" And Rom. ii. 29. "He is a Jew, which is one inwardly; and circumcision is that of the heart, in the spirit, and not in the letter, whose praise is not of men, but of God." That by this

last expression, *whose praise is not of men, but of God*, the apostle has respect to the insufficiency of men to judge concerning him, whether he be inwardly a Jew or no, (as they could easily see by outward marks, whether men were outwardly Jews,) and would signify, that it belongs to God alone to give a determining voice in this matter, is confirmed by the same apostle's use of the phrase, in 1 Cor. iv. 5. "Therefore judge nothing before the time, until the Lord come, who both will bring to light the hidden things of darkness, and will make manifest the counsels of the hearts:" and then shall every man have praise of God. The apostle, in the two foregoing verses, says, "But with me it is a very small thing that I should be judged of you, or of man's judgment: yea, I judge not mine own self. For I know nothing by myself, yet am I not hereby justified: but he that judgeth me is the Lord." And again, it is further confirmed, because the apostle in this second chapter to the Romans, directs his speech especially to those who had a high conceit of their own holiness, made their boast of God, and were confident of their own discerning, and that they knew God's will, and approved the things which were excellent, or tried the things that differ (as it is in the margin.) vers. 19. "And were confident that they were guides of the blind, and a light to them which are in darkness, instructors of the foolish, teachers of babes;" and so took upon them to judge others. See vers. 1. and 17, 18, 19, 20.

And how arrogant must the notion be, that they have, who imagine they can certainly know others godliness, when that great apostle Peter pretends not to say any more concerning Sylvanus, than that he was "a faithful brother, as he supposed?" 1 Pet. v. 12. Though this Sylvanus appears to have been a very eminent minister of Christ, and an evangelist, and a famous light in God's church at that day, and an intimate companion of the apostles. See 2 Cor. i. 19. 1 Thess. i. 1. and 2 Thess. i. 1.

P A R T III.

Shewing what are distinguishing Signs of truly gracious and holy Affections.

I Come now to the SECOND thing appertaining to the *Trial* of religious affections, which was proposed, *viz.* To take notice of some things, wherein those affections that are spiritual and gracious, do differ from those that are not so.

But before I proceed directly to the distinguishing characters, I would previously mention some things which I desire may be observed, concerning the marks I shall lay down.

1. That I am far from undertaking to give such signs of gracious affections, as shall be sufficient to enable any certainly to distinguish true affection from false in others; or to determine positively which of their neighbours are true professors, and which are hypocrites. In so doing, I should be guilty of that arrogance which I have been condemning. Though it be plain that Christ has given rules to all Christians, to enable them to judge of professors of religion, whom they are concerned with, so far as is necessary for their own safety, and to prevent their being led into a snare by false teachers, and false pretenders to religion; and though it be also beyond doubt, that the scriptures do abound with rules, which may be very serviceable to ministers, in counselling and conducting souls committed to their care in things appertaining to their spiritual and eternal state; yet, it is also evident, that it was never God's design to give us any rules, by which we may certainly know, who of our fellow-professors are his, and to make a full and clear separation between sheep and goats: but that on the contrary, it was God's design to reserve this to himself, as his prerogative. And therefore no such distinguishing signs as shall enable Christians or ministers to do this, are ever to be expected to the world's end: for no more is ever to be expected from any signs, that are to be found in the word of God, or gathered from it, than Christ designed them for.

2. No such signs are to be expected, that shall be sufficient to enable those saints certainly to discern their own good estate, who are very low in grace, or are such as have much departed from God, and are fallen into a dead, carnal and unchristian frame. It is not agreeable to God's design, (as has been already observed,) that such should know their good estate: nor is it desirable that they should; but, on the contrary, every way best that they should not; and we have reason to bless God, that he has made no provision that such should certainly know the state that they are in, any other way, than by first coming out of the ill frame and way they are in.

Indeed it is not properly through the defect of the signs given in the word of God, that every saint living, whether strong or weak, and those who are in a bad frame, as well as others, cannot certainly know their good estate by them. For the rules in themselves are certain and infallible, and every saint has, or has had those things in himself, which are sure evidences of grace; for *every*, even the *least* act of grace is so. But it is through his defect to whom the signs are given. There is a twofold defect in that saint who is very low in grace, or in an ill frame, which makes it impossible for him to know certainly that he has true grace, by the best signs and rules which can be given him.

First, A defect in the *object*, or the qualification to be viewed and examined. I do not mean an essential defect; because I suppose the person to be a real saint; but a defect in degree: grace being very small, cannot be clearly and certainly discerned and distinguished. Things that are very small, we cannot clearly discern their form, or distinguish them one from another; though, as they are in themselves, their form may be very different. There is doubtless a great difference between the body of man, and the bodies of other animals, in the first conception in the womb: but yet if we should view the different embryos, it might not be possible for us to discern the difference, by reason of the imperfect state of the object; but as it comes to greater perfection, the difference becomes very plain. The difference between creatures of very contrary qualities, is not so plainly to be seen while they are very young, even after they are actually brought forth, as in their more perfect state. The difference between doves and ravens, or doves and vultures, when they first come out of the egg, is not
so

so evident ; but as they grow to their perfection, it is exceeding great and manifest. Another defect attending the grace of those I am speaking, is its being mingled with so much corruption, which clouds and hides it, and makes it impossible for it certainly to be known. Though different things that are before us, may have in themselves many marks thoroughly distinguishing them one from another ; yet if we see them only in a thick smoke, it may nevertheless be impossible to distinguish them. A fixed star is easily distinguishable from a comet, in a clear sky ; but if we view them through a cloud, it may be impossible to see the difference. When true Christians are in an ill frame, guilt lies on the conscience ; which will bring fear, and so prevent the peace and joy of an assured hope.

Secondly, There is in such a case a defect in the eye. As the feebleness of grace and prevalence of corruption, obscures the object ; so it enfeebles the sight ; it darkens the sight as to all spiritual objects, of which grace is one. Sin is like some distempers of the eyes, that make things to appear of different colours from those which properly belong to them, and like many other distempers, that put the mouth out of taste, so as to disenable from distinguishing good and wholesome food from bad, but every thing tastes bitter. Men in a corrupt and carnal frame, have their spiritual senses in but poor plight for judging and distinguishing spiritual things.

For these reasons, no signs that can be given, will actually satisfy persons in such a case : let the signs that are given, be never so good and infallible, and clearly laid down, they will not serve them. It is like giving a man rules, how to distinguish visible objects in the dark : the things themselves may be very different, and their difference may be very well and distinctly described to him ; yet all is insufficient to enable him to distinguish them, because he is in the dark. And therefore many persons in such a case spend time in a fruitless labour, in poring on past experiences, and examining themselves by signs they hear laid down from the pulpit, or that they read in books ; when there is other work for them to do, that is much more expected of them ; which, while they neglect, all their self-examinations are like to be in vain, if they should spend never so much time in them. The accursed thing is to be destroyed from their camp, and Achan to be slain ; and until this be done they will be in trouble. It is not God's design
that

that men should obtain assurance in any other way, than by mortifying corruption, and increasing in grace, and obtaining the lively exercises of it. And although self-examination be a duty of great use and importance, and by no means to be neglected; yet it is not the principal means, by which the saints do get satisfaction of their good estate. Assurance is not to be obtained so much by *self-examination*, as by *action*. The apostle Paul sought assurance chiefly this way, even by *forgetting the things that were behind, and reaching forth unto those things that were before, pressing towards the mark for the prize of the high calling of God in Christ Jesus; if by any means he might attain unto the resurrection of the dead*. And it was by this means chiefly that he obtained assurance, 1 Cor. ix. 26. "I therefore so run, as not uncertainly." He obtained assurance of winning the prize, more by *running*, than by *considering*. The *swiftness of his pace*, did more towards his assurance of a conquest, than the *strictness of his examination*. Giving all diligence to grow in grace, by adding to faith, virtue, &c. is the direction that the apostle Peter gives us, for *making our calling and election sure*, and having an entrance ministered to us abundantly, into Christ's everlasting kingdom; signifying to us, that without this, our eyes will be dim, and we shall be as men in the dark, that cannot plainly see things past or to come, either the forgiveness of our sins past, or our heavenly inheritance that is future, and *far off*, 2 Pet. i. 5—11. †

Therefore, though good rules to distinguish true grace from counterfeit, may tend to convince hypocrites, and be of great use to the saints, in many respects; and among other benefits may be very useful to them to remove many needless scruples, and establish their hope; yet I am far from pretending to lay down any such rules, as shall be sufficient of themselves, without other means, to enable all true saints to see their good estate, or as supposing they should be the principal means of their satisfaction.

3. Nor

† "The way to know your godliness, is to renew the visible exercises of grace."—"The more the visible exercises of grace are renewed, the more certain you will be. The more frequently these actings are renewed, the more abiding and confirmed your assurance will be."—"The more mens grace is multiplied, the more their peace is multiplied; 2 Pet. i. 2. *Grace and peace be multiplied unto you, through the knowlege of God and Jesus Christ our Lord.*" Stoddard's *Way to know sincerity and hypocrisy*, p. 139. and 142.

3. Nor is there much encouragement, in the experience of present or past times, to lay down rules or marks to distinguish between true and false affections, in hopes of convincing any considerable number of that sort of hypocrites, who have been deceived with great false discoveries and affections, and are once settled in a false confidence, and high conceit of their own supposed great experiences and privileges. Such hypocrites are so conceited of their own wisdom, and so blinded and hardened with a very great self-righteousness, (but very subtil and secret, under the disguise of great humility,) and so invincible a fondness of their pleasing conceit, of their great exaltation, that it usually signifies nothing at all, to lay before them the most convincing evidences of their hypocrisy. Their state is indeed deplorable, and next to those that have committed the unpardonable sin. Some of this sort of persons seem to be most out of the reach of means of conviction and repentance. But yet the laying down good rules may be a means of preventing such hypocrites, and of convincing many of other kinds of hypocrites; and God is able to convince even this kind, and his grace is not to be limited, nor means to be neglected. And besides, such rules may be of use to the true saints, to detect false affections, which they may have mingled with true; and be a means of their religion's becoming more pure, and like gold tried in the fire.

Having premised these things, I now proceed directly to take notice of those things in which true religious affections are distinguished from false.

I. Affections that are truly spiritual and gracious, do arise from those influences and operations on the heart, which are *spiritual, supernatural, and divine.*

I will explain what I mean by these terms, whence will appear their use to distinguish between those affections which are spiritual, and those which are not so.

We find that true saints, or those persons who are sanctified by the Spirit of God, are in the New Testament called *spiritual* persons. And their being *spiritual* is spoken of as their peculiar character, and that wherein they are distinguished from those who are not sanctified. This is evident, because those who are spiritual are set in opposition to natural men, and carnal men. Thus the spiritual man and the natural man are set in opposition one to another, 1 Cor. ii. 14, 15. "The natural man
" receiveth not the things of the Spirit of God; for they are fool-
" ishness unto him: neither can he know them, because they
" are

“are spiritually discerned. But he that is spiritual, judgeth all things.” The scripture explains itself to mean an ungodly man, or one that has no grace, by a natural man: thus the apostle Jude, speaking of certain *ungodly men*, that had crept in unawares among the saints, vers. 4. of his epistle, says, vers. 19. *These are sensual, having not the Spirit.* This the apostle gives as a reason why they behaved themselves in such a wicked manner as he had described. Here the word translated *sensual*, in the original is *natural*; which is the very same, which in those verses in 1 Cor. chap. ii. is translated *natural*. In the like manner, in the continuation of the same discourse, in the next verse but one, *spiritual men* are opposed to *carnal men*; which the connection plainly shews mean the same, as *spiritual men* and *natural men*, in the foregoing verses; *And I, brethren, could not speak unto you, as unto spiritual, but as unto carnal; i. e.* as in a great measure un sanctified. That by *carnal* the apostle means corrupt and un sanctified, is abundantly evident, by Rom. vii. 25. and viii. 1, 4, 5, 6, 7, 8, 9, 12, 13. Gal. v. 16. to the end. Col. ii. 18. Now therefore, if by natural and carnal, in these texts, be intended *un sanctified*, then doubtless by spiritual, which is opposed thereto, is meant *sanctified* and gracious.

And as the saints are called spiritual in scripture, so we also find that there are certain properties, qualities, and principles, that have the same epithet given them. So we read of a *spiritual mind*, Rom. viii. 6, 7. and of *spiritual wisdom*, Col. i. 9. and of *spiritual blessings*, Eph. i. 3.

Now it may be observed, that the epithet *spiritual*, in these and other parallel texts of the New Testament, is not used to signify any relation of persons or things to the spirit or soul of man, as the spiritual part of man, in opposition to the body, which is the material part. Qualities are not said to be spiritual, because they have their seat in the soul, and not in the body: for there are some properties that the scripture calls *carnal* or *fleshly*, which have their seat as much in the soul, as those properties that are called *spiritual*. Thus it is with pride and self-righteousness, and a man's trusting to his own wisdom, which the apostle calls *fleshly*, Col. ii. 18. Nor are things called spiritual, because they are conversant about those things that are immaterial, and not corporeal. For so was the wisdom of the wise men, and princes of this world, conversant about spirits, and immaterial beings; which yet the apostle speaks of as *natural men*, totally ignorant of those things that are *spiritual*,
1 Cor.

1 Cor. chap. ii. But it is with relation to the *Holy Ghost*, or *Spirit of God*, that persons or things are termed spiritual, in the New Testament. *Spirit*, as the word is used to signify the third person in the Trinity, is the substantive, of which is formed the adjective *spiritual*, in the holy scriptures. Thus Christians are called spiritual persons, because they are born of the Spirit, and because of the indwelling and holy influences of the Spirit of God in them. And things are called spiritual as related to the Spirit of God; 1 Cor. ii. 13, 14. "Which things also we speak, not in the words which man's wisdom teacheth, but which the Holy Ghost teacheth; comparing spiritual things with spiritual. But the natural man receiveth not the things of the Spirit of God." Here the apostle himself expressly signifies, that by *spiritual things*, he means *the things of the Spirit of God*, and *things which the Holy Ghost teacheth*. The same is yet more abundantly apparent by viewing the whole context. Again, Rom. viii. 6. "To be carnally minded, is death; but to be *spiritually minded*, is life and peace." The apostle explains what he means by being carnally and spiritually minded, in what follows in the 9th verse, and shews that by being spiritually minded, he means a having the indwelling and holy influences of the Spirit of God in the heart. *But ye are not in the flesh, but in the Spirit, if so be the Spirit of God dwell in you. Now if any man have not the Spirit of Christ, he is none of his.* The same is evident by all the context. But time would fail to produce all the evidence there is of this, in the New Testament.

And it must be here observed, that although it is with relation to the Spirit of God and his influences, that persons and things are called spiritual; yet not all those persons who are subject to any kind of influence of the Spirit of God, are ordinarily called spiritual in the New Testament. They who have only the common influences of God's Spirit, are not so called, in the places cited above, but only those, who have the special, gracious and saving influences of God's Spirit: as is evident, because it has been already proved, that by spiritual men is meant godly men, in opposition to natural, carnal and unfancified men. And it is most plain, that the apostle by *spiritually minded*, Rom. viii. 6. means graciously minded. And though the extraordinary gifts of the Spirit, which natural men might have, are sometimes called spiritual, because they are from the Spirit; yet natural men, whatever gifts of the Spirit they had,

were

were not, in the usual language of the New Testament, called spiritual persons. For it was not by mens having the gifts of the Spirit, but by their having the virtues of the Spirit, that they were called spiritual; as is apparent, by Gal. vi. 1. "Brethren, if any man be overtaken in a fault, ye which are spiritual, restore such an one in the spirit of meekness." Meekness is one of those virtues which the apostle had just spoken of, in the verses next preceding, shewing what are the *fruits of the Spirit*. Those qualifications are said to be spiritual in the language of the New Testament, which are truly gracious and holy, and peculiar to the saints.

Thus when we read of spiritual wisdom and understanding, (as in Col. i. 9. *We desire that ye may be filled with the knowledge of his will*, in all wisdom and spiritual understanding;) hereby is intended that wisdom which is gracious, and from the sanctifying influences of the Spirit of God. For doubtless, by *spiritual wisdom*, is meant that which is opposite to what the scripture calls *natural wisdom*; as the *spiritual man* is opposed to the *natural man*. And therefore spiritual wisdom is doubtless the same with that wisdom which is from above, that the apostle James speaks of, Jam. iii. 17. "The wisdom that is from above, is first pure, then peaceable, gentle, &c." for this the apostle opposes to natural wisdom, vers. 15. "This wisdom descendeth not from above, but is earthly, sensual"—the last word in the original is the same that is translated *natural*, in 1 Cor. ii. 14.

So that although natural men may be the subjects of many influences of the Spirit of God, as is evident by many scriptures, as Numb. xxiv. 2. 1 Sam. x. 10. and xi. 6. and xvi. 14. 1 Cor. xiii. 1, 2, 3. Heb. vi. 4, 5, 6. and many others; yet they are not in the sense of the scripture, spiritual persons; neither are any of those effects, common gifts, qualities or affections, that are from the influence of the Spirit of God upon them, called spiritual things. * The great difference lies in these two things.

1. The Spirit of God is given to the true saints to dwell in them, as his proper lasting abode; and to influence their hearts, as a principle of new nature, or as a divine supernatural spring of life and action. The scriptures represent the Holy Spirit, not only as moving, and occasionally influencing the saints, but as dwelling in them as his temple, his proper abode, and everlasting dwelling-place, 1 Cor. iii. 16. 2 Cor. vi. 16. John xiv.

16, 17. And he is represented as being there so united to the faculties of the soul, that he becomes there a principle or spring of new nature and life.

So the saints are said to live by Christ living in them, Gal. ii. 20. Christ by his Spirit not only *is* in them, but *lives* in them; and so that they live by his life; so is his Spirit united to them, as a principle of life in them; they do not only drink living water, but this *living water becomes a well or fountain of water*, in the soul; *springing up into spiritual and everlasting life*, John iv. 14. and thus becomes a principle of life in them: this living water, this evangelist himself explains to intend the Spirit of God, Chap. vii. 38, 39. The light of the Sun of righteousness does not only shine upon them, but is so communicated to them that they shine also, and become little images of that Sun which shines upon them; the sap of the true vine is not only conveyed into them, as the sap of a tree may be conveyed into a vessel, but is conveyed as sap is from a tree into one of its living branches, where it becomes a principle of life. The Spirit of God being thus communicated and united to the saints, they are from thence properly denominated from it, and are called *spiritual*.

On the other hand, though the Spirit of God may many ways influence natural men; yet because it is not thus communicated to them, as an indwelling principle, they do not derive any denomination or character from it; for there being no union it is not their own. The light may shine upon a body that is very dark or black; and though that body be the subject of the light, yet, because the light becomes no principle of light in it, so as to cause the body to shine, hence that body does not properly receive its denomination from it, so as to be called a *lightsome body*. So the Spirit of God acting upon the soul only, without communicating itself to be an active principle in it, cannot denominate it *spiritual*. A body that continues black, may be said *not to have light*, though the light shines upon it: so natural men are said *not to have the Spirit*, Jude 19. *sensual or natural*, (as the word is elsewhere rendered,) *having not the Spirit*.

2. Another reason why the saints and their virtues are called spiritual, (which is the principal thing,) is, that the Spirit of God, dwelling as a vital principle in their souls, there produces those effects wherein he exerts and communicates himself in
his

his own *proper nature*. Holiness is the nature of the Spirit of God, therefore he is called in scripture the *Holy Ghost*. Holiness, which is as it were the beauty and sweetness of the divine nature, is as much the proper nature of the Holy Spirit, as heat is the nature of fire, or sweetness was the nature of that holy anointing oil, which was the principal type of the Holy Ghost in the Mosaic dispensation; yea, I may rather say, that holiness is as much the proper nature of the Holy Ghost, as sweetness was the nature of the sweet odour of that ointment. The Spirit of God so dwells in the hearts of the saints, that he there, as a seed or spring of life, exerts and communicates himself, in this his sweet and divine nature, making the soul a partaker of God's beauty and Christ's joy, so that the saint has truly fellowship *with* the Father, and with his Son Jesus Christ, in thus having the communion or participation *of* the Holy Ghost. The grace which is in the hearts of the saints, is of the same nature with the divine holiness, as much as it is possible for that holiness to be, which is infinitely less in degree; as the brightness that is in a diamond which the sun shines upon, is of the same nature with the brightness of the sun, but only that it is as nothing to it in degree. Therefore Christ says, John iii. 6. "That which is born of the Spirit, is spirit;" *i. e.* the grace that is begotten in the hearts of the saints, is something of the same nature with that Spirit, and so is properly called a *spiritual nature*; after the same manner as that which is born of the flesh is flesh, or that which is born of corrupt nature is corrupt nature.

But the Spirit of God never influences the minds of natural men after this manner. Though he may influence them many ways, yet he never, in any of his influences, communicates himself to them in his own proper nature. Indeed he never acts disagreeably to his nature, either on the minds of saints or sinners: but the Spirit of God may act upon men agreeably to his own nature, and not exert his proper nature in the acts and exercises of their minds; the Spirit of God may act so, that his actions may be agreeable to his nature, and yet may not at all communicate himself in his proper nature, in the effect of that action. Thus, for instance, the Spirit of God moved upon the face of the waters, and there was nothing disagreeable to his nature in that action; but yet he did not at all communicate himself in that action, there was nothing of the proper nature of the Holy Spirit in
that

that motion of the waters. And so he may act upon the minds of men many ways, and not communicate himself any more than when he acts on inanimate things.

Thus not only the manner of the *relation* of the Spirit, who is the *operator*, to the subject of his operations, is different; as the Spirit operates in the saints, as dwelling in them, as an abiding principle of action, whereas he doth not so operate upon sinners; but the influence and *operation itself* is different, and the *effect wrought* exceeding different. So that not only the persons are called *spiritual*, as having the Spirit of God dwelling in them; but those qualifications, affections, and experiences that are wrought in them by the Spirit, are also *spiritual*, and therein differ vastly in their nature and kind from all that a natural man is or can be the subject of, while he remains in a natural state; and also from all that men or devils can be the authors of. It is a spiritual work in this high sense; and therefore above all other works is peculiar to the Spirit of God. There is no work so high and excellent; for there is no work wherein God doth so much communicate himself, and wherein the mere creature hath, in so high a sense, a participation of God; so that it is expressed in scripture by the saints "being made partakers of the divine nature," 2 Pet. i. 4. and "having God dwelling in them, and they in God," 1 John iv. 12, 15, 16. and chap. iii. 21. "and having Christ in them," John xvii. 21. Rom. viii. 10. "being the temples of the living God," 2 Cor. vi. 16. "living by Christ's life," Gal. ii. 20. "being made partakers of God's holiness," Heb. xii. 10. "having Christ's love dwelling in them," John xvii. 26. "having his joy fulfilled in them," John xvii. 13. "seeing light in God's light, and being made to drink of the river of God's pleasures," Psal. xxxvi. 8, 9. "having fellowship with God, or communicating and partaking with him," (as the word signifies,) 1 John i. 3. Not that the saints are made partakers of the essence of God, and so are *godded* with God, and *christed* with Christ, according to the abominable and blasphemous language and notions of some heretics; but, to use the scripture phrase, they are made partakers of God's *fulness*, Eph. iii. 17, 18, 19. John i. 16. that is, of God's spiritual beauty and happiness, according to the measure and capacity of a creature; for so it is evident the word *fulness* signifies in scripture-language. Grace in the hearts of the saints, being therefore the most glorious work of God, wherein he communicates of the goodness of his nature, it is doubtless his peculiar work, and

in an eminent manner, above the power of all creatures. And the influences of the Spirit of God in this, being thus peculiar to God, and being those wherein God does, in so high a manner, communicate himself, and make the creature partake of the divine nature, (the Spirit of God communicating itself in its own proper nature;) this is what I mean by those influences that are *divine*, when I say that *truly gracious affections do arise from those influences that are spiritual and divine.*

The true saints only have that which is spiritual; others have nothing which is divine, in the sense that has been spoken of. They not only have not these communications of the Spirit of God in so high a *degree* as the saints, but have nothing of that *nature or kind*. For the apostle James tells us, that *natural men have not the Spirit*; and Christ teaches the necessity of a new birth, or being born of the Spirit, from this, that *he that is born of the flesh, has only flesh, and no spirit*, John iii. 6. They have not the Spirit of God dwelling in them in any degree; for the apostle teaches, that all who have the Spirit of God dwelling in them are some of his, Rom. viii. 9—11. And an having the Spirit of God is spoken of as a certain sign that persons shall have the eternal inheritance; for it is spoken of as the earnest of it, 2 Cor. i. 22. and v. 5. Eph. i. 14. and an having any thing *of the Spirit* is mentioned as a sure sign of being in Christ, 1 John iv. 13. "Hereby know we that we dwell in him, because he hath given us *of his Spirit*." Ungodly men, not only have not so much of the divine nature as the saints, but they are not *partakers of it*; which implies that they have nothing of it; for a being *partaker* of the divine nature is spoken of as the peculiar privilege of the true saints, 2 Pet. i. 4. Ungodly men are not *partakers of God's holiness*, Heb. xii. 10. A natural man has no experience of any of those things that are spiritual: the apostle teaches us that he is so far from it, that he knows nothing about them, he is a perfect stranger to them, the talk about such things is all foolishness and nonsense to him, he knows not what it means, 1 Cor. ii. 14. "The natural man receiveth not the things of the Spirit of God; for they are foolishness to him: neither can he know them, because they are spiritually discerned." And to the like purpose Christ teaches us that the world is wholly unacquainted with the Spirit of God, John xiv. 17. "Even the Spirit of truth, whom the world cannot receive, because it seeth him not, neither knoweth him." And it is further evident, that natural men have nothing in them of the same

nature with the true grace of the saints, because the apostle teaches us, that those of them who go farthest in religion, have *no charity*, or true Christian love, 1 Cor. chap. xiii. So Christ elsewhere reproves the Pharisees, those high pretenders to religion, that they *had not the love of God in them*, John v. 42. Hence natural men have no communion or fellowship with Christ, or participation with him, (as these words signify,) for this is spoken of as the peculiar privilege of the saints, 1 John i. 3. together with vers. 6, 7. and 1 Cor. i. 8, 9. And the scripture speaks of the actual being of a gracious principle in the soul, though in its first beginning, as a seed there planted, as inconsistent with a man's being a sinner, 1 John iii. 9. And natural men are represented in scripture, as having no spiritual light, no spiritual life, and no spiritual being; and therefore conversion is often compared to opening the eyes of the blind, raising the dead, and a work of creation, (wherein creatures are made entirely new,) and becoming new-born children.

From these things it is evident, that those gracious influences which the saints are the subjects of, and the effects of God's Spirit which they experience, are entirely above nature, altogether of a different kind from any thing that men find within themselves by nature, or only in the exercise of natural principles; and are things which no improvement of those qualifications, or principles that are natural, no advancing or exalting them to higher degrees, and no kind of composition of them, will ever bring men to; because they not only differ from what is natural, and from every thing that natural men experience, in degree and circumstances, but also in kind; and are of a nature vastly more excellent. And this is what I mean by *supernatural*, when I say, that *gracious affections are from those influences that are supernatural*.

From hence it follows, that in those gracious exercises and affections which are wrought in the minds of the saints, through the saving influences of the Spirit of God, there is a new inward *perception or sensation* of their minds, entirely different in its nature and kind, from any thing that ever their minds were the subjects of before they were sanctified. For doubtless if God by his mighty power produces something that is new, not only in degree and circumstances, but in its whole nature, and that which could be produced by no exalting, varying, or compounding of what was there before, or by adding any thing of the like kind; I say, if God produces something thus new in

a mind, that is a perceiving, thinking, conscious thing; then doubtless something entirely new is felt, or perceived, or thought; or, which is the same thing, there is some new sensation or perception of the mind, which is entirely of a new sort, and which could be produced by no exalting, varying, or compounding of that kind of perceptions or sensations which the mind had before; or there is what some metaphysicians call a new *simple idea*. If grace be, in the sense above described, an entirely new kind of principle; then the exercises of it are also entirely a new kind of exercises. And if there be in the soul a new sort of exercises which it is conscious of, which the soul knew nothing of before, and which no improvement, composition, or management of what it was before conscious or sensible of, could produce, or any thing like it; then it follows, that the mind has an entirely new kind of perception or sensation: and here is, as it were, a new *spiritual sense* that the mind has, or a principle of new kind of perception or spiritual sensation, which is in its whole nature different from any former kinds of sensation of the mind, as tasting is diverse from any of the other senses; and something is perceived by a true saint, in the exercise of this new sense of mind, in spiritual and divine things, as entirely diverse from any thing that is perceived in them, by natural men, as the sweet taste of honey is diverse from the ideas men get of honey by only looking on it, and feeling of it. So that the spiritual perceptions which a sanctified and spiritual person has, are not only diverse from all that natural men have, after the manner that the ideas or perceptions of the same sense may differ one from another, but rather as the ideas and sensations of different senses do differ. Hence the work of the Spirit of God in regeneration is often in scripture compared to the giving a new sense, giving eyes to see, and ears to hear, unstopping the ears of the deaf, and opening the eyes of them that were born blind, and turning from darkness unto light. And because this spiritual sense is immensely the most noble and excellent, and that without which all other principles of perception, and all our faculties are useless and vain; therefore the giving this new sense, with the blessed fruits and effects of it in the soul, is compared to a raising the dead, and to a new creation.

This new spiritual sense, and the new dispositions that attend it, are no new *faculties*, but are new *principles* of nature. I use the word *principles*, for want of a word of a more deter-

minate signification. By a *principle of nature* in this place, I mean that foundation which is laid in nature, either old or new, for any particular manner or kind of exercise of the faculties of the soul; or a natural habit, or foundation for action, giving a person ability and disposition to exert the faculties in exercises of such a certain kind; so that to exert the faculties in that kind of exercises, may be said to be his nature. So this new spiritual sense is not a new faculty of understanding, but it is a new foundation laid in the nature of the soul, for a new kind of exercises of the same faculty of understanding. So that new holy disposition of heart that attends this new sense, is not a new faculty of will, but a foundation laid in the nature of the soul, for a new kind of exercises of the same faculty of will.

The Spirit of God, in all his operations upon the minds of natural men, only moves, impresses, assists, improves, or some way acts upon *natural principles*; but gives no new *spiritual principle*. Thus when the Spirit of God gives a natural man visions, as he did Balaam, he only impresses a natural principle, *viz.* the sense of seeing, immediately exciting ideas of that sense; but he gives no new sense; neither is there any thing supernatural, spiritual or divine in it. So if the Spirit of God impresses on a man's imagination, either in a dream, or when he is awake, any outward ideas of any of the senses, either voices, or shapes and colours, it is only exciting ideas of the same kind that he has by natural principles and senses. So if God reveals to any natural man, any secret fact; as for instance, something that he shall hereafter see or hear; this is not infusing or exercising any new spiritual principle, or giving the ideas of any new spiritual sense; it is only impressing, in an extraordinary manner, the ideas that will hereafter be received by sight and hearing. So in the more ordinary influences of the Spirit of God on the hearts of sinners, he only assists natural principles to do the same work to a greater degree, which they do of themselves by nature. Thus the Spirit of God by his common influences may assist mens natural ingeniosity, as he assisted Bezaleel and Aholiab in the curious works of the tabernacle: so he may assist mens natural abilities in political affairs, and improve their courage, and other natural qualifications; as he is said to have put his spirit on the seventy elders, and on Saul, so as to *give him another heart*: so God may greatly assist natural mens reason, in their reasoning about secular things, or
about

about the doctrines of religion, and may greatly advance the clearness of their apprehensions and notions of things of religion in many respects, without giving any spiritual sense. So in those awakenings and convictions that natural men may have, God only assists conscience, which is a natural principle, to do that work in a further degree, which it naturally does. Conscience naturally gives men an apprehension of right and wrong, and suggests the relation there is between right and wrong, and a retribution: the Spirit of God assists mens consciences to do this in a greater degree, helps conscience against the stupifying influence of worldly objects and their lusts. And so there are many other ways might be mentioned wherein the Spirit acts upon, assists and moves natural principles; but after all, it is no more than nature moved, acted, and improved; here is nothing supernatural and divine. But the Spirit of God in his spiritual influences on the hearts of his saints, operates by infusing or exercising new, divine and supernatural principles; principles which are indeed a new and spiritual nature, and principles vastly more noble and excellent than all that is in natural men.

From what has been said it follows, that all spiritual and gracious affections are attended with, and do arise from some apprehension, idea, or sensation of mind, which is in its whole nature different, yea exceeding different from all that is or can be in the mind of a natural man; and which the natural man discerns nothing of, and has no manner of idea of, (agreeable to 1 Cor. ii. 14.) and conceives of no more than a man without the sense of tasting can conceive of the sweet taste of honey, or a man without the sense of hearing can conceive of the melody of a tune, or a man born blind can have a notion of the beauty of the rainbow.

But here two things must be observed, in order to the right understanding of this.

1. On the one hand it must be observed, that not every thing which in any respect appertains to spiritual affections, is new and entirely different from what natural men can conceive of, and do experience; some things are common to gracious affections with other affections; many circumstances, appendages, and effects are common. Thus a saint's love to God has a great many things appertaining to it, which are common with a man's natural love to a near relation: love to God makes a man have desires of the honour of God, and a desire to please him; so does a natural man's love to his friend make him de-

fire his honour, and desire to please him: love to God causes a man to delight in the thoughts of God, and to delight in the presence of God, and to desire conformity to God, and the enjoyment of God; and so it is with a man's love to his friend: and many other things might be mentioned which are common to both. But yet that idea which the saint has of the loveliness of God, and that sensation, and that kind of delight he has in that view, which is as it were the marrow and quintessence of his love, is peculiar, and entirely diverse from any thing that a natural man has, or can have any notion of. And even in those things that seem to be common, there is something peculiar: both spiritual love and natural, cause desires after the object beloved; but they be not the same sort of desires; there is a sensation of soul in the spiritual desires of one that loves God, which is entirely different from all natural desires: both spiritual love and natural love are attended with delight in the object beloved; but the sensations of delight are not the same, but entirely and exceedingly diverse. Natural men may have conceptions of many things *about* spiritual affections; but there is something in them which is as it were the *nucleus*, or kernal of them, that they have no more conceptions of, than one born blind has of colours.

It may be clearly illustrated by this: we will suppose two men; one is born without the sense of tasting, the other has it; the latter loves honey, and is greatly delighted in it, because he knows the sweet taste of it; the other loves certain sounds and colours; the love of each has many things that appertain to it, which is common; it causes both to desire and delight in the object beloved, and causes grief when it is absent, &c.—but yet that idea or sensation which he who knows the taste of honey, has of its excellency and sweetness, that is the foundation of his love, is entirely different from any thing the other has or can have; and that delight which he has in honey, is wholly diverse from any thing that the other can conceive of; though they both delight in their beloved objects. So both these persons may in some respects love the same object: the one may love a delicious kind of fruit, which is beautiful to the eye, and of a delicious taste; not only because he has seen its pleasant colours, but knows its sweet taste; the other, perfectly ignorant of this, loves it only for its beautiful colours: there are many things seem, in some respect, to be common to both; both love, both desire, and both delight; but the love, and desire, and delight of the one, is altogether diverse from that of the other.

The

The difference between the love of a natural man and spiritual man is like to this ; but only it must be observed, that in one respect it is vastly greater, *viz.* that the kinds of excellency which are perceived in spiritual objects, by these different kinds of persons, are in themselves vastly more diverse than the different kinds of excellency perceived in delicious fruit, by a *tasting* and a *tasteless* man ; and in another respect it may not be so great, *viz.* as the spiritual man may have a spiritual sense or taste, to perceive that divine and most peculiar excellency, but in small beginnings, and in a very imperfect degree.

2. On the other hand, it must be observed, that a natural man may have those religious apprehensions and affections, which may be in many respects very new and surprising to him, and what before he did not conceive of ; and yet what he experiences be nothing like the exercises of a principle of new nature, or the sensations of a new spiritual sense : his affections may be very new, by extraordinarily moving natural principles, in a very new degree, and with a great many new circumstances, and a new co-operation of natural affections, and a new composition of ideas ; this may be from some extraordinary powerful influence of Satan, and some great delusion ; but there is nothing but nature extraordinarily acted. As if a poor man, that had always dwelt in a cottage, and had never looked beyond the obscure village where he was born, should in a jest, be taken to a magnificent city and prince's court, and there arrayed in princely robes, and set in the throne, with the crown royal on his head, peers and nobles bowing before him, and should be made to believe that he was now a glorious monarch ; the ideas he would have, and the affections he would experience, would in many respects be very new, and such as he had no imagination of before ; but all is no more, than only extraordinarily raising and exciting natural principles, and newly exalting, varying, and compounding such sort of ideas, as he has by nature ; here is nothing like giving him a new sense.

Upon the whole, I think it is clearly manifest, that all truly gracious affections do arise from special and peculiar influences of the Spirit, working that *sensible effect* or *sensation* in the souls of the saints, which are entirely different from all that is possible a natural man should experience, not only different in degree and circumstances, but different in its whole nature : so that a natural man not only cannot experience that which is individually the same, but cannot experience any thing but

what

what is exceeding diverse, and immensely below it, in its kind; and that which the power of men or devils is not sufficient to produce the like of, or any thing of the same nature.

I have insisted largely on this matter, because it is of great importance and use, evidently to discover and demonstrate the delusions of Satan, in many kinds of false religious affections, which multitudes are deluded by, and probably have been in all ages of the Christian church; and to settle and determine many articles of doctrine, concerning the operations of the Spirit of God, and the nature of true grace.

Now therefore, to apply these things to the purpose of this discourse.

From hence it appears, that impressions which some have made on their imagination, or the imaginary ideas which they have of God, or Christ, or heaven, or any thing appertaining to religion, have nothing in them that is spiritual, or of the nature of true grace. Though such things may attend what is spiritual, and be mixed with it, yet in themselves they have nothing that is spiritual, nor are they any part of gracious experience.

Here, for the sake of the common people, I will explain what is intended by *impressions on the imagination*, and *imaginary ideas*. The imagination is that power of the mind, whereby it can have a conception, or idea of things of an external or outward nature, (that is, of such sort of things as are the objects of the outward senses,) when those things are not present, and be not perceived by the senses. It is called imagination from the word *image*; because thereby a person can have an image of some external thing in his mind, when that thing is not present in reality, nor any thing like it. All such kind of things as we perceive by our five external senses, *seeing*, *hearing*, *smelling*, *tasting*, and *feeling*, are external things; and when a person has an idea, or image of any of these sorts of things in his mind, when they are not there, and when he does not really see, hear, smell, taste, nor feel them; that is to have an *imagination* of them, and these ideas are *imaginary ideas*; and when such kind of ideas are strongly impressed upon the mind, and the image of them in the mind is very lively, almost as if one saw them, or heard them, &c. that is called an *impression on the imagination*. Thus colours, and shapes, and a form of countenance, they are outward things; because they are that sort of things which are the objects of the
outward

outward sense of seeing: and therefore when any person has in his mind a lively idea of any shape, or colour, or form of countenance; that is to have an imagination of those things. So if he has an idea, of such sort of light or darkness, as he perceives by the sense of seeing; that is to have an idea of outward light, and so is an imagination. So if he has an idea of any marks made on paper, suppose letters and words written in a book; that is to have an external and imaginary idea of such kind of things as we sometimes perceive by our bodily eyes. And when we have the ideas of that kind of things which we perceive by any of the other senses, as of any sounds or voices, or words spoken; this is only to have ideas of outward things, *viz.* of such kind of things as are perceived by the external sense of hearing, and so that also is imagination: and when these ideas are lively impressed, almost as if they were really heard with the ears, this is to have an impression on the imagination. And so I might go on; and instance in the ideas of things appertaining to the other three senses of *smelling, tasting, and feeling.*

Many who have had such things have very ignorantly supposed them to be of the nature of spiritual discoveries. They have had lively ideas of some external shape, and beautiful form of countenance; and this they call spiritually seeing Christ. Some have had impressed upon them ideas of a great outward light; and this they call a spiritual discovery of God's or Christ's glory. Some have had ideas of Christ's hanging on the cross, and his blood running from his wounds; and this they call a spiritual sight of Christ crucified, and the way of salvation by his blood. Some have seen him with his arms open ready to embrace them; and this they call a discovery of the sufficiency of Christ's grace and love. Some have had lively ideas of heaven, and of Christ on his throne there, and shining ranks of saints and angels; and this they call seeing heaven opened to them. Some from time to time have had a lively idea of a person of a beautiful countenance smiling upon them; and this they call a spiritual discovery of the love of Christ to their souls, and tasting the love of Christ. And they look upon it a sufficient evidence that these things are spiritual discoveries, and that they see them spiritually, because they say they do not see these things with their bodily eyes, but in their hearts; for they can see them when their eyes are shut. And in like manner, the imaginations of some have been impressed with

with ideas of the sense of hearing; they have had ideas of words, as if they were spoke to them, sometimes they are the words of scripture, and sometimes other words: they have had ideas of Christ's speaking comfortable words to them. These things they have called having the inward call of Christ, hearing the voice of Christ spiritually in their hearts, having the witness of the Spirit, and the inward testimony of the love of Christ, &c.

The common, and less considerate and understanding sort of people, are the more easily led into apprehensions that these things are spiritual things, because spiritual things being invisible, and not things that can be pointed forth with the finger, we are forced to use figurative expressions in speaking of them, and to borrow names from external and sensible objects to signify them by. Thus we call a clear apprehension of things spiritual by the name of *light*; and an having such an apprehension of such or such things, by the name of *seeing* such things; and the conviction of the judgment, and the persuasion of the will, by the word of Christ in the gospel, we signify by *spiritually hearing the call of Christ*: and the scripture itself abounds with such like figurative expressions. Persons hearing these often used, and having pressed upon them the necessity of having their eyes opened, and having a discovery of spiritual things, and seeing Christ in his glory, and having the inward call, and the like, they ignorantly look and wait for some such external discoveries, and imaginary views as have been spoken of; and when they have them, are confident that now their eyes are opened, now Christ has discovered himself to them, and they are his children; and hence are exceedingly affected and elevated with their deliverance and happiness, and many kinds of affections are at once set in a violent motion in them.

But it is exceeding apparent that such ideas have nothing in them which is spiritual and divine, in the sense wherein it has been demonstrated that all gracious experiences are spiritual and divine. These external ideas are in no wise of such a sort, that they are entirely, and in their whole nature diverse from all that men have by nature, perfectly different from, and vastly above any sensation which it is possible a man should have by any natural sense or principle, so that in order to have them, a man must have a new spiritual and divine sense given him, in order to have any sensations of that sort: so far from this,
that

that they are ideas of the same sort which we have by the external senses, that are some of the inferior powers of the human nature; they are merely ideas of external objects, or ideas of that nature, of the same outward sensitive kind; the same sort of sensations of mind (differing not in degree, but only in circumstances) that we have by those natural principles which are common to us with the beasts, *viz.* the five external senses. This is a low, miserable notion of spiritual sense, to suppose that it is only a conceiving or imagining that sort of ideas which we have by our animal senses, which senses the beasts have in as great perfection as we; it is, as it were, a turning Christ, or the divine nature in the soul, into a mere animal. There is nothing wanting in the soul, as it is by nature, to render it capable of being the subject of all these external ideas, without any new principles. A natural man is capable of having an idea, and a lively idea of shapes, and colours, and sounds when they are absent, and as capable as a regenerate man is: so there is nothing supernatural in them. And it is known by abundant experience, that it is not the advancing or perfecting human nature, which makes persons more capable of having such lively and strong imaginary ideas, but that on the contrary, the weakness of body and mind, and distempers of body, makes persons abundantly more susceptible of such impressions. *

As to a truly spiritual sensation, not only is the manner of its coming into the mind extraordinary, but the sensation itself is totally diverse from all that men have, or can have, in a state of nature, as has been shown. But as to these external ideas, though the way of their coming into the mind is sometimes unusual, yet the ideas in themselves are not the better for that; they are still of no different sort from what men have by their senses; they are of no higher kind, nor a whit better.
For

* “ Conceits and whimsies abound most in men of weak reason; children, and such as are cracked in their understanding, have most of them; strength of reason banishes them, as the sun does mists and vapours. But now the more rational any gracious person is, by so much more is he fixed and settled, and satisfied in the grounds of religion: yea, there is the highest and purest reason in religion; and when this change is wrought upon men, it is carried on in a rational way, *1st.* *1st.* *John* xix. 9.” *Flavel's Preparation for Sufferings*, Chap. vi.

For instance, the external idea a man has now of Christ hanging on the cross, and shedding his blood, is no better in itself, than the external idea that the Jews his enemies had, who stood round his cross, and saw this with their bodily eyes. The imaginary idea which men have now, of an external brightness and glory of God, is no better than the idea the wicked congregation in the wilderness had of the external glory of the Lord at mount Sinai, when they saw it with bodily eyes; or any better than that idea which millions of cursed reprobates will have of the external glory of Christ at the day of judgment, who shall see, and have a very lively idea of ten thousand times greater external glory of Christ, than ever yet was conceived in any man's imagination: † yea, the image of Christ, which men conceive in their imaginations, is not in its own nature, of any superior kind to the idea the Papists conceive of Christ, by the beautiful and affecting images of him which they see in their churches; (though the way of their receiving the idea may not be so bad;) nor are the affections they have, if built primarily on such imaginations, any better than the affections raised in the ignorant people, by the sight of those images, which oftentimes are very great; especially when these images, through the craft of the priests, are made to move, and speak, and weep, and the like. ‡ Merely the way

† “ If any man should see, and behold Christ really, immediately, this is not the saving knowledge of him. I know the saints do know Christ as if immediately present; they are not strangers by their distance: if others have seen him more immediately, I will not dispute it. But if they have seen the Lord Jesus as immediately as if here on earth, yet Capernaum saw him so; nay some of them were disciples for a time, and followed him, John vi. And yet the Lord was hid from their eyes. Nay, all the world shall see him in his glory, which shall amaze them; and yet this is far short of having the saving knowledge of him, which the Lord doth communicate to the elect. So that though you see the Lord so really, as that you become familiar with him, yet Luke xiii. 26. *Lord, have we not eat and drank, &c.—and so perish.*” *Shepard's Parable of the ten virgins*, P. I. p. 197, 198.

‡ “ Satan is transformed into an angel of light: and hence we have heard that some have heard voices; some have seen the very blood of Christ dropping on them, and his wounds in his side; some have seen a great light shining in the chamber; some wonderfully affected with their dreams; some in great distress have
“ had

way of persons receiving these imaginary ideas, do not alter the nature of the ideas themselves that are received: let them be received in what way they will, they are still but external ideas, or ideas of outward appearances, and so are not spiritual. Yea, if men should actually receive such external ideas by the immediate power of the most high God upon their minds, they would not be spiritual, they should be no more than a common work of the Spirit of God; as is evident in fact, in the instance of Balaam, who had impressed on his mind, by God himself, a clear and lively outward representation or idea of Jesus Christ, as *the Star rising out of Jacob*, when he heard the words of God, and knew the knowledge of the Most High, and saw the vision of the Almighty, falling into a trance, Numb. xxiv. 16, 17. but yet had no manner of spiritual discovery of Christ; that Day-star never spiritually rose in his heart, he being but a natural man.

And as these external ideas have nothing divine or spiritual in their nature, and nothing but what natural men, without any new principles, are capable of; so there is nothing in their nature which requires that peculiar, inimitable and unparalleled exercise of the glorious power of God, in order to their production, which it has been shown there is in the production of true grace. There appears to be nothing in their nature above the power of the devil. It is certainly not above the power of Satan to suggest thoughts to men; because otherwise he could not tempt them to sin. And if he can suggest any thoughts or ideas at all, doubtless imaginary ones, or ideas of things external are not above his power §; for the external ideas men have are the lowest sort of ideas. These ideas may be raised only by impressions made on the body, by moving

H h

the

“ had inward witness, *Thy sins are forgiven*; and hence such liberty and joy, that they are ready to leap up and down the chamber. “ O adulterous generation! this is natural and usual with men, they would fain see Jesus, and have him present to give them peace; and hence Papists have his images.—Wo to them that have no other manifested Christ, but such an one.” *Shepard's Parable of the ten virgins*. P. I. p. 198.

§ Consider how difficult, yea and impossible it is to determine that such a voice, vision, or revelation is of God, and that Satan cannot feign or counterfeit it; seeing he hath left no certain marks by which we may distinguish one spirit from another.” *Flavel's Causes and cures of mental errors*, Cause 14.

the animal spirits, and impressing the brain. Abundant experience does certainly show, that alterations in the body will excite imaginary or external ideas in the mind; as often, in case of a high fever, melancholy, &c. These external ideas are as much below the more intellectual exercises of the soul, as the body is a less noble part of man than the soul.

And there is not only nothing in the nature of these external ideas or imaginations of outward appearances, from whence we can infer that they are above the power of the devil; but it is certain also that the devil can excite, and often hath excited such ideas. They were external ideas which he excited in the dreams and visions of the false prophets of old, who were under the influence of lying spirits, that we often read of in scripture, as Deut. xiii. 1. 1 Kings xxii. 22. Is. xxviii. 7. Ezek. xiii. 7. Zech. xiii. 4. And they were external ideas that he often excited in the minds of the heathen priests, magicians and forcerers in their visions and ecstasies; and they were external ideas that he excited in the mind of the man Christ Jesus, when he shewed him all the kingdoms of the world, with the glory of them, when those kingdoms were not really in sight.

And if Satan, or any created being, has power to impress the mind with outward representations, then no particular sort of outward representations can be any evidence of a divine power. Almighty power is no more requisite to represent the shape of man to the imagination, than the shape of any thing else: there is no higher kind of power necessary to form in the brain one bodily shape or colour than another: it needs a no more glorious power to represent the form of the body of man, than the form of a chip or block; though it be of a very beautiful human body, with a sweet smile in his countenance, or arms open, or blood running from hands, feet, and side: that sort of power which can represent black or darkness to the imagination, can also represent white and shining brightness: the power and skill which can well and exactly paint a straw, or a stick of wood, on a piece of paper or canvas; the same in kind, only perhaps further improved, will be sufficient to paint the body of a man, with great beauty and in royal majesty, or a magnificent city, paved with gold, full of brightness, and a glorious throne, &c. So it is no more than the same sort of power that is requisite to paint one as the other of these on the brain. The same sort of power that can put ink upon paper,

can put on leaf-gold. So that it is evident to a demonstration, if we suppose it to be in the devil's power to make any sort of external representation at all on the fancy, (as without doubt it is, and never any one questioned it who believed there was a devil, that had any agency with mankind;) I say, if so, it is demonstrably evident, that a created power may extend to all kinds of external appearances and ideas in the mind.

From hence it again clearly appears, that no such things have any thing in them that is spiritual, supernatural, and divine, in the sense in which it has been proved that all truly gracious experiences have. And though external ideas, through man's make and frame, do ordinarily in some degree attend spiritual experiences, yet these ideas are no part of their spiritual experience, any more than the motion of the blood, and beating of the pulse, that attends experiences, are a part of spiritual experience. And though undoubtedly, through mens infirmity in the present state, and especially through the weak constitution of some persons, gracious affections which are very strong, do excite lively ideas in the imagination; yet it is also undoubted, that when persons affections are *founded on* imaginations, which is often the case, those affections are merely natural and common, because they are built on a foundation that is not spiritual; and so are entirely different from gracious affections, which, as has been proved, do evermore arise from those operations that are spiritual and divine.

These imaginations do oftentimes raise the carnal affections of men to an exceeding great height*: and no wonder, when the

* There is a remarkable passage of Mr. John Smith, in his discourse on the shortness of a Pharisaic righteousness, P. 370, 371. of his select discourses, describing that sort of religion which is built on such a foundation as I am here speaking of. I cannot forbear transcribing the whole of it. Speaking of a sort of Christians, whose life is nothing but a strong energy of fancy, he says, "Lest their religion might too grossly discover itself to be nothing else but a piece of art, there may be sometimes such extraordinary motions stirred up within them, which may prevent all their own thoughts, that they may seem to be a true operation of the divine life; when yet all this is nothing else but the energy of their own self-love, touched with some fleshly apprehensions of divine things, and excited by them. There are such things in our Christian religion, when a carnal, unhallowed mind takes the chair, and gets the expounding of them, may seem very delicious to the fleshly appetites of men; some doctrines and notions of free grace and justification, the magnificent titles of sons of God

the subjects of them have an ignorant, but undoubting persuasion, that they are divine manifestations, which the great JEHOVAH immediately makes to their souls, therein giving them testimonies, in an extraordinary manner, of his high and peculiar favour.

Again, it is evident from what has been observed and proved of the manner in which gracious operations and effects in the heart are spiritual, supernatural and divine, that the immediate suggesting of the words of scripture to the mind, has nothing in it which is spiritual.

I have had occasion to say something of this already; and what has been said may be sufficient to evince it: but if the reader bears in mind what has been said concerning the nature of spiritual influences and effects, it will be more abundantly manifest that this is no spiritual effect. For I suppose there is no person of common understanding, who will say or imagine, ~~that~~

God and heirs of heaven, ever-flowing streams of joy and pleasure that blessed souls shall swim in to all eternity, a glorious paradise in the world to come, always springing up with well-scented and fragrant beauties, a new Jerusalem paved with gold, and bespangled with stars, comprehending in its vast circuit such numberless varieties, that a busy curiosity may spend itself about to all eternity. I doubt not but that sometimes the most fleshly and earthly men, that fly in their ambition to the pomp of this world, may be so ravished with the conceits of such things as these, that they may seem to be made partakers of the powers of the world to come. I doubt not but that they might be much exalted with them, as the souls of crazed or distracted persons seem to be sometimes, when their fancies play with those quick and nimble spirits, which a distempered frame of body, and unnatural heat in their heads, beget within them. Thus may these blazing comets rise up above the moon, and climb higher than the sun; which yet, because they have no solid consistence of their own, and are of a base and earthly alloy, will soon vanish and fall down again, being only borne up by an external force. They may seem to themselves to have attained higher than those noble Christians, that are gently moved by the natural force of true goodness: they seem to be *pleniores Deo*, (*i. e.* more full of God) than those that are really informed and actuated by the divine Spirit, and do move on steadily and constantly in the way towards heaven. As the seed that was sown in stony ground, grew up, and lengthened out its blade faster, than that which was sown in the good and fruitful soil. And as the motions of our sense, and fancy, and passions, while our souls are in this mortal condition, sunk down deeply into the body, are many times more vigorous, and make stronger impressions upon us, ~~than~~

that the bringing words (let them be what words they will) to the mind, is an effect of that nature which it is impossible the mind of a natural man, while he remains in a state of nature, should be the subject of, or any thing like it; or that it requires any new divine sense in the soul; or that the bringing sounds or letters to the mind, is an effect of so high, holy and excellent a nature, that it is impossible any created power should be the cause of it.

As the suggesting words of scripture to the mind, is only the exciting in the mind ideas of certain sounds or letters; so it is only one way of exciting ideas in the imagination; for sounds and letters are external things, that are the objects of the external senses of seeing and hearing. Ideas of certain marks upon paper, such as any of the twenty-four letters, in whatever order, or any sounds of the voice, are as much external ideas, as of any other shapes or sounds whatsoever: and therefore, by what has been already said concerning these external ideas, it

is

than those of the higher powers of the soul, which are more subtil, and remote from these mixt animal perceptions: that devotion which is there seated, may seem to have more energy and life in it, than that which gently, and with a more delicate kind of touch, spreads itself upon the understanding, and from thence mildly derives itself through our wills and affections. But however the former may be more boisterous for a time, yet this is of a more consistent, spermatical, and thriving nature. For that proceeding indeed from nothing but a sensual and fleshly apprehension of God and true happiness, is but of a flitting and fading nature: and as the sensible powers and faculties grow more languid, or the sun of divine light shines more brightly upon us, these earthly devotions, like our culinary fires, will abate their heat and fervour. But a true celestial warmth will never be extinguished, because it is of an immortal nature; and being once seated vitally in the souls of men, it will regulate and order all the motions of it in a due manner; as the natural heat, radicated in the hearts of living creatures hath the dominion and œconomy of the whole body under it. True religion is no piece of artifice: it is no boiling up of our imaginative powers, nor the glowing heats of passion;--- though these are too often mistaken for it, when in our jugglings in religion we cast a mist before our own eyes: but it is a new nature, informing the souls of men; it is a godlike frame of spirit, discovering itself most of all in serene and clear minds, in deep humility, meekness, self-denial, universal love to God and all true goodness, without partiality, and without hypocrisy, whereby we are taught to know God, and knowing him to love him, and conform ourselves as much as may be to all that perfection which shines in him."

is evident they are nothing spiritual: and if at any time the Spirit of God suggests these letters or sounds to the mind, this is a *common*, and not any *special* or *gracious* influence of that Spirit. And therefore it follows from what has been already proved, that those affections which have this effect for their foundation, are no spiritual or gracious affections.—But let it be observed what it is that I say, *viz.* when this effect, even the immediate and extraordinary *manner of words of scripture's coming to the mind*, is that which excites the affections, and is properly the foundation of them, then these affections are not spiritual. It may be so, that persons may have gracious affections going with scriptures which come to their minds, and the Spirit of God may make use of those scriptures to excite them; when it is some spiritual sense, taste or relish they have of the divine and excellent things contained in those scriptures, that is the thing which excites their affections, and not the extraordinary and sudden manner of words being brought to their minds. They are affected with the instruction they receive from the words, and the view of the glorious things of God or Christ, and things appertaining to them, that they contain and teach; and not because the words came suddenly, as though some person had spoke them to them, thence concluding that God did as it were immediately speak to them. Persons oftentimes are exceedingly affected on this foundation; the words of some great and high promises of scripture come suddenly to their minds, and they look upon the words as directed immediately by God to them, as though the words that moment proceeded out of the mouth of God as spoken to them: so that they take it as a voice from God, immediately revealing to them their happy circumstances, and promising such and such great things to them: and this it is that affects and elevates them. There is no new spiritual understanding of the divine *things contained in the scripture*, or new spiritual sense of the glorious things taught in that part of the Bible, going before their affection, and being the foundation of it: all the new understanding they have, or think they have, to be the foundation of their affection, is this, that the words *are spoken to them*, because they come so suddenly and extraordinarily. And so this affection is built wholly on the sand; because it is built on a conclusion for which they have no foundation. For, as has been shown, the sudden coming of the words to their minds, is no evidence that the bringing them to their minds in that manner, was from God. And if it was true that God brought the words to their minds,

and

and they certainly knew it, that would not be spiritual knowlege; it may be without any spiritual sense: Balaam might know that the words which God suggested to him, were indeed suggested to him by God, and yet have no spiritual knowlege. So that these affections which are built on that notion, that texts of scripture are sent immediately from God, are built on no spiritual foundation, and are vain and delusive. Persons who have their affections thus raised, if they should be inquired of, whether they have any new sense of the excellency of things contained in those scriptures, would probably say, *Yes*, without hesitation: but it is true no otherwise than thus, that when they have taken up that notion, that the words are spoken immediately to them, that makes them seem sweet to them, and they own the things which these scriptures say to them, for excellent things, and wonderful things. As for instance, supposing these were the words which were suddenly brought to their minds, *Fear not, — it is your Father's good pleasure to give you the kingdom*; they having confidently taken up a notion that the words were as it were immediately spoken from heaven to them, as an immediate revelation, that God was their father, and had given the kingdom to them, they are greatly affected by it, and the words seem sweet to them; and oh, they say, *they are excellent things that are contained in those words!* But the reason why the promise seems excellent to them, is only because they think it is made to them immediately: all the sense they have of any glory in them, is only from self-love, and from their own imagined interest in the words: not that they had any view or sense of the holy and glorious nature of the kingdom of heaven, and the spiritual glory of that God who gives it, and of his excellent grace to sinful men, in offering and giving them this kingdom, of his own good pleasure, preceding their imagined interest in these things, and their being affected by them, and being the foundation of their affection, and hope of an interest in them. On the contrary, they first imagine they are interested, and then are highly affected with that, and then can own these things to be excellent. So that the sudden and extraordinary way of the scripture's coming to their mind, is plainly the first foundation of the whole; which is a clear evidence of the wretched delusion they are under.

The first comfort of many persons, and what they call their conversion, is after this manner: after awakening and terrors, some comfortable sweet promise comes suddenly and wonderfully to their minds; and the manner of its coming makes
them

them conclude it comes from God *to them*: and this is the very thing that is all the foundation of their faith, and hope, and comfort: from hence they take their first encouragement to trust in God and in Christ, because they think that God, by some scripture so brought, has now already revealed to them that he loves them, and has already promised them eternal life; which is very absurd; for every one of common knowledge of the principles of religion, knows that it is God's manner to reveal his love to men, and their interest in the promises, after they have believed, and not before; because they must first believe, before they have any interest in the promises to be revealed. The Spirit of God is a Spirit of truth, and not of lies: he does not bring scriptures to mens minds, to reveal to them that they have an interest in God's favor and promises, when they have none, having not yet believed: which would be the case, if God's bringing texts of scripture to mens minds, to reveal to them that their sins were forgiven, or that it was God's pleasure to give them the kingdom, or any thing of that nature, went before, and was the foundation of their first faith. There is no promise of the covenant of grace belongs to any man, until he has first believed in Christ; for it is by faith alone that we become interested in Christ, and the promises of the new covenant made in him: and therefore whatever spirit applies the promises of that covenant to a person who has not first believed, as being already his, must be a lying spirit; and that faith which is first built on such an application of promises, is built upon a lie. God's manner is not to bring comfortable texts of scripture to give men *assurance* of his love, and that they shall be happy, before they have had a faith of *dependence*.† And if the scripture which comes to a person's

† Mr. Stoddard, in his *Guide to Christ*, p. 8. says, that "sometimes men after they have been in trouble a while, have some promises come to them, with a great deal of refreshing; and they hope God has accepted them:" And says, that "In this case, the minister may tell them, that God never gives a faith of assurance, before he gives a faith of dependence; for he never manifests his love, until men are in a state of favor and reconciliation, which is by faith of dependence. When men have comfortable scriptures come to them, they are apt to take them as tokens of God's love; but men must be brought into Christ, by accepting the offer of the gospel, before they are fit for such manifestations. God's method is, first to make the soul accept of the offers of grace, and then to manifest

person's mind, be not so properly a promise, as an invitation; yet if he makes the sudden or unusual manner of the invitation's coming to his mind, the ground on which he believes that he is invited, it is not true faith; because it is built on that which is not the true ground of faith. True faith is built on no precarious foundation: but a determination that the words of such a particular text, were, by the immediate power of God, suggested to the mind, at such a time, as though then spoken and directed by God to him, because the words came after such a manner, is wholly an uncertain and precarious determination, as has been now shown; and therefore is a false and sandy foundation for faith; and accordingly that faith which is built upon it is false. The only certain foundation which any person has to believe that he is invited to partake of the blessings of the gospel, is, that the word of God declares

I i that

fest his good estate unto him." And p. 76. speaking of them "that seem to be brought to lie at God's foot, and give an account of their closing with Christ, and that God has revealed Christ to them, and drawn their hearts to him, and that they do accept of Christ," he says, "In this case, it is best to examine whether by that light that was given him, he saw Christ and salvation offered to him, or whether he saw that God loved him, or pardoned him: for the offer of grace and our acceptance goes before pardon, and therefore, much more, before the knowlege of it."

Mr. Shepard, in his *Parable of the ten virgins*, Part. II. p. 15. says, that "Grace and the love of Christ (the fairest colours under the sun) may be pretended; but if you shall receive, under this appearance, that God witnesseth his love, first by an absolute promise, take heed there; for under this appearance you may as well bring in immediate revelations, and from thence come to forsake the scriptures."

And in Part I. p. 86. he says "is Christ yours? Yes, I see it. How? By any word or promise! No: this is delusion." And p. 136. speaking of them that have no solid ground of peace, he reckons, "Those that content themselves with the revelation of the Lord's love, without the sight of any work, or not looking to it." And says presently after, "The testimony of the Spirit does not make a man more a Christian, but only evidenceth it; as it is the nature of a witness, not to make a thing to be true, but to clear and evidence it." And p. 140. speaking of them that say they have the witness of the Spirit, that makes a difference between them and hypocrites, he says, "The witness of the Spirit makes not the first difference: for first a man is a believer, and in Christ, and justified, called, and sanctified, before the Spirit does witness it; else the Spirit should witness to an untruth and lie."

that persons so qualified as he is, are invited, and God who declares it, is true and cannot lie. If a sinner be once convinced of the veracity of God, and that the scriptures are his word, he will need no more to convince and satisfy him that he is invited; for the scriptures are full of invitations to sinners, to the chief of sinners, to come and partake of the benefits of the gospel: he will not want any new speaking of God to him, what he hath spoken already will be enough with him.

As the first comfort of many persons, and their affections at the time of their supposed conversion, are built on such grounds as these which have been mentioned; so are their joys and hopes, and other affections, from time to time afterwards. They have often particular words of scripture, sweet declarations and promises suggested to them, which by reason of the manner of their coming, they think are *immediately* sent from God to them, *at that time*; which they look upon as their warrant to take them; and which they actually make the main ground of their appropriating them to themselves, and of the comfort they take in them, and the confidence they receive from them. Thus they imagine a kind of conversation is carried on between God and them; and that God, from time to time, does, as it were, immediately speak to them, and satisfy their doubts, and testifies his love to them, and promises them supports and supplies, and his blessing in such and such cases, and reveals to them clearly their interests in eternal blessings. And thus they are often elevated, and have a course of a sudden and tumultuous kind of joys, mingled with a strong confidence, and high opinion of themselves; when indeed the main ground of these joys, and this confidence, is not any thing *contained in, or taught by* these scriptures, as they lie in the Bible, but the *manner of their coming to them*; which is a certain evidence of their delusion. There is no particular promise in the word of God that is the saint's, or is any otherwise made to him, or spoken to him, than all the promises of the covenant of grace are his, and are made to him, and spoken to him:† though it be true that some of these promises may be
more

† Mr. Shepard, in his *Sound Believer*, p. 159. of the late impression at Boston, says, "Embrace in thy bosom, not only some few promises, but all." And then he asks the question, "When may a Christian make a promise without presumption, as spoken to him?" He answers, "The rule is very sweet, but certain; when he takes
all

more peculiarly adapted to his case than others ; and God by his Spirit may enable him better to understand some than others, and to have a greater sense of the preciousness, and glory, and suitability of the blessings contained in them.

But here some may be ready to say, What, is there no such thing as any particular spiritual application of the promises of scripture by the Spirit of God ? I answer, there is doubtless such a thing as a spiritual and saving application of the invitations and promises of scripture to the souls of men : but it is also certain, that the nature of it is wholly misunderstood by many persons, to the great ensnaring of their own souls, and the giving Satan a vast advantage against them, and against the interest of religion, and the church of God. The spiritual application of a scripture promise does not consist in its being immediately suggested to the thoughts by some extrinsic agent, and being borne into the mind with this strong apprehension, that it is particularly spoken and directed to them at that time : there is nothing of the evidence of the hand of God in this effect, as events have proved, in many notorious instances ; and it is a mean notion of a spiritual application of scripture ; there is nothing in the nature of it at all beyond the power of the devil, if he be not restrained by God ; for there is nothing in the nature of the effect that is spiritual, implying any vital communication of God. A truly spiritual application of the word of God is of a vastly higher nature ; as much above the devil's power, as it is, so to apply the word of God to a dead corpse, as to raise it to life ; or to a stone, to turn it into an angel. A spiritual application of the word of God consists in *applying it to the heart*, in spiritually enlightening, sanctifying influences. A spiritual application of an invitation or offer of the gospel consists in giving the soul a spiritual sense or relish of the holy and divine blessings offered, and also the sweet and wonderful grace of the offerer, in making so gracious an offer, and of his holy excellency and faithfulness to fulfil what he offers, and

all the scripture, and embraces it as spoken unto him, he may then take any particular promise boldly. My meaning is, when a Christian takes hold, and wrestles with God for the accomplishment of all the promises of the New Testament, when he sets all the commands before him, as a compass and guide to walk after, when he applies all the threatenings to drive him nearer unto Christ the end of them. This no hypocrite can do ; this the saints shall do ; and by this they may know when the Lord speaks in particular unto them."

and his glorious sufficiency for it; so leading and drawing forth the heart to embrace the offer; and thus giving the man evidence of his title to the thing offered. And so a spiritual application of the promises of scripture, for the comfort of the saints, consists in enlightening their minds to see the holy excellency and sweetness of the blessings promised, and also the holy excellency of the promiser, and his faithfulness and sufficiency; thus drawing forth their hearts to embrace the promiser, and thing promised; and by this means, giving the sensible workings of grace, enabling them to see their grace, and so their title to the promise. An application not consisting in this divine sense and enlightening of the mind, but consisting only in the word's being borne into the thoughts, as if immediately then spoken, so making persons believe, on no other foundation, that the promise is theirs; is a blind application, and belongs to the spirit of darkness, and not of light.

When persons have their affections raised after this manner, those affections are really not raised by the word of God; the scripture is not the foundation of them; it is not any thing contained in those scriptures which come to their minds, that raise their affections; but truly that effect, *viz.* the strange manner of the word's being suggested to their minds, and a proposition from thence taken up by them, which indeed is not contained in that scripture, nor any other; as that *his* sins are forgiven him, or that it is the Father's good pleasure to give *him in particular* the kingdom, or the like. There are propositions to be found in the Bible, declaring that persons of such and such qualifications are forgiven and beloved of God: but there are no propositions to be found in the Bible declaring that such and such particular persons, independent on any previous knowledge of any qualifications, are forgiven and beloved of God: and therefore, when any person is comforted, and affected by any such proposition, it is by another word, a word newly coined, and not any word of God contained in the Bible.† And thus many persons are vainly affected and deluded.

Again,

† “ Some Christians have rested with a work without Christ, which is abominable: but after a man is in Christ, not to judge by the work, is first not to judge from a word. For though there is a word, which may give a man a *dependence* on Christ, without feeling any work, nay when he feels none, as absolute promises; yet no
word

Again, it plainly appears from what has been demonstrated, that no revelation of secret facts by immediated suggestion, is any thing spiritual and divine, in that sense wherein gracious effects and operations are so.

By *secret facts*, I mean things that have been done, or are come to pass, or shall hereafter come to pass, which are secret in that sense that they do not appear to the senses, nor are known by any argumentation, or any evidence to reason, nor any other way, but only by that revelation by immediate suggestion of the ideas of them to the mind. Thus for instance, if it should be revealed to me, that the next year this land would be invaded by a fleet from France, or that such and such persons would then be converted, or that I myself should then be converted; not by enabling me to argue out these events from anything which now appears in providence; but immediately suggesting and bearing in upon my mind, in an extraordinary manner, the apprehension or ideas of these facts, with a strong suggestion or impression on my mind, that I had no hand in myself, that these things would come to pass: or if it should be revealed to me, that this day there is a battle fought between the armies of such and such powers in Europe; or that such a prince in Europe was this day converted, or is now in a converted state, having been converted formerly, or that one of my neighbours is converted, or that I myself am converted; not by having any other evidence of any of these facts, from whence I argue them, but an immediate extraordinary suggestion or excitation of these ideas, and a strong impression of them upon my mind: this is a revelation of secret facts by immediate suggestion, as much as if the facts were future; for the facts being past, present, or future, alters not the case, as long as they are secret and hidden from my senses and reason, and not spoken of in scripture, nor known by me any other way than by *immediate suggestion*. If I have it revealed to me, that such a revolution is come to pass this day in the Ottoman empire, it is the very same

word giving assurance, but that which is made to some work, *He that believeth, or is poor in spirit, &c.* until that work is seen, has no assurance from that promise." *Shepard's Parable of the ten virgins.* Part I. p. 86.

"If God should tell a saint that he has grace, he might know it by believing the word of God: but it is not in this way that godly men do know that they have grace; it is not revealed in the word, and the Spirit of God doth not testify it to particular persons." *Stoddard's Nature of saving Conversion.* p. 84, 85.

same sort of revelation, as if it were revealed to me that such a revolution would come to pass there this day come twelve-months; because, though one is present and the other future, yet both are equally hidden from me, any other way than by immediate revelation. When Samuel told Saul that the asses which he went to seek were found, and that his father had left caring for the asses and sorrowed for him; this was by the same kind of revelation, as that by which he told Saul, that in the plain of Tabor, there should meet him three men going up to God to Bethel, (1 Sam. x. 2, 3.) though one of these things was future, and the other was not. So when Elisha told the king of Israel the words that the king of Syria spake in his bed-chamber, it was by the same kind of revelation with that by which he foretold many things to come.

It is evident that this revelation of secret facts by immediate suggestion, has nothing of the nature of a spiritual and divine operation, in the sense fore-mentioned; there is nothing at all in the nature of the perceptions or ideas themselves, which are excited in the mind, that is divinely excellent, and so, far above all the ideas of natural men; though the manner of exciting the ideas be extraordinary. In those things which are spiritual, as has been shown, not only *the manner of producing the effect*, but *the effect wrought* is divine, and so vastly above all that can be in an un sanctified mind. Now simply the having an idea of facts, setting aside the manner of producing those ideas, is nothing beyond what the minds of wicked men are susceptible of, without any goodness in them; and they all, either have or will have, the knowledge of the truth of the greatest and most important facts, that have been, are, or shall be.

And as to the extraordinary manner of producing the ideas or perception of facts, even by immediate suggestion, there is nothing in it, but what the minds of natural men, while they are yet natural men, are capable of; as is manifest in Balaam, and others spoken of in the scripture. And therefore it appears that there is nothing appertaining to this immediate suggestion of secret facts that is spiritual, in the sense in which it has been proved that gracious operations are so. If there be nothing in the ideas themselves, which is holy and divine, and so nothing but what may be in a mind not sanctified, then God can put them into the mind *by immediate power*, without sanctifying it. As there is nothing in the idea of a rainbow itself, that

that is of a holy and divine nature ; so that there is nothing hinders but that an un sanctified mind may receive that idea : so God if he pleases, and when he pleases, *immediately, and in an extraordinary manner*, may excite that idea in an un sanctified mind. So also, as there is nothing in the idea or knowlege that such and such particular persons are forgiven and accepted of God, and intitled to heaven, but what un sanctified minds may have and will have concerning many at the day of judgment ; so God can if he pleases, extraordinarily and immediately suggest this to, and impress it upon an un sanctified mind now : there is no principle wanting in an un sanctified mind, to make it capable of such a suggestion or impression ; nor is there any thing in them to exclude, or necessarily to prevent such a suggestion.

And if these suggestions of secret facts be attended with *texts of scripture*, immediately and extraordinarily brought to mind, about some other facts that seem in some respects similar, that does not make the operation to be of a spiritual and divine nature. For that suggestion of words of scripture is no more divine, than the suggestion of the facts themselves ; as has been just now demonstrated : and two effects together, which are neither of them spiritual, cannot make up one complex effect, that is spiritual.

Hence it follows, from what has been already shown, and often repeated, that those affections which are properly founded on such immediate suggestions, or supposed suggestions, of secret facts, are not gracious affections. Not but that it is possible that such suggestions may *be the occasion, or accidental cause* of gracious affections ; for so may a mistake and delusion ; but it is never properly the *foundation* of gracious affections : for gracious affections, as has been shewn, are all the effects of an influence and operation which is spiritual, supernatural, and divine. But there are many affections, and high affections, which some have, that have such kind of suggestions or revelations for their very foundation : they look upon these as spiritual discoveries ; which is a gross delusion ; and this delusion is truly the spring whence their affections flow.

Here it may be proper to observe, that it is exceeding manifest from what has been said, that what many persons call the *witness of the Spirit*, that they are the children of God, has nothing in it spiritual and divine ; and consequently that the affections built upon it, are vain and delusive. That which ma-

ny call the witness of the Spirit, is no other than an immediate suggestion and impression of that fact, otherwise secret, that they are converted, or made the children of God, and so that their sins are pardoned, and that God has given them a title to heaven. This kind of knowledge, *viz.* knowing that a certain person is converted, and delivered from hell, and intitled to heaven, is no divine sort of knowledge in itself. This sort of fact, is not that which requires no higher or more divine kind of suggestion, in order to impress it on the mind, than any other fact which Balaam had impressed on his mind. It requires no higher sort of idea or sensation, for a man to have the apprehension of his own conversion impressed upon him, than to have the apprehension of his neighbor's conversion, in like manner, impressed: but God, if he pleased, might impress the knowledge of this fact, that he had forgiven his neighbor's sins, and given him a title to heaven, as well as any other fact, without any communication of his holiness: the excellency and importance of the fact, does not at all hinder a natural man's mind being susceptible of an immediate suggestion and impression of it. Balaam had as excellent, and important, and glorious facts as this, immediately impressed on his mind, without any gracious influence; as particularly, the coming of Christ, and his setting up his glorious kingdom, and the blessedness of the spiritual Israel in his peculiar favor, and their happiness living and dying. Yea, Abimeleck king of the Philistines, had God's special favor to a particular person, even Abraham revealed to him, Gen. xx. 6, 7. So it seems that he revealed to Laban his special favor to Jacob, see Gen. xxxi. 24. and Psal. cv. 15. And if a truly good man should have an immediate revelation or suggestion from God, after the like manner, concerning his favor to his neighbor, or himself; it would be no higher kind of influence; it would be no more than a common sort of influence of God's Spirit; as the gift of prophecy, and all revelation by immediate suggestion is; see 1 Cor. xiii. 2. And though it be true, that it is not possible that a natural man should have that individual suggestion from the Spirit of God, that he is converted, because it is not true; yet that does not arise from the nature of the influence, or because that kind of influence which suggests such excellent facts, is too high for him to be the subject of; but purely from the defect of a fact to be revealed. The influence which immediately suggests this fact, when it is true, is of no different

different kind from that which immediately suggests other true facts: and so the kind and nature of the influence, is not above what is common to natural men, with good men.

But this is a mean ignoble notion of the witness of the Spirit of God given to his dear children, to suppose that there is nothing in the kind and nature of that influence of the Spirit of God, in imparting this high and glorious benefit, but what is common to natural men, or which men are capable of, and be in the mean time altogether un sanctified, and the children of hell; and that therefore the benefit or gift itself has nothing of the holy nature of the Spirit of God in it, nothing of a vital communication of that Spirit. This notion greatly debases that high and most exalted kind of influence and operation of the Spirit, which there is in the true witness of the Spirit†. That which is called *the witness of the Spirit*, Rom. viii, is elsewhere in the New Testament called *the seal of the Spirit*, 2 Cor. i. 22. Eph. i. 13. and iv. 13. alluding to the seal of princes, annexed to the instrument, by which they advanced any of their subjects to some high honor and dignity, or peculiar privilege in the kingdom, as a token of their special favor. Which is an evidence that the influence of the Spirit of the Prince of princes, in sealing his favorites, is far from being of a common kind;

K k

and

† The late venerable Stoddard in his younger time, falling in with the opinion of some others, received this notion of the witness of the Spirit, by way of immediate suggestion; but in the latter part of his life, when he had more thoroughly weighed things, and had more experience, he entirely rejected it; as appears by his treatise of the nature of saving conversion, P. 84. “The Spirit of God doth not testify to particular persons, that they are godly. Some think that the Spirit of God doth testify it to some; and they ground it on Rom. viii. 16. “The Spirit itself beareth witness with our spirit, that we are the children of God.” They think the Spirit reveals it by giving an inward testimony to it; and some godly men think they have had experience of it; but they may easily mistake; when the spirit of God doth eminently stir up a spirit of faith, and sheds abroad the love of God in the heart, it is easy to mistake it as a testimony. And that is not the meaning of Paul’s words. The Spirit reveals things to us, by opening our eyes to see what is revealed in the word; but the Spirit doth not reveal new truths, not revealed in the word. The Spirit discovers the grace of God in Christ, and thereby draws forth special actings of faith and love, which are evidential; but it doth not work in way of testimony. If God does but help us to receive the revelations in the word, we shall have comfort enough without new revelations.”

and that there is no effect of God's Spirit whatsoever, which is in its nature more divine; nothing more holy, peculiar, inimitable and distinguishing of divinity: as nothing is more royal than the royal seal; nothing more sacred, that belongs to a prince, and more peculiarly denoting what belongs to him; it being the very end and design of it, to be the most peculiar stamp and confirmation of the royal authority, and great note of distinction, whereby that which proceeds from the king, or belongs to him, may be known from every thing else. And therefore undoubtedly the seal of the great King of heaven and earth instamped on the heart, is something high and holy in its own nature, some excellent communication from the infinite fountain of divine beauty and glory; and not merely a making known a secret fact by revelation or suggestion; which is a sort of influence of the Spirit of God, that the children of the devil have often been the subjects of. The seal of the Spirit is a kind of effect of the Spirit of God on the heart, which natural men, while such, are so far from a capacity of being the subjects of, that they can have no manner of notion or idea of it; agreeable to Rev. ii. 17. "To him that overcometh will I give to eat of the hidden manna, and I will give him a white stone, and in the stone a new name written, which no man knoweth, saving he that receiveth it." There is all reason to suppose that what is here spoken of, is the same mark, evidence, or blessed token of special favor, which is elsewhere called the *seal of the Spirit*.

What has misled many in their notion of that influence of the Spirit of God we are speaking of, is the word WITNESS, its being called the *witness* of the Spirit. Hence they have taken it, not to be any effect or work of the Spirit upon the heart, giving evidence, from whence men may argue that they are the children of God; but an inward immediate suggestion, as though God inwardly spoke to the man, and testified to him, and told him that he was his child, by a kind of a secret voice, or impression: not observing the manner in which the word *witness*, or *testimony*, is often used in the New Testament; where such terms often signify, not only a mere declaring and asserting a thing to be true, but holding forth evidence from whence a thing may be argued and proved to be true. Thus, Heb. ii. 4. God is said to "bear witness, with signs and wonders, and divers miracles, and gifts of the Holy Ghost." Now these miracles, here spoken of, are called God's witness, not because they

they are of the nature of assertions, but evidences and proofs. So Acts xiv. 3. "Long time therefore abode they speaking boldly in the Lord, which gave testimony unto the word of his grace, and granted signs and wonders to be done by their hands." And John v. 36. "But I have greater witness than that of John: for the works which the Father hath given me to finish, the same works that I do, bear witness of me, that the Father hath sent me. Again, chap. x. 25. "The works that I do in my Father's name, they bear witness of me." So the water and the blood are said to bear witness, 1 John v. 8. not that they spake or asserted any thing, but they were proofs and evidences. So God's works of providence, in the rain and fruitful seasons, are spoken of as witnesses of God's being and goodness, *i. e.* they were evidences of these things. And when the scriptures speaks of the *seal* of the Spirit, it is an expression which properly denotes, not an immediate voice or suggestion, but some work or effect of the Spirit, that is left as a divine mark upon the soul, to be an evidence, by which God's children might be known. The seals of princes were the distinguishing marks of princes: and thus God's seal is spoken of as God's mark, Rev. vii. 3. "Hurt not the earth, neither the sea, nor the trees, till we have sealed the servants of our God in their foreheads;" together with Ezek. ix. 4. "Set a mark upon the foreheads of the men that sigh, and that cry for all the abominations that are done in the midst thereof." When God sets his seal on a man's heart by his Spirit, there is some holy stamp, some image impressed and left upon the heart by the Spirit, as by the seal upon the wax. And this holy stamp, or impressed image, exhibiting clear evidence to the conscience, that the subject of it is the child of God, is the very thing which in scripture is called *the seal of the Spirit*, and *the witness*, or *evidence of the Spirit*. And this image instamped by the Spirit on God's childrens hearts, is his own image: that is the evidence by which they are known to be God's children, that they have the image of their Father stamped upon their hearts by the Spirit of adoption. Seals anciently had engraven on them two things, *viz.* the image, and the name of the person whose seal it was. Therefore when Christ says to his spouse, Cant. viii. 6. "Set me as a seal upon thine heart, as a seal upon thine arm;" it is as much as to say, let my name and image remain impressed there. The seals of princes were wont to bear their image; so that

what

what they set their seal and royal mark upon, had their image left on it. It was the manner of princes of old to have their image engraven on their jewels and precious stones; and the image of Augustus engraven on a precious stone, was used as the seal of the Roman emperors, in Christ's and the apostles times *. And the saints are the jewels of Jesus Christ, the great Potentate, who has the possession of the empire of the universe: and these jewels have his image instamped upon them, by his royal signet, which is the Holy Spirit. And this is undoubtedly what the scripture means by the seal of the Spirit; especially when it is instamped in so fair and clear a manner, as to be plain to the eye of conscience; which is what the scripture calls *our spirit*. This is truly an affect that is *spiritual, supernatural and divine*. This is in itself of a holy nature, being a communication of the divine nature and beauty. That kind of influence of the Spirit which gives and leaves this stamp upon the heart, is such that no natural man can be the subject of any thing of the like nature with it. This is the highest sort of witness of the Spirit, which it is possible the soul should be the subject of: if there were any such thing as a witness of the Spirit by immediate suggestion or revelation, this would be vastly more noble and excellent, and as much above it as the heaven is above the earth. This the devil cannot imitate: as to an inward suggestion of the Spirit of God, by a kind of secret voice speaking, and immediately asserting and revealing a fact, he can do that which is a thousand times so like to this, as he can to that holy and divine effect, or work of the Spirit of God, which has been now spoken of †.

Another

* See Chambers's dictionary, under the word ENGRAVING.

† Mr. Shepard is abundant in militating against the notion of mens knowing their good estate by an immediate witness of the Spirit, without judging by any effect or work of the Spirit wrought on the heart, as an evidence and proof that persons are the children of God. *Parab. P. I. p. 134.* "Knowing your election of God. How so? Immediately? Some divines think angels see it not so, and that it is peculiar to God so to do; but mediately; for our word came in power, and in much assurance, to make you enlarged for God, to turn you from idols unto God, &c—." Again in the same page, "It is heaven to cleave to him in every command; it is death to depart from any command. Hereby know we that we are in him. If it were possible to ask of the angels, how they know they are not devils, they would

Another thing which is a full proof that the seal of the Spirit is no revelation of any fact by immediate suggestion, but is grace itself in the soul, is, that the *seal of the Spirit* is called the *earnest of the Spirit*, in the scripture. It is very plain, that the seal of the Spirit is the same thing with the earnest of the Spirit, by 2 Cor. i. 22. "Who hath also sealed us, and given the earnest of the Spirit in our hearts." And Eph. i. 13, 14. "In whom, after that ye believed, ye were sealed with that holy Spirit of promise, which is the earnest of our inheritance,

would answer the Lord's will is ours. So here, how do you know you have not the nature of devils, and so in a state of devils, bound there until the judgment of the great day? Because God hath changed our vile natures, and made our wills like unto his glorious will." And p. 135. "The *major* is the word, the *minor* experience, and the *conclusion* the Lord's Spirit's work, quickening your spirits to it. Now, say some, how do you know this? Thus you may be mistaken; for many have been deceived thus. Grant that; and shall a child not take bread when it is given him, though dogs snatch at it?" And p. 137. If you look to a spirit without a work, whilst you do seek consolation, you cannot avoid the condemnation of the word. You say the Spirit has spoken peace to you; but do you love Christ? I look not to that; but to the Spirit. Why, the word saith, *He that loves him not, let him be Anathema*. So, Is the league between your sins and your souls broken? Ans. I look not to that. Why, John saith, *He that committeth sin is of the devil*. Are you new creatures? I look not to that. Why, the word saith, *unless you be born again, you cannot enter into the kingdom of God*." Page 176, 177. "A man saith, I have Christ; and so have not they. I ask, where is the Spirit? You have the deed; where is the seal? You have the testator; where is the executor? The Spirit in you? Yes, I have it; it has witnessed Christ is mine. Ans. It has witnessed; but what has it wrought? where is the power of his death, killing thy lusts? where is the life of the spirit in Jesus in you? where is the oil in your vessel? Truly I look for the Bridegroom; but I regard not that; neither are others to regard it, in way of evidence. Then I say, the chief evidence is destroyed in the churches. I have known many that have had assurances; yet never saw them prove right, until it witnessed this was here. What should be the causes of this, and that men should make blusters in the churches because of this, as though it was building on works? In several men they are several. 1. An aptness to out-run the truth, and to fall from one extreme to another.—2. The apostacy of eminent professors, who have been deceived in their evidencing thus.—3. Corrupt experience.—4. A heart that never felt the bitterness and bondage of sin, as the greatest evil." Page 215, 216. "The peace,

“ance, until the redemption of the purchased possession, unto the praise of his glory.” Now the earnest is part of the money agreed for, given in hand, as a token of the whole, to be paid in due time; a part of the promised inheritance, granted now, in token of full possession of the whole hereafter. But surely that kind of communication of the Spirit of God, which is of the nature of eternal glory, is the highest and most excellent kind of communication, something that is in its own nature spiritual, holy, and divine, and far from any thing that is common;

peace, and joy, and assurance of that glory, which eye never saw, in the saints, it is from the witness of the Spirit of glory; not only because that God is their God, but because they are his people. It is I say from the witness of God in his word; not from themselves, nor from man only, that they approve me; nor from dreams, and diabolical breathings; but from the Spirit of God; he brings tidings of it; and from such a spirit (that you may know it) that not only shews you God is your God, and so you rejoice because of this; for thus it is with many a carnal heart, and he hath peace, being in horror, from this, *the Lord loves me*; but he makes you to rejoice, because you are the Lord's people, because he hath changed your hearts: now the peace is found, and joy is right: and here I would try the peace of any man.” Part II. p. 168, 169. “All the heirs of the promises, as heirs that have legacies left them, they go to the will of the deceased father; and that comforts, that they hold to, that is sure; such an one shall have it, if his name be there. But if one shall say, such a one hath promised me such lands: Is it in his will? No; but since he died, as I was taking a pipe, he came to me: Oh be not deceived!”

Again, in his *Sound Believer*, there is a long discourse of sanctification as the chief evidence of justification, from p. 221, for many pages following; I shall transcribe but a very small part of it. “Tell me, how you will know that you are justified. You will say, by the testimony of the Spirit. And cannot the same Spirit shine upon your graces, and witness that you are sanctified, as well? 1 John iv. 13, 24. 1 Cor. ii. 12. Can the Spirit make the one clear to you, and not the other? Oh beloved, it is a sad thing, to hear such questions, and such cold answers also, that sanctification possibly may be an evidence. May be! Is it not certain? Assuredly to deny it, is as bad as to affirm that God's own promises of favor are not true evidences thereof, and consequently that they are lies and untruths.”

Mr. Flavel also much opposes this notion of the witness of the Spirit by immediate revelation. *Sacramental meditations, med. 4.* speaking of

common; and therefore high above any thing of the nature of inspiration, or revelation of hidden facts by suggestion of the Spirit of God, which many natural men have had. What is the earnest and beginning of glory, but grace itself, especially in the more lively and clear exercises of it? It is not prophecy, nor tongues, nor knowledge, but that more excellent divine thing, *charity that never faileth*, which is a prelibation and beginning of the light, sweetness, and blessedness of heaven, that world of love or charity. It is grace that is the seed of glory, and dawning of glory in the heart, and therefore it is
 grace

of the sealing of the Spirit, he says, "In sealing the believer, he doth not make use of an audible voice, nor the ministry of angels, nor immediate and extraordinary revelations; but he makes use of his own graces, implanted in our hearts, and his own promises, written in the scripture: and in this method, he usually brings the doubting trembling heart of a believer to rest and comfort." Again, *ibid.* "Assurance is produced in our souls by the reflexive acts of faith: the Spirit helps us to reflect upon what hath been done by him formerly upon our hearts; *hereby we know that we know him*, 1 John ii. 3. To know that we know, is a reflex act. Now it is impossible there should be a reflex, before there hath been a direct act. No man can have the evidence of his faith, before the habit is infused, and the vital act performed. The object matter, to which the Spirit seals, is his own sanctifying operation." Afterwards, *ibid.* he says, "Immediate ways of the Spirit's sealing are ceased. No man may now expect, by any new revelation, or sign from heaven, by any voice, or extraordinary inspiration, to have his salvation sealed; but must expect that mercy in God's ordinary way and method, searching the scriptures, examining our own hearts, and waiting on the Lord in prayer. The learned Gerson gives an instance of one that had been long upon the borders of despair, and at last sweetly assured and settled: he answered, *Non ex nova aliqua revelatione*; not by any new revelation, but by subjecting my understanding to, and comparing my heart with the written word. And Mr. Roberts, in his treatise of *the covenants*, speaks of another, that so vehemently panted after the sealings and assurance of the love of God to his soul, that for a long time he earnestly desired some voice from heaven; and sometimes, walking in the solitary fields, earnestly desired some miraculous voice, from the trees or stones there. This was denied him; but in time, a better was afforded, in a scriptural way." Again, *ibid.* "This method of sealing, is beyond all other methods in the world. For in miraculous voices and inspirations, it is possible there may *subesse falsum*, be found some cheat, or impostures of the devil: but the Spirit's witness in the heart, suitable to the revelation in the scripture, cannot deceive us."

grace that is the earnest of the future inheritance. What is it that is the beginning or earnest of eternal life in the soul, but spiritual life? and what is that but grace? The inheritance that Christ has purchased for the elect, is the Spirit of God; not in any extraordinary gifts, but in his vital indwelling in the heart, exerting and communicating himself there, in his own proper, holy or divine nature: and this is the sum total of the inheritance that Christ purchased for the elect. For so are things constituted in the affair of our redemption, that the Father provides the Saviour, or purchaser, and the purchase is made of him; and the Son is the purchaser and the price; and the Holy Spirit is the great blessing or inheritance purchased, as is intimated Gal. iii. 13, 14. and hence the Spirit is often spoken of as the sum of the blessings promised in the gospel, Luke xxiv. 49. Acts i. 4. and chap. ii. 38, 39. Gal. iii. 14. Eph. i. 13. This inheritance was the grand legacy which Christ left his disciples and church, in his last will and testament, John, chap. xiv. xv. xvi. This is the sum of the blessings of eternal life, which shall be given in heaven. (Compare John vii. 37, 38, 39. and John iv. 14. with Rev. xxi. 6. and xxii. 1, 17.) It is through the vital communications and indwelling of the Spirit, that the saints have all their light, life, holiness, beauty, and joy in heaven: and it is through the vital communications and indwelling of the same Spirit, that the saints have all light, life, holiness, beauty and comfort on earth; but only communicated in less measure. And this vital indwelling of the Spirit in the saints, in this less measure and small beginning, is *the earnest of the Spirit, the earnest of the future inheritance, and the first-fruits of the Spirit*, as the apostle calls it, Rom. viii. 22: where, by *the first-fruits of the Spirit*, the apostle undoubtedly means the same vital gracious principle, that he speaks of in all the preceding part of the chapter, which he calls Spirit, and sets in opposition to flesh or corruption. Therefore this earnest of the Spirit, and first-fruits of the Spirit, which has been shown to be the same with the seal of the Spirit, is the vital gracious sanctifying communication and influence of the Spirit, and not any immediate suggestion or revelation of facts by the Spirit †.

And

† “ After a man is in Christ, not to judge by the work, is not to judge by the Spirit. For the apostle makes the earnest of the Spirit to be the seal. Now earnest is part of the money bargained for; the beginning”

And indeed the apostle, when in that Rom. viii. 16. he speaks of the Spirit's bearing witness with our spirit, that we are the children of God, does sufficiently explain himself, if his words were but attended to. What is here expressed, is connected with the two preceding verses, as resulting from what the apostle had said there, as every reader may see. The three verses together are thus, *For as many as are led by the Spirit of God, they are the sons of God : for ye have not received the spirit of bondage again to fear ; but ye have received the Spirit of adoption, whereby we cry, Abba, Father : the Spirit itself beareth witness with our spirits, that we are the children of God.* Here, what the apostle says, if we take it together, plainly shews, that what he has respect to, when he speaks of the Spirit's giving us witness or evidence that we are God's children, is his dwelling in us, and leading us, as a spirit of adoption, or spirit of a child, disposing us to behave towards God as to a Father. This is the witness or evidence the apostle speaks of, that we *are children*, that we *have the spirit of children*, or spirit of adoption. And what is that, but the spirit of love? There are two kinds of spirits the apostle speaks of, the spirit of a slave, or *the spirit of bondage*, that is *fear*; and the spirit of a child, or *spirit of adoption*, and that is *love*. The apostle says, we have not received the spirit of bondage, or of slaves, which is a spirit of fear; but we have received the more ingenuous noble spirit of children, a spirit of love, which naturally disposes us to go to God, as children to a father, and behave towards God as children. And this is the evidence or witness which the Spirit of God gives us that we are children. This is the plain sense of the apostle: and so undoubtedly the apostle here is speaking of the very same way of casting out doubting, and *fear*, and the spirit of bondage, which the apostle John speaks of, 1 John iv. 18. *viz.* by the prevailing of *love*, that is the spirit of a child. The spirit of bondage works by fear, the slave fears the rod; but love cries *Abba, Father*; it disposes us to go to God, and behave ourselves towards God as children; and it gives us clear evidence of our union to God as his children, and so casts out fear. So that it appears that the witness of the Spirit the apostle

L I

speaks

beginning of heaven, of the light and life of it. He that sees not that the Lord is his by that, sees no God his at all. Oh therefore, do not look for a spirit, without a word to reveal, nor a word to reveal, without seeing and feeling of some work first. I thank the Lord, I do but pity those that think otherwise. If a sheep of Christ, oh, wander not." *Shepherd's Parab.* P. I. p. 86,

speaks of, is far from being any whisper, or immediate suggestion or revelation ; but that gracious holy effect of the Spirit of God in the hearts of the saints, the disposition and temper of children, appearing in sweet child-like love to God, which casts out fear, or a spirit of a slave.

And the same thing is evident from all the context : it is plain the apostle speaks of the Spirit, over and over again, as dwelling in the hearts of the saints, as a gracious principle, set in opposition to the flesh or corruption : and so he does in the words that immediately introduce this passage we are upon, *vers. 13. For if ye live after the flesh, ye shall die : but if ye through the Spirit do mortify the deeds of the flesh, ye shall live.*

Indeed it is past doubt with me, that the apostle has a more special respect to the spirit of grace, or the spirit of love, or spirit of a child, in its more lively actings ; for it is *perfect love* or *strong love* only, which so witnesses or evidences that we are children, as to cast out fear, and wholly deliver from the spirit of bondage. The strong and lively exercises of a spirit of child-like, evangelical, humble love to God, give clear evidence of the soul's relation to God, as his child ; which does very greatly and directly satisfy the soul. And though it be far from being true, that the soul in this case, judges only by an immediate witness, without any sign or evidence ; for it judges and is assured by the greatest sign and clearest evidence ; yet in this case, the saint stands in no need of multiplied signs, or any long reasoning upon them. And though the sight of his *relative union* with God, and his being in his favor, is not without a medium, because he sees it by that medium, *viz.* his love ; yet his sight of the *union of his heart* to God is immediate : love, the bond of union, is seen intuitively : the saint sees and feels plainly the union between his soul and God ; it is so strong and lively, that he cannot doubt of it. And hence he is assured that he is a child. How can he doubt whether he stands in a child-like relation to God, when he plainly sees a child-like union between God and his soul, and hence does boldly, and as it were naturally and necessarily cry, *Abba, Father ?*

And whereas the apostle says, the Spirit bears witness *with our Spirits* : by *our Spirit* here, is meant our conscience, which is called the spirit of man ; *Prov. xx. 27.* " The spirit of man is the candle of the Lord, searching all the inward parts of the belly." We elsewhere read of the witness of this spirit of ours ; *2 Cor. i. 12.* " For our rejoicing is this, the testimony of our conscience." And *1 John iii. 19, 20, 21.* " And hereby do we know that we are of the truth, and shall assure our hearts before him.

" For

“ For if our heart condemn us, God is greater than our heart, and knoweth all things. Beloved, if our heart condemn us not, then have we confidence towards God.” When the apostle Paul speaks of the Spirit of God bearing witness with our spirit, he is not to be understood of two spirits, that are two separate, collateral, independent witnesses ; but it is by one, that we receive the witnesses of the other : the Spirit of God gives the evidence, by infusing and shedding abroad the love of God, the spirit of a child, in the heart ; and our spirit, or our conscience, receives and declares this evidence for our rejoicing.

Many have been the mischiefs that have arisen from that false and delusive notion of the witness of the Spirit, that it is a kind of inward voice, suggestion, or declaration from God to a man, that he is beloved of him, and pardoned, elected, or the like, sometimes with, and sometimes without a text of scripture ; and many have been the false, and vain, (though very high) affections that have arisen from hence. And it is to be feared that multitudes of souls have been eternally undone by it. I have therefore insisted the longer on this head.

But I proceed now to a second characteristic of gracious affections.

II. The first objective ground of gracious affections, is the transcendently excellent and amiable nature of divine things, as they are in themselves ; and not any conceived relation they bear to self, or self-interest.

I say, that the supremely excellent nature of divine things, is the *first*, or *primary and original* objective foundation of the spiritual affections of true saints ; for I do not suppose that all relation which divine things bear to themselves, and their own particular interest, are wholly excluded from all influence in their gracious affections. For this may have, and indeed has, a secondary and consequential influence in those affections that are truly holy and spiritual ; as I shall shew how by and by.

It was before observed, that the affection of love is as it were the fountain of all affection ; and particularly, that Christian love is the fountain of all gracious affections : now the divine excellency and glory of God, and Jesus Christ, the word of God, the works of God, and the ways of God, &c. is the primary reason, why a true saint loves these things ; and not any supposed interest that he has in them, or any conceived benefit that he has received from them, or shall receive from them, or any such imagined relation which they bear to his interest, that self-love can properly be said to be the first foundation of his love to these things.

Some

Some say that all love arises from self-love; and that it is impossible in the nature of things, for any man to have any love to God, or any other being, but that love to himself must be the foundation of it. But I humbly suppose it is for want of consideration, that they say so. They argue, that whoever loves God, and so desires his glory, or the enjoyment of him, he desires these things as his own happiness; the glory of God, and the beholding and enjoying his perfections, are considered as things agreeable to him, tending to make him happy; he places his happiness in them, and desires them as things, which (if they were obtained) would be delightful to him, or would fill him with delight and joy, and so make him happy. And so, they say, it is from self-love, or a desire of his own happiness, that he desires God should be glorified, and desires to behold and enjoy his glorious perfections. But then they ought to consider a little further, and inquire how the man came to place his happiness in God's being glorified, and in contemplating and enjoying God's perfections. There is no doubt, but that after God's glory, and the beholding his perfections, are become so agreeable to him, that he places his highest happiness in these things, then he will desire them, as he desires his own happiness. But how came these things to be so agreeable to him, that he esteems it his highest happiness to glorify God, &c? is not this the fruit of love? a man must first love God, or have his heart united to him, before he will esteem God's good his own, and before he will desire the glorifying and enjoying of God, as his happiness. It is not strong arguing, that because after a man has his heart united to God in love, as a fruit of this, he desires his glory and enjoyment as his own happiness, that therefore a desire of this happiness of his own, must needs be the cause and foundation of his love: unless it be strong arguing, that because a father begat a son, that therefore his son certainly begat him. If after a man loves God, and has his heart so united to him, as to look upon God as his chief good, and on God's good as his own, it will be a consequence and fruit of this, that even self-love, or love to his own happiness, will cause him to desire the glorifying and enjoying of God: it will not thence follow, that this very exercise of self-love, went before his love to God, and that his love to God was a consequence and fruit of that. Something else, entirely distinct from self-love, might be the cause of this, viz. a change made in the views of his mind, and relish of his heart; whereby he apprehends a beauty, glory, and supreme good, in God's nature, as it is in itself. This may be the thing that first draws

his

his heart to his, and causes his heart to be united to him prior to all considerations of his own interest or happiness, although after this, and as a fruit of this, he necessarily seeks his interest and happiness in God.

There is such a thing, as a kind of love or affection, that a man may have towards persons or things, which *does properly arise from self-love*; a preconceived relation to him, or some benefit already received or depended on, *is truly the first foundation* of his love, and what his affection does wholly arise from; and is what precedes any relish of, or delight in the nature and qualities inherent in the being beloved, as beautiful and amiable. When the first thing that draws a man's benevolence, to another, is the beholding those qualifications and properties in him, which appear to him lovely in themselves, and the subject of them, on this account, worthy of esteem and good-will, love arises in a very different manner, than when it first arises from some gift bestowed by another, or depended on from him, as a judge loves and favors a man that has bribed him; or from the relation he supposes another has to him, as a man who loves another, because he looks upon him as his child. When love to another arises thus, it does truly and properly arise from self-love.

That kind of affection to God or Jesus Christ, which does thus properly arise from self-love, cannot be a truly gracious and spiritual love; as appears from what has been said already: for self-love is a principle entirely natural, and as much in the hearts of devils as angels; and therefore surely nothing that is the mere result of it, can be supernatural and divine, in the manner before described†. Christ plainly speaks of this kind of love, as what is nothing beyond the love of wicked men, Luke vi. 32. "If ye love him that love you, what thank have ye? for sinners also love those that love them." And the devil himself knew that that kind of respect to God which was so mercenary, as to be only for benefits received or depended on, (which is all one) is worthless in the sight of God: otherwise he never would have made use of such a slander before God, against Job, as in Job i. 9, 10. "Doth Job serve God for nought? hast not thou made an hedge about him, and
" about

† "There is a natural love to Christ, as to one that doth thee good, and for thine own ends; and spiritual, for himself, whereby the Lord only is exalted," *Shepard's Par. of the ten Virgins*, P. I. p. 25.

“about his house?” &c.—Nor would God ever have implicitly allowed the objection to have been good, in case the accusation had been true, by allowing that that matter should be tried, and that Job should be so delt with, that it might appear in the event, whether Job’s respect to God was thus mercenary or no, and by putting the proof of the sincerity and goodness of his respect, upon that issue.

It is unreasonable to think otherwise, than that the first foundation of a true love to God, is that whereby he is in himself lovely, or worthy to be loved, or the supreme loveliness of his nature. This is certainly what makes him chiefly amiable. What chiefly makes a man, or any creature lovely, is his excellency; and so what chiefly renders God lovely, and must undoubtedly be the chief ground of true love, is his excellency. God’s nature, or the divinity, is infinitely excellent; yea it is infinite beauty, brightness, and glory itself. But how can that be *true love* of this excellent and lovely nature, which is not built on the foundation of *its true loveliness*? how can that be true love of beauty and brightness, which is not for beauty and brightness sake? how can that be a true prizing of that which is in itself infinitely worthy and precious, which is not for the sake of its worthiness and preciousness? this infinite excellency of the divine nature, as it is in itself, is the true ground of all that is good in God in any respect; but how can a man truly and rightly love God, without loving him for that excellency in him, which is the foundation of all that is in any manner of respect good or desirable in him? they whose affection to God is founded first on his profitableness to them, their affection begins at the wrong end; they regard God only for the utmost limit of the stream of divine good, where it touches them, and reaches their interest? and have no respect to that infinite glory of God’s nature, which is the original good and the true fountain of all good, the first fountain of all loveliness of every kind, and so the first foundation of all true love.

A natural principle of self-love may be the foundation of great affections toward God and Christ, without seeing any thing of the beauty and glory of the divine nature. There is a certain gratitude that is a mere natural thing. Gratitude is one of the natural affections of the soul of man, as well as anger; and there is a gratitude that arises from self-love, very much in the same manner that anger does. Anger in men is an affection excited *against* another, or in opposition to another,

for

for something in him that crosses self-love: gratitude is an affection one has *towards* another, for loving him, or gratifying him, or for something in him that suits self-love. And there may be a kind of gratitude, without any true or proper love; as there may be anger without any proper hatred, as in parents towards their children, that they may be angry with, and yet at the same time have a strong habitual love to them. This gratitude is the principle which is in exercise in wicked men, in that which Christ declares concerning them, in the 6th of Luke, where he says, *Sinners love those that love them*; and which he declares concerning even the publicans, who were some of the most carnal and profligate sort of men, Matt. v. 46. This is the very principle that is wrought upon by bribery, in unjust judges; and it is a principle that even the brute beasts do exercise; a dog will love his master that is kind to him. And we see in innumerable instances, that mere nature is sufficient to excite gratitude in men, or to affect their hearts with thankfulness to others for kindnesses received: and sometimes towards them, whom at the same time they have an habitual enmity against. Thus Saul was once and again greatly affected, and even dissolved with gratitude towards David, for sparing his life; and yet remained an habitual enemy to him. And as men, from mere nature, may be thus affected towards men; so they may towards God. There is nothing hinders, but that the same self-love may work after the same manner towards God, as towards man.^a And we have manifest instances of it in scripture; as indeed the children of Israel, *who sung God's praises at the red sea, but soon forgot God's works*: and in Naaman the Syrian, who was greatly affected with the miraculous cure of his leprosy, so as to have his heart engaged thenceforward to worship the God that had healed him, and him only, excepting when it would expose him to be ruined in his temporal interest. So was Nebuchadnezzar greatly affected with God's goodness to him, in restoring him to his reason and kingdom, after his dwelling with the beasts.

Gratitude being thus a natural principle, it renders ingratitude so much the more vile and heinous; because it shews a dreadful prevalence of wickedness, when it even overbears, and suppresses the better principles of human nature: as it is mentioned as an evidence of the high degree of the wickedness of many of the heathen, that they were *without natural affection*, Rom. ii. 31. But that the want of gratitude, or natural affection,

are evidences of an high degree of *vice*, is no argument that all gratitude and natural affection, has the nature of *virtue*, or *saving grace*.

Self-love, through the exercise of a mere natural gratitude, may be the foundation of a sort of love to God many ways. A kind of love may arise from a false notion of God, that men have been educated in, or have some way imbibed; as though he were only goodness and mercy, and no revenging justice; or as though the exercises of his goodness were necessary, and not free and sovereign; or as though his goodness were dependent on what is in them, and as it were constrained by them. Men on such grounds as these, may love a God of their own forming in their imaginations, when they are far from loving such a God as reigns in heaven.

Again, self-love may be the foundation of an affection in men towards God, through a great insensibility of their state with regard to God, and for want of conviction of conscience to make them sensible how dreadfully they have provoked God to anger; they have no sense of the heinousness of sin, as against God, and of the infinite and terrible opposition of the holy nature of God against it: and so having formed in their minds such a God as suits them, and thinking God to be such an one as themselves, who favours and agrees with them, they may like him very well, and feel a sort of love to him, when they are far from loving the true God. And mens affections may be much moved towards God, from self-love, by some remarkable outward benefits received from God; as it was with Naaman, Nebuchadnezzar, and the children of Israel at the Red sea.

Again, a very high affection towards God, may, and often does arise in men, from an opinion of the favour and love of God to them, as the first foundation of their love to him. After awakenings and distress through fears of hell, they may suddenly get a notion, through some impresson on their imagination, or immediate suggestion with or without texts of scripture, or by some other means, that God loves them, and has forgiven their sins, and made them his children; and this is the first thing that causes their affections to flow towards God and Jesus Christ: and then after this, and upon this foundation, many things in God may appear lovely to them, and Christ may seem excellent. And if such persons are asked, whether God appears lovely and amiable in himself? they would per-
haps

haps readily answer, Yes; when indeed, if the matter be strictly examined, this good opinion of God was purchased and paid for before ever they afforded it, in the distinguishing and infinite benefits they imagined they received from God: and they allow God to be lovely in himself, no otherwise, than that he has forgiven them, and accepted them, and loves them above most in the world, and has engaged to improve all his infinite power and wisdom in preferring, dignifying and exalting them, and will do for them just as they would have him. When once they are firm in this apprehension, it is easy to own God and Christ to be lovely and glorious, and to admire and extol them. It is easy for them to own Christ to be a lovely person, and the best in the world, when they are first firm in it, that he, though Lord of the universe, is captivated with love to them, and has his heart swallowed up in them, and prizes them far beyond most of their neighbours, and loved them from eternity, and died for them, and will make them reign in eternal glory with him in heaven. When this is the case with carnal men, their very lusts will make him seem lovely: pride itself will prejudice them in favor of that which they call Christ: selfish proud man naturally calls that lovely that greatly contributes to his interest, and gratifies his ambition.

And as this sort of persons begin, so they go on. Their affections are raised from time to time, primarily on this foundation of self-love and a conceit of God's love to them. Many have a false notion of communion with God, as though it were carried on by impulses, and whispers, and external representations, immediately made to their imagination. These things they often have; which they take to be manifestations of God's great love to them, and evidences of their high exaltation above others of mankind; and so their affections are often renewedly set a-going.

Whereas the exercises of true and holy love in the saints arise in another way. They do not first see that God loves them, and then see that he is lovely; but they first see that God is lovely, and that Christ is excellent and glorious, and their hearts are first captivated with this view, and the exercises of their love are wont from time to time to begin here, and to arise primarily from these views; and then, consequentially, they see God's love, and great favour to them. † The saint's

M m

affections

† “ There is a seeing of Christ after a man believes, which is Christ in his love, &c. But I speak of that first sight of him that precedes

affections begin with God; and self-love has a hand in these affections consequentially, and secondarily only. On the contrary, those false affections begin with self, and an acknowledgement of an excellency in God, and an affectedness with it, is only consequential and dependent. In the love of the true faint God is the lowest foundation; the love of the excellency of his nature is the foundation of all the affections which come afterwards, wherein self-love is concerned as an handmaid: on the contrary, the hypocrite lays himself at the bottom of all, as the first foundation, and lays on God as the superstructure; and even his acknowledgement of God's glory itself, depends on his regard to his private interest.

Self-love may not only influence men, so as to cause them to be affected with God's kindness to them separately; but also with God's kindness to them, as parts of a community: as a natural principle of self-love, without any other principle, may be sufficient to make a man concerned for the interest of the nation to which he belongs: as for instance, in the present war, self-love may make natural men rejoice at the successes of our nation, and sorry for their disadvantages, they being concerned as members of the body. So the same natural principles may extend further, and even to the world of mankind, and might be affected with the benefits the inhabitants of the earth have, beyond those of the inhabitants of other planets; if we knew that such there were, and knew how it was with them. So this principle may cause men to be affected with the benefits that mankind have received beyond the fallen angels. And hence men, from this principle, may be much affected with the wonderful goodness of God to mankind, his great goodness in giving his Son to die for fallen man, and the marvellous love of Christ in suffering such great things for us, and with the great glory they hear God has provided in heaven for us; looking on themselves as persons concerned and interested, as being some of this species of creatures, so highly favoured: the same principle of natural gratitude may influence men here, as in the case of personal benefits.

But these things that I have said do by no means imply that all gratitude to God is a mere natural thing, and that there is
no

cedes the second act of faith; and it is an intuitive, or real sight of him, as he is in his glory." *Shepard's Parable of the ten Virgins*, Part I. p. 74.

no such thing as a spiritual gratitude, which is a holy and divine affection : they imply no more, than that there is a gratitude which is merely natural, and that when persons have affections towards God only or primarily for benefits received, their affection is only the exercise of a natural gratitude. There is doubtless such a thing as a gracious gratitude, which does greatly differ from all that gratitude which natural men experience. It differs in the following respects :

1. True gratitude or thankfulness to God for his kindness to us, arises from a foundation laid before, of love to God for what he is in himself ; whereas a natural gratitude has no such antecedent foundation. The gracious stirrings of grateful affection to God, for kindness received, always are from a flock of love already in the heart, established in the first place on other grounds, *viz.* God's own excellency ; and hence the affections are disposed to flow out, on occasions of God's kindness. The saint having seen the glory of God, and his heart overcome by it, and captivated into a supreme love to him on that account, his heart hereby becomes tender, and easily affected with kindnesses received. If a man has no love to another, yet gratitude may be moved by some extraordinary kindness ; as in Saul towards David : but this is not the same kind of thing, as a man's gratitude to a dear friend, that his heart was before possessed with a high esteem of, and love to ; whose heart by this means became tender towards him, and more easily affected with gratitude, and affected in another manner. Self-love is not excluded from a gracious gratitude ; the saints love God for his kindness to them, *Psal.* cxvi. 1. " I love the Lord, because he hath heard the voice of my supplication." But something else is included ; and another love prepares the way and lays the foundation for these grateful affections.

2. In a gracious gratitude, men are affected with the attribute of God's goodness and free grace, not only as they are concerned in it, or as it affects their interest, but as a part of the glory and beauty of God's nature. That wonderful and unparalleled grace of God, which is manifested in the work of redemption, and shines forth in the face of Jesus Christ, is infinitely glorious in itself, and appears so to the angels ; it is a great part of the moral perfection and beauty of God's nature. This would be glorious, whether it were exercised towards us
or

or no; and the saint who exercises a gracious thankfulness for it, sees it to be so, and delights in it as such; though his concern in it serves the more to engage his mind, and raise the attention and affection; and self-love here assists as an handmaid, being subservient to higher principles, to lead forth the mind to the view and contemplation, and engage and fix the attention, and heighten the joy and love. God's kindness to them is a glass that God sets before them, wherein to behold the beauty of the attribute of God's goodness: the exercises and displays of this attribute, by this means, are brought near to them, and set right before them. So that in a holy thankfulness to God, the concern our interest has in God's goodness, is not the first foundation of our being affected with it; that was laid in the heart before, in that stock of love which was to God, for his excellency in himself, that makes the heart tender, and susceptible of such impressions from his goodness to us. Nor is our own interest, or the benefits we have received, the only, or the chief objective ground of the present exercises of the affection, but God's goodness, as part of the beauty of his nature; although the manifestations of that lovely attribute, set immediately before our eyes, in the exercises of it for us, be the special occasion of the mind's attention to that beauty, at that time and serves to fix the attention, and heighten the affection.

Some may perhaps be ready to object against the whole that has been said, that text, 1 John iv. 19. "We love him because he first loved us," as though this implied that God's love to the true saints were the *first foundation* of their love to him.

In answer to this I would observe, that the apostle's drift in these words, is to magnify the love of God to us from hence, that he loved us, while we had no love to him; as will be manifest to any one who compares this verse and the two following, with the 9th, 10th, and 11th verses. And that God loved us, when we had no love to him, the apostle proves by this argument, that God's love to the elect, is the ground of their love to him. And that it is three ways. 1. The saints love to God is the fruit of God's love to them, as it is the gift of that love. God gave them a spirit of love to him, because he loved them from eternity. And in this respect God's love to his elect is the first foundation of their love to him, as it is the foundation of their regeneration, and the whole of their redemption. 2. The exercises and discoveries that God has made of his wonderful love to sinful men, by Jesus Christ, in the work of redemption,

Redemption, is one of the chief manifestations, which God has made of the glory of his moral perfection, to both angels and men; and so is one main objective ground of the love of both to God; in a good consistence with what was said before.

3. God's love to a particular elect person, discovered by his conversion, is a great manifestation of God's moral perfection and glory to him, and a proper occasion of the excitation of the love of holy gratitude, agreeable to what was before said. And that the saints do in these respects love God, because he first loved them, fully answers the design of the apostle's argument in that place. So that no good argument can be drawn from hence, against a spiritual and gracious love in the saints, arising primarily from the excellency of divine things, as they are in themselves, and not from any conceived relation they bear to their interest.

And as it is with the love of the saints, so it is with their joy, and spiritual delight and pleasure: the first foundation of it is not any consideration or conception of their interest in divine things; but it primarily consists in the sweet entertainment their minds have in the view or contemplation of the divine and holy beauty of these things, as they are in themselves. And this is indeed the very main difference between the joy of the hypocrite, and the joy of the true saint. The former rejoices in himself; self is the first foundation of his joy: the latter rejoices in God. The hypocrite has his mind pleased and delighted, in the first place, with his own privilege, and the happiness which he supposes he has attained to, or shall attain to. True saints have their minds, in the first place, inexpressibly pleased and delighted with the sweet ideas of the glorious and amiable nature of the things of God. And this is the spring of all their delights, and the cream of all their pleasures; it is the joy of their joy. This sweet and ravishing entertainment, they have in the view of the beautiful and delightful nature of divine things, is the foundation of the joy that they have afterwards, in the consideration of their being theirs. But the dependence of the affections of hypocrites is in a contrary order; they first rejoice and are elevated with it, that they are made so much of by God; and then on that ground, he seems in a sort, lovely to them.

The first foundation of the delight a true saint has in God, is his own perfection; and the first foundation of the delight he has in Christ, is his own beauty; he appears in himself the chief

among .

among ten thousand, and altogether lovely. The way of salvation by Christ is a delightful way to him, for the sweet and admirable manifestations of the divine perfections in it: the holy doctrines of the gospel, by which God is exalted and man abased, holiness honoured and promoted, and sin greatly disgraced and discouraged, and free and sovereign love manifested, are glorious doctrines in his eyes, and sweet to his taste, prior to any conception of his interest in these things. Indeed the saints rejoice in their interest in God, and that Christ is theirs; and so they have great reason: but this is not the first spring of their joy. They first rejoice in God as glorious and excellent in himself, and then secondarily rejoice in it, that so glorious a God is theirs. They first have their hearts filled with sweetness, from the view of Christ's excellency, and the excellency of his grace, and the beauty of the way of salvation by him, and then they have a secondary joy, in that so excellent a Saviour, and such excellent grace is theirs.* But that which is the true saint's superstructure is the hypocrite's foundation. When they hear of the wonderful things of the gospel, of God's great love in sending his Son, of Christ's dying love to sinners, and the great things Christ has purchased, and promised to the saints, and hear these things lively and eloquently set forth; they may hear with a great deal of pleasure, and be lifted up with

* Dr. Owen on *the Spirit*, p. 199. speaking of a common work of the Spirit, says, "The effects of this work on the mind, which is the first subject affected with it, proceeds not so far, as to give it delight, complacency, and satisfaction, in the lovely spiritual nature and excellencies of the things revealed unto it. The true nature of saving illumination consists in this, that it gives the mind such a direct intuitive insight and prospect into spiritual things, as that in their own spiritual nature they suit, please, and satisfy it; so that it is transformed into them, cast into the mould of them, and rests in them; Rom. vi. 17. chap. xii. 2. 1 Cor. ii. 13, 14. 2 Cor. iii. 18. chap. iv. 6. This, the work we have insisted on, reacheth not unto. For notwithstanding any discovery that is made therein of spiritual things unto the mind, it finds not an immediate, direct, spiritual excellency in them; but only with respect unto some benefit or advantage, which is to be attained by means thereof. It will not give such a spiritual insight into the mystery of God's grace by Jesus Christ, called his glory shining in the face of Christ, 2 Cor. iv. 6. as that the soul, in its first direct view of it, should, for what it is in itself, admire it, delight in it, approve it, and find spiritual solace, with refreshment, in it. But such a light, such a knowledge, it communicates, as that a man may like it well in its effects, as a way of mercy and salvation."

with what they hear; but if their joy be examined, it will be found to have no other foundation than this, that they look upon these things as theirs, all this exalts them, they love to hear of the great love of Christ so vastly distinguishing some from others; for self-love, and even pride itself, makes them affect great distinction from others. No wonder, in this confident opinion of their own good estate, that they feel well under such doctrine, and are pleased in the highest degree, in hearing how much God and Christ makes of them. So that their joy is really a joy in themselves, and not in God.

And because the joy of hypocrites is in themselves, hence it comes to pass, that in their rejoicings and elevations, they are wont to keep their eye upon themselves; having received what they call spiritual discoveries or experiences, their minds are taken up about them, admiring their own experiences: and what they are principally taken and elevated with, is not the glory of God, or beauty of Christ, but the beauty of their experiences. They keep thinking with themselves, what a good experience is this! what a great discovery is this! what wonderful things have I met with! and so they put their experiences in the place Christ, and his beauty and fulness; and instead of rejoicing in Christ Jesus, they rejoice in their admirable experiences; instead of feeding and feasting their souls in the view of what is without them, *viz.* the innate, sweet, refreshing amiableness of the things exhibited in the gospel, their eyes are off from these things, or at least they view them only as it were side-ways; but the object that fixes their contemplation, is their experience; and they are feeding their souls, and feasting a selfish principle with a view of their discoveries: they take more comfort in their discoveries than in Christ discovered, which is the true notion of living upon experiences and frames; and not a using experiences as the signs, on which they rely for evidence of their good estate, which some call living on experiences; though it be very observable, that some of them who do so, are most notorious for living upon experiences, according to the true notion of it.

The affections of hypocrites are very often after this manner; they are first much affected with some impression on their imagination, or some impulse, which they take to be an immediate suggestion, or testimony from God, of his love and their happiness, and high privilege in some respect, either with or without a text of scripture; they are mightily taken with this,

as a great discovery: and hence arise high affections. And when their affections are raised, then they view those high affections, and call them great and wonderful experiences; and they have a notion that God is greatly pleased with those affections; and this affects them more; and so they are affected with their affections. And thus their affections rise higher and higher, until they sometimes are perfectly swallowed up: and self-conceit, and a fierce zeal rises withal; and all is built like a castle in the air, on no other foundation but imagination, self-love, and pride.

And as the thoughts of this sort of persons are, so is their talk; for out of the abundance of their heart, their mouth speaketh. As in their high affections, they keep their eye upon the beauty of their experiences, and greatness of their attainments; so they are great talkers about themselves. The true saint, when under great spiritual affections, from the fulness of his heart, is ready to be speaking much of God, and his glorious perfections and works, and of the beauty and amiableness of Christ, and the glorious things of the gospel; but hypocrites, in their high affections, talk more of the discovery, than they do of the thing discovered; they are full of talk about the great things they have met with, the wonderful discoveries they have had, how sure they are of the love of God to them, how safe their condition is, and how they know they shall go to heaven, &c.

A true saint, when in the enjoyment of true discoveries of the sweet glory of God and Christ, has his mind too much captivated and engaged by what he views without himself, to stand at that time to view himself, and his own attainments: it would be a diversion and loss which he could not bear, to take his eye off from the ravishing object of his contemplation, to survey his own experience, and to spend time in thinking with himself, what an high attainment this is, and what a good story I now have to tell others. Nor does the pleasure and sweetness of his mind at that time, chiefly arise from the consideration of the safety of his state, or any thing he has in view of his own qualifications, experiences, or circumstances: but from the divine and supreme beauty of what is the object of his direct view, without himself; which sweetly entertains, and strongly holds his mind.

As the love and joy of hypocrites, are all from the source of self-love; so it is with their other affections, their sorrow for
 sin,

sin, their humiliation and submission, their religious desires and zeal : every thing is as it were paid for before-hand, in God's highly gratifying their self-love, and their lusts, by making so much of them, and exalting them so highly, as things are in their imagination. It is easy for nature, as corrupt as it is, under a notion of being already some of the highest favourites of heaven, and having a God who does so protect them and favour them in their sins, to love this imaginary God that suits them so well, and to extol him, and submit to him, and to be fierce and zealous for him. The high affections of many are all built on the supposition of their being eminent saints. If that opinion which they have of themselves were taken away, if they thought they were some of the lower form of saints, (though they should yet suppose themselves to be real saints) their high affections would fall to the ground. If they only saw a little of the sinfulness and vileness of their own hearts, and their deformity, in the midst of their best duties and their best affections, it would knock their affections on the head ; because their affections are built upon self, therefore self-knowledge would destroy them. But as to truly gracious affections, they are built elsewhere ; they have their foundation out of self, in God and Jesus Christ ; and therefore a discovery of themselves, of their own deformity, and the meanness of their experiences, though it will purify their affections, yet it will not destroy them, but in some respects sweeten and heighten them.

III. Those affections that are truly holy, are primarily founded on the loveliness of the moral excellency of divine things. Or, (to express it otherwise) a love to divine things for the beauty and sweetness of their moral excellency, is the first beginning and spring of all holy affections.

Here, for the sake of the more illiterate reader, I will explain what I mean by the moral excellency of divine things.

And it may be observed, that the word *moral* is not to be understood here, according to the common and vulgar acceptance of the word, when men speak of *morality*, and a *moral* behaviour ; meaning an outward conformity to the duties of the moral law, and especially the duties of the second table ; or intending no more at farthest, than such seeming virtues, as proceed from natural principles, in opposition to those virtues that are more inward, spiritual, and divine ; as the honesty, justice, generosity, good-nature, and public spirit of many of

the heathen, are called *moral* virtues, in distinction from the holy faith, love, humility, and heavenly-mindedness of true Christians : I say, the word *moral* is not to be understood thus in this place.

But in order to a right understanding what is meant, it must be observed, that divines commonly make a distinction between *moral* good and evil, and *natural* good and evil. By *moral* evil, they mean the evil of sin, or that evil which is against duty, and contrary to what is right and ought to be. By *natural* evil, they do not mean that evil which is properly opposed to duty; but that which is contrary to mere nature, without any respect to a rule of duty. So the evil of suffering is called natural evil, such as pain and torment, disgrace, and the like: these things are contrary to mere nature, contrary to the nature of both bad and good, hateful to wicked men and devils, as well as good men and angels. So likewise natural defects are called natural evils, as if a child be monstrous, or a natural fool: these are natural evils, but are not moral evils, because they have not properly the nature of the evil of sin. On the other hand, as by moral evil, divines mean the evil of sin, or that which is contrary to what is right; so by *moral* good, they mean that which is contrary to sin, or that good in beings who have will and choice, whereby, as voluntary agents, they are, and act, as it becomes them to be and to act, or so as is most fit, and suitable, and lovely. By *natural* good, they mean that good that is entirely of a different kind from holiness or virtue, *viz.* that which perfects or suits nature, considering nature abstractly from any holy or unholy qualifications, and without any relation to any rule or measure of right and wrong.

Thus pleasure is a natural good; so is honor; so is strength; so is speculative knowledge, human learning, and policy. Thus there is a distinction to be made between the natural good that men are possessed of, and their moral good; and also between the natural and moral good of the angels in heaven: the great capacity of their understandings, and their great strength, and the honorable circumstances they are in as the great ministers of God's kingdom, whence they are called thrones, dominions, principalities, and powers, is the natural good which they are possessed of; but their perfect and glorious holiness and goodness, their pure and flaming love to God, and to the saints, and one another, is their moral good. So

divines

divines make a distinction between the natural and moral perfections of God : by the *moral* perfections of God, they mean those attributes which God exercises as a moral agent, or whereby the heart and will of God are good, right, and infinitely becoming, and lovely ; such as his righteousness, truth, faithfulness, and goodness ; or, in one word, his holiness. By God's *natural* attributes or perfections they mean those attributes, wherein, according to our way of conceiving of God, consists, not the holiness or moral goodness of God, but his greatness ; such as his power, his knowledge whereby he knows all things, and his being eternal, from everlasting to everlasting, his omnipresence, and his awful and terrible majesty.

The moral excellency of an intelligent voluntary being, is more immediately seated in the heart or will of moral agents. That intelligent being whose will is truly right and lovely, he is morally good or excellent.

This moral excellency of an intelligent being, when it is true and real, and not only external, or merely seeming and counterfeit, is *holiness*. Therefore *holiness* comprehends all the true moral excellency of intelligent beings : there is no other *true virtue*, but *real holiness*. Holiness comprehends all the true virtue of a good man, his love to God, his gracious love to men, his justice, his charity, and bowels of mercies, his gracious meekness and gentleness, and all other true Christian virtues that he has, belong to his holiness. So the holiness of God in the more extensive sense of the word, and the sense in which the word is commonly, if not universally used concerning God in scripture, is the same with the moral excellency of the divine nature, or his purity and beauty as a moral agent, comprehending all his moral perfections, his righteousness, faithfulness, and goodness. As in holy men, their charity, Christian kindness and mercy, belongs to their holiness ; so the kindness and mercy of God, belongs to his holiness. Holiness in man, is but the image of God's holiness : there are not more virtues belonging to the image, than are in the original : derived holiness has not more in it, than is in that underived holiness, which is its fountain : there is no more than grace for grace, or grace in the image, answerable to grace in the original.

As there are two kinds of attributes in God, according to our way of conceiving of him, his moral attributes, which are summed up in his *holiness*, and his natural attributes, of strength, knowledge,

knowlege, &c. that constitute the *greatness* of God ; so there is a twofold image of God in man, his *moral* or *spiritual* image, which is his holiness, that is the image of God's moral excellency ; (which image was lost by the fall ;) and God's *natural* image, consisting in man's reason and understanding, his natural ability, and dominion over the creatures, which is the image of God's natural attributes.

From what has been said, it may easily be understood what I intend, when I say that a love to divine things for the beauty of their *moral excellency*, is the beginning and spring of all holy affections. It has been already shown, under the former head, that the first objective ground of all holy affections is the supreme excellency of divine things as they are in themselves, or in their own nature ; I now proceed further, and say more particularly, that that kind of excellency of the nature of divine things, which is the first objective ground of all holy affections, is their moral excellency, or their holiness. *Holy persons*, in the exercise of *holy affections*, do love divine things primarily for their *holiness* : they love God, in the first place, for the beauty of his holiness or moral perfection, as being supremely amiable in itself. Not that the saints, in the exercise of gracious affections, do love God only for his holiness ; all his attributes are amiable and glorious in their eyes ; they delight in every divine perfection ; the contemplation of the infinite greatness, power, and knowlege, and terrible majesty of God, is pleasant to them. But their love to God for his holiness is what is most fundamental and essential in their love. Here it is that true love to God begins ; all other holy love to divine things flows from hence : this is the most essential and distinguishing thing that belongs to a holy love to God, with regard to the foundation of it. A love to God for the beauty of his moral attributes, leads to, and necessarily causes a delight in God for all his attributes ; for his moral attributes cannot be without his natural attributes : for infinite holiness supposes infinite wisdom, and an infinite capacity and greatness ; and all the attributes of God do as it were imply one another.

The true beauty and loveliness of all intelligent beings does primarily and most essentially consist in their moral excellency or holiness. Herein consists the loveliness of the angels, without which, with all their natural perfections, their strength, and their knowlege, they would have no more loveliness than devils. It is moral excellency alone, that is in itself, and on

its own account, the excellency of intelligent beings: it is this that gives beauty to, or rather is the beauty of their natural perfections and qualifications. Moral excellency is the excellency of natural excellencies. Natural qualifications are either excellent or otherwise, according as they are joined with moral excellency or not. Strength and knowlege does not render any being lovely, without holiness, but more hateful; though they render them more lovely, when joined with holiness. Thus the elect angels are the more glorious for their strength and knowlege, because these natural perfections of theirs are sanctified by their moral perfection. But though the devils are very strong, and of great natural understanding, they be not the more lovely: they are more terrible indeed, but not the more amiable; but on the contrary, the more hateful. The holiness of an intelligent creature, is the beauty of all his natural perfections. And so it is in God, according to our way of conceiving of the divine Being: holiness is in a peculiar manner the beauty of the divine nature. Hence we often read of the *beauty of holiness*, Psa. xxix. 2. Psa. xcvi. 9. and cx. 3. This renders all his other attributes glorious and lovely. It is the glory of God's wisdom, that it is a holy wisdom, and not a wicked subtilty and craftiness. This makes his majesty lovely, and not merely dreadful and horrible, that it is a holy majesty. It is the glory of God's immutability, that it is a holy immutability, and not an inflexible obstinacy in wickedness.

And therefore it must needs be, that a sight of God's loveliness must begin here. A true love to God must begin with a delight in his holiness, and not with a delight in any other attribute; for no other attribute is truly lovely without this, and no otherwise than as (according to our way of conceiving of God) it derives its loveliness from this; and therefore it is impossible that other attributes should appear lovely, in their true loveliness, until this is seen; and it is impossible that any perfection of the divine nature should be loved with true love until this is loved. If the true loveliness of all God's perfections, arises from the loveliness of his holiness; then the true love of all his perfections, arises from the love of his holiness. They that do not see the glory of God's holiness, cannot see any thing of the true glory of his mercy and grace: they see nothing of the glory of those attributes, as any excellency of God's nature, as it is in itself; though they may be affected with them, and love them, as they concern their interest: for these attributes are no part of the excellency of God's nature,

as that is excellent in itself, any otherwise than as they are included in his holiness, more largely taken ; or as they are a part of his moral perfection.

As the beauty of the divine nature does primarily consist in God's holiness, so does the beauty of all divine things. Herein consists the beauty of the saints, that they are saints, or holy ones : it is the moral image of God in them, which is their beauty ; and that is their holiness. Herein consists the beauty and brightness of the angels of heaven, that they are holy angels, and so not devils ; Dan. iv. 13, 17, 23. Matth. xxv. 31. Mark viii. 38. Acts x. 22. Rev. xiv. 10. Herein consists the beauty of the Christian religion, above all other religions, that it is so holy a religion. Herein consists the excellency of the word of God, that it is so holy ; Psal. cxix. 140. "Thy word " is very pure, therefore thy servant loveth it." vers. 128. "I " esteem all thy precepts concerning all things to be right ; " and I hate every false way." vers. 138. "Thy testimonies " that thou hast commanded, are righteous, and very faithful." And 172. "My tongue shall speak of thy word ; for all thy " commandments are righteousness." And Psal. xix. 7.—10. "The law of the Lord is perfect, converting the soul : the tes- " timony of the Lord is sure, making wise the simple. The " statutes of the Lord are right, rejoicing the heart : the com- " mandment of the Lord is pure, enlightening the eyes. The " fear of the Lord is clean, enduring for ever : the judgments " of the Lord are true, and righteous altogether : more to be " desired are they than gold, yea, than much fine gold ; sweeter " also than honey, and the honey-comb." Herein does pri- marily consist the amiableness and beauty of the Lord Jesus, whereby he is the chief among ten thousands, and altogether lovely ; even in that he is *the holy One of God*, Acts iii. 14. and *God's holy child*, Acts iv. 27. and *he that is holy, and he that is true*, Rev. iii. 7. All the spiritual beauty of his human nature, consisting in his meekness, lowliness, patience, heaven- less, love to God, love to men, condescension to the mean and vile, and compassion to the miserable, &c. all is summed up in his holiness. And the beauty of his divine nature, of which the beauty of his human nature is the image and reflection, does also primarily consist in his holiness. Herein primarily consists the glory of the gospel, that it is a holy gospel, and so bright an emanation of the holy beauty of God and Jesus Christ : herein consists the spiritual beauty of its doctrines, that they are holy doctrines, or doctrines according to godliness. And herein does consist the spiritual beauty of the way of salvation by Jesus Christ,

Christ, that it is so holy a way. And herein chiefly consists the glory of heaven, that it is the *holy city*, the *holy Jerusalem*, the *habitation of God's holiness*, and so of his glory, 1f. lxiii. 15. All the beauties of the new Jerusalem, as it is described in the two last chapters of Revelation, are but various representations of this: see chap. xxi. 2, 10, 11, 18, 21, 27. chap. xxii. 1, 3.

And therefore it is primarily on account of this kind of excellency, that the saints do love all these things. Thus they love the word of God, *because it is very pure*. It is on this account they love the saints; and on this account chiefly it is, that heaven is lovely to them, and those holy tabernacles of God amiable in their eyes: it is on this account that they love God; and on this account primarily it is, that they love Christ, and that their hearts delight in the doctrines of the gospel, and sweetly acquiesce in the way of salvation therein revealed.*

Under the head of the first distinguishing characteristic of gracious affection, I observed, that there is given to those that are regenerated, a new supernatural sense, that is as it were a certain divine spiritual taste, which is in its whole nature diverse from any former kinds of sensation of the mind, as tasting is diverse from any of the other five senses, and that something is perceived by a true saint in the exercise of this new sense of mind, in spiritual and divine things, as entirely different from any thing that is perceived in them by natural men, as the sweet taste of honey is diverse from the ideas men get of honey by looking on it or feeling of it: now this that I have been speaking, *viz.* the beauty of holiness, is that thing in spiritual and divine things, which is perceived by this spiritual sense, that is so diverse from all that natural men perceive in them;

* “ To the right closing with Christ's person, this is also required, to taste the bitterness of sin, as the greatest evil: else a man will never close with Christ, for his holiness in him, and from him, as the greatest good. For we told you, that that is the right closing with Christ for himself, when it is for his holiness. For ask, a whorish heart, what beauty he sees in the person of Christ; he will, after he has looked over his kingdom, his righteousness, all his works, see a beauty in them, because they do serve his turn, to comfort him only. Ask a virgin, he will see his happiness in all; but that which makes the Lord amiable is his holiness, which is in him to make him holy too. As in marriage, it is the personal beauty draws the heart. And hence I have thought it reason, that he that loves the brethren for a little grace, will love Christ much more.” *Shepard's Parable*, Part I. p. 84.

them ; this kind of beauty is the quality that is the immediate object of this spiritual sense ; this is the sweetness that is the proper object of this spiritual taste. The scripture often represents the beauty and sweetness of holiness as the grand object of a spiritual taste and spiritual appetite. This was the sweet food of the holy soul of Jesus Christ, John iv. 32, 34. " I have " meat to eat, that ye know not of.—My meat is to do the will " of him that sent me, and to finish his work." I know of no part of the holy scriptures, where the nature and evidences of true and sincere godliness, are so much of set purpose, and so fully and largely insisted on and delineated, as the 119th Psalm ; the psalmist declares his design in the first verses of the psalm, and he keeps his eye on this design all along, and pursues it to the end : but in this psalm the excellency of holiness is represented as the immediate object of a spiritual taste, relish, appetite and delight, *God's law*, that grand expression and emanation of the holiness of God's nature, and prescription of holiness to the creature, is all along represented as the food and entertainment, and as the great object of the love, the appetite, the complacency and rejoicing of the gracious nature, which prizes God's commandments *above gold, yea, the finest gold*, and to which they are *sweeter than the honey, and honey-comb* ; and that upon account of their holiness, as I observed before. The same psalmist declares, that this is the sweetness that a spiritual taste relishes in God's law, Psal. xix. 7, 8, 9, 10. " The law of the " Lord is perfect :—the commandment of the Lord is pure ; " the fear of the Lord is clean ; the statutes of the Lord are " right, rejoicing the heart :—the judgments of the Lord are " true, and righteous altogether : more to be desired are they " than gold, yea, than much fine gold ; sweeter also than honey " and the honey-comb."

A holy love has a holy object : the holiness of love consists especially in this, that it is the love of that which is holy, as holy, or for its holiness ; so that it is the holiness of the object, which is the quality whereon it fixes and terminates. An holy nature must needs love that in holy things chiefly, which is most agreeable to itself ; but surely that in divine things, which above all others is agreeable to holy nature, is holiness, because holiness must be above all other things agreeable to holiness ; for nothing can be more agreeable to any nature than itself ; holy nature must be above all things agreeable to holy nature : and so the holy nature of God and Christ, and the word of God, and other divine things, must be above all other things agreeable to the holy nature that is in the saints.

And

And again, an holy nature doubtless loves holy things, especially on the account of that for which sinful nature has enmity against them: but that for which chiefly sinful nature is at enmity against holy things, is their holiness; it is for this, that the carnal mind is enmity against God, and against the law of God, and the people of God. Now it is just arguing from contraries; from contrary causes, to contrary effects; from opposite natures, to opposite tendencies. We know that holiness is of a directly contrary nature to wickedness: as therefore it is the nature of wickedness chiefly to oppose and hate holiness; so it must be the nature of holiness chiefly to tend to, and delight in holiness.

The holy nature in the saints and angels in heaven (where the true tendency of it best appears) is principally engaged by the holiness of divine things. This is the divine beauty which chiefly engages the attention, admiration and praise of the bright and burning Seraphim; Is. vi. 3. "One cried unto another, and said, Holy, holy, holy is the Lord of hosts, the whole earth is full of his glory." And Rev. iv. 8. "They rest not day and night, saying, Holy, holy, holy, Lord God Almighty, which was, and is, and is to come." So the glorified saints, chap. xv. 4. "Who shall not fear thee, O Lord, and glorify thy name? for thou only art holy."

And the scriptures represent the saints on earth as adoring God primarily on this account, and admiring and extolling all God's attributes, either as deriving loveliness from his holiness, or as being a part of it. Thus when they praise God for his power, his holiness is the beauty that engages them; Psal. xciii. 1. "O sing unto the Lord a new song, for he hath done marvelous things: his right hand, and his HOLY arm hath gotten him the victory." So when they praise him for his justice and terrible majesty; Psal. xcix. 2, 3. "The Lord is great in Zion, and he is high above all people. Let them praise thy great and terrible name: for it is HOLY." vers. 5. "Exalt ye the Lord our God, and worship at his footstool: for he is HOLY." vers. 8, 9. "Thou wast a God that forgavest them, though thou tookest vengeance of their inventions. Exalt ye the Lord our God, and worship at his holy hill: for the Lord our God is HOLY." So when they praise God for his mercy and faithfulness; Psal. xcvii. 11, 12. "Light is sown for the righteous, and gladness for the upright in heart. Rejoice in the Lord, ye righteous: and give thanks at the remembrance of his HOLINESS." 1 Sam. ii. 2. "There

“ is none HOLY as the Lord : for there is none beside thee :
 “ neither is there any rock like our God.”

By this therefore all may try their affections, and particularly their love and joy. Various kinds of creatures shew the difference of their natures, very much, in the different things they relish as their proper good, one delighting in that which another abhors. Such a difference is there between true saints, and natural men : natural men have no sense of the goodness and excellency of holy things, at least for their holiness ; they have no taste of that kind of good ; and so may be said not to know that divine good, or not to see it ; it is wholly hid from them : but the saints, by the mighty power of God, have it discovered to them ; they have that supernatural, most noble and divine sense given them, by which they perceive it ; and it is this that captivates their hearts, and delights them above all things ; it is the most amiable and sweet thing to the heart of a true saint, that is to be found in heaven or earth ; that which above all others attracts and engages his soul ; and that wherein, above all things, he places his happiness, and which he looks upon for solace and entertainment to his mind, in this world, and full satisfaction and blessedness in another. By this you may examine your love to God, and to Jesus Christ, and to the word of God, and your joy in them, and also your love to the people of God, and your desires after heaven ; whether they be from a supreme delight in this sort of beauty, without being primarily moved from your imagined interest in them, or expectations from them. There are many high affections, great seeming love and rapturous joys, which have nothing of this holy relish belonging to them.

Particularly, by what has been said you may try your discoveries of the glory of God's grace and love, and your affections arising from them. The grace of God may appear lovely two ways ; either as *bonum utile*, a profitable good to me, that which greatly serves my interest, and so suits my self-love ; or as *bonum formosum*, a beautiful good in itself, and part of the moral and spiritual excellency of the divine nature. In this latter respect it is that the true saints have their hearts affected, and love captivated by the free grace of God in the first place.

From the things that have been said, it appears, that if persons have a great sense of the *natural* perfections of God, and are greatly affected with them, or have any other sight or sense of God than that which consists in, or implies a sense of the
 beauty

beauty of his *moral* perfections, it is no certain sign of grace : as particularly, mens having a great sense of the *awful greatness, and terrible majesty of God* ; for this is only God's natural perfection, and what men may see, and yet be entirely blind to the beauty of his moral perfection, and have nothing of that spiritual taste which relishes this divine sweetness.

It has been shown already, in what was said upon the first distinguishing mark of gracious affections, that that which is spiritual, is entirely different in its nature, from all that it is possible any graceless person should be the subject of, while he continues graceless. But it is possible that those who are wholly without grace, should have a clear sight, and very great and affecting sense of God's greatness, his mighty power, and awful majesty ; for this is what the devils have, though they have lost the spiritual knowlege of God, consisting in a sense of the amiableness of his moral perfections ; they are perfectly destitute of any sense or relish of that kind of beauty, yet they have a very great knowlege of the natural glory of God, (if I may so speak,) or his awful greatness and majesty ; this they behold, and are affected with the apprehensions of, and therefore tremble before him. This glory of God all shall behold at the day of judgment ; God will make all rational beings to behold it to a great degree indeed, angels and devils, saints and sinners : Christ will manifest his infinite greatness, and awful majesty to every one, in a most open, clear and convincing manner, and in a light that none can resist, when *he shall come in the glory of his Father, and every eye shall see him* ; when they shall cry to the mountains to fall upon them, to hide them from the face of him that sits upon the throne, they are represented as seeing the glory of God's majesty, *Is. ii. 10, 19, 21.* God will make all his enemies to behold this, and to live in a most clear and affecting view of it, in hell, to all eternity. God hath often declared his immutable purpose to make all his enemies to know him in this respect, in so often annexing these words to the threatenings he denounces against them, *And they shall know that I am the Lord* ; yea, he hath sworn that all men shall see his glory in this respect, *Numb. xiv. 21.* "As truly as I live, all the earth shall be filled with the glory of the Lord." And this kind of manifestation of God is very often spoken of in scripture, as made, or to be made, in the sight of God's enemies in this world ; *Exod. ix. 16. and chap. xiv. 18. and xv. 16. Psal. lxvi. 3. and xlvi. 10.* and other places innumerable.

This

This was a manifestation which God made of himself in the sight of that wicked congregation at mount Sinai ; deeply affecting them with it ; so that all the people in the camp trembled. Wicked men and devils will see, and have a great sense of every thing that appertains to the glory of God, but only the beauty of his moral perfection. They will see his infinite greatness and majesty, his infinite power, and will be fully convinced of his omniscience, and his eternity and immutability ; and they will see and know every thing appertaining to his moral attributes themselves, but only the beauty and amiableness of them : they will see and know that he is perfectly just and righteous, and true ; and that he is a holy God, of purer eyes than to behold evil, who cannot look on iniquity ; and they will see the wonderful manifestations of his infinite goodness and free grace to the saints ; and there is nothing will be hid from their eyes, but only the *beauty* of these moral attributes, and that beauty of the other attributes, which arises from it. And so natural men in this world are capable of having a very affecting sense of every thing else that appertains to God, but this only. Nebuchadnezzar had a great and very affecting sense of the infinite greatness and awful majesty of God, of his supreme and absolute dominion, and mighty and irresistible power, and of his sovereignty, and that he, and all the inhabitants of the earth, were nothing before him ; and also had a great conviction in his conscience of his justice, and an affecting sense of his great goodness, Dan. iv. 1, 2, 3, 34, 35, 37. And the sense that Darius had of God's perfections, seems to be very much like his, Dan. vi. 25, &c. But the saints and angels do behold the glory of God consisting in the *beauty of his holiness* : and it is this sight only, that will melt and humble the hearts of men, and wean them from the world, and draw them to God, and effectually change them. A sight of the awful greatness of God, may overpower mens strength, and be more than they can endure ; but if the moral beauty of God be hid, the enmity of the heart will remain in its full strength, no love will be inkindled, all will not be effectual to gain the will, but that will remain inflexible ; whereas the first glimpse of the moral and spiritual glory of God shining into the heart, produces all these effects as it were with omnipotent power, which nothing can withstand.

The sense that natural men may have of the awful greatness of God may affect them various ways ; it may not only terrify them,

them, but it may elevate them, and raise their joy and praise, as their circumstances may be. This will be the natural effect of it, under the real or supposed receipt of some extraordinary mercy from God, by the influence of mere principles of nature. It has been shown already, that the receipt of kindness may, by the influence of natural principles, affect the heart with gratitude and praise to God; but if a person, at the same time that he receives remarkable kindness from God, has a sense of his infinite greatness, and that he is but nothing in comparison of him, surely this will naturally raise his gratitude and praise the higher, for kindness to one so much inferior. A sense of God's greatness had this effect upon Nebuchadnezzar, under the receipt of that extraordinary favor of his restoration, after he had been driven from men, and had his dwelling with the beasts: a sense of God's exceeding greatness raises his gratitude very high; so that he does, in the most lofty terms, extol and magnify God, and calls upon all the world to do it with him: and much more, if a natural man, at the same time that he is greatly affected with God's infinite greatness and majesty, entertains a strong conceit that this great God has made him his child and special favourite, and promised him eternal glory in his highest love, will this have a tendency according to the course of nature, to raise his joy and praise to a great height.

Therefore, it is beyond doubt, that too much weight has been laid, by many persons of late, on discoveries of God's greatness, awful majesty, and natural perfection, operating after this manner, without any real view of the holy, lovely majesty of God. And experience does abundantly witness to what reason and scripture declare as to this matter; there having been very many persons, who have seemed to be overpowered with the greatness and awful majesty of God, and consequentially elevated in the manner that has been spoken of, who have been very far from having appearances of a Christian spirit and temper, in any manner of proportion, or fruits in practice in any wise agreeable; but their discoveries have worked in a way contrary to the operation of truly spiritual discoveries.

Not that a sense of God's greatness and natural attributes is not exceeding useful and necessary. For, as I observed before, this is implied in a manifestation of the beauty of God's holiness. Though that be something beyond it, it supposes it, as the greater supposes the less. And though natural men may have a sense of the natural perfections of God; yet undoubtedly

ly this is more frequent and common with the saints, than with natural men; and grace tends to enable men to see these things in a better manner, than natural men do; and not only enables them to see God's natural attributes, but that beauty of those attributes, which (according to our way of conceiving of God) is derived from his holiness.

IV. Gracious affections do arise from the mind's being enlightened, rightly and spiritually to understand or apprehend divine things.

Holy affections are not heat without light; but evermore arise from some information of the understanding, some spiritual instruction that the mind receives, some light or actual knowlege. The child of God is graciously affected, because he sees and understands something more of divine things than he did before, more of God or Christ, and of the glorious things exhibited in the gospel; he has some clearer and better view than he had before, when he was not affected: either he receives some understanding of divine things that is new to him; or has his former knowlege renewed after the view was decayed; 1 John iv. 7. "Every one that loveth, knoweth God." Phil. i. 9. "I pray that your love may abound more and more in knowlege, and in all judgment." Rom. x. 2. "They have a zeal of God, but not according to knowlege." Col. iii. 10. "The new man, which is renewed in knowlege." Psal. xliiii. 3, 4. "O fend out thy light and thy truth; let them lead me; let them bring me unto thy holy hill." John vi. 45. "It is written in the prophets, And they shall be all taught of God. Every man therefore that hath heard, and learned of the Father, cometh unto me." Knowlege is the key that first opens the hard heart and enlarges the affections, and so opens the way for men into the kingdom of heaven: Luke xi. 52. "Ye have taken away the key of knowlege."

Now there are many affections which do not arise from any light in the understanding. And when it is thus, it is a sure evidence that these affections are not spiritual, let them be ever so high. * Indeed they have some new apprehensions which they

* "Many that have had mighty strong affections at first conversion, afterwards become dry, and wither, and consume, and pine, and die away: and now their hypocrisy is manifest; if not to all the world by

they had not before. Such is the nature of man, that it is impossible his mind should be affected, unless it be by something that he apprehends, or that his mind conceives of. But in many persons those apprehensions or conceptions that they have, wherewith they are affected, have nothing of the nature of knowlege or instruction in them. As for instance; when a person is affected with a lively idea, suddenly excited in his mind, of some shape, or very beautiful pleasant form of countenance, or some shining light, or other glorious outward appearance: here is something apprehended or conceived by the mind; but there is nothing of the nature of instruction in it; persons become never the wiser by such things, or more knowing about God, or a Mediator between God and man, or the way of salvation by Christ, or any thing contained in any of the doctrines of the gospel. Persons by these external ideas have no further acquaintance with God, as to any of the attributes or perfections of his nature; nor have they any further understanding of his word, or any of his ways or works. Truly spiritual and gracious affections are not raised after this manner; these arise from the enlightening of the understanding to understand the things that are taught of God and Christ,

in

by open profaneness, yet to the discerning eye of living Christians, by a formal, barren, unfavoury, unfruitful heart and course; because they never had light to conviction enough as yet.—It is strange to see some people carried with mighty affection against sin and hell, and after Christ. And what is the hell you fear? A dreadful place. What is Christ? They scarce know so much as devils do; but that is all. Oh trust them not! Many *have*, and these *will* fall away to some lust, or opinion, or pride, or world; and the reason is, they never had light enough, John v. 35. “John was a burning and shining light, and they did joy in him for a season;” yet glorious as it was, they saw not Christ by it, especially not with divine light. It is rare to see Christians full both of light and affection. And therefore consider of this; many a man has been well brought up, and is of a sweet loving nature, mild and gentle, and harmless, likes and loves the best things, and his meaning, and mind, and heart is good, and has more in heart than in shew; and so hopes all shall go well with him. I say, there may lie greatest hypocrisy under greatest affections; especially if they want light. You shall be hardened in your hypocrisy by them. I never liked violent affections and pangs, but only such as were dropped in by light; because those come from an external principle, and last not, but these do. Men are not affrighted by the light of the sun, though clearer than the lightning.” *Shepard's Parable*, Part I. p. 146.

in a new manner, the coming to a new understanding of the excellent nature of God, and his wonderful perfections, some new view of Christ in his spiritual excellencies and fulness, or things opened to him in a new manner, that appertain to the way of salvation by Christ, whereby he now sees how it is, and understands those divine and spiritual doctrines which once were foolishness to him. Such enlightenings of the understanding as these, are things entirely different in their nature, from strong ideas of shapes and colours, and outward brightness and glory, or sounds and voices. That all gracious affections do arise from some instruction or enlightening of the understanding, is therefore a further proof, that affections which arise from such impression on the imagination, are not gracious affections, besides the things observed before, which make this evident.

Hence also it appears, that affections arising from texts of scripture coming to the mind are vain, when no instruction received in the understanding from those texts, or any thing taught in those texts, is the ground of the affection, but the manner of their coming to the mind. When Christ makes the scripture a means of the heart's burning with gracious affection, it is *by opening the scriptures to their understandings*; Luke xxiv. 32. "Did not our heart burn within us, while he talked with us by the way, and while he opened to us the scriptures?" It appears also that the affection which is occasioned by the coming of a text of scripture must be vain, when the affection is founded on something that is supposed to be taught by it, which really is not contained in it, nor in any other scripture; because such supposed instruction is not real instruction, but a mistake, and misapprehension of the mind. As for instance, when persons suppose that they are expressly taught by some scripture coming to their minds, that they in particular are beloved of God, or that their sins are forgiven, that God is their father, and the like; this is a mistake or misapprehension; for the scripture no where reveals the individual persons who are beloved, expressly; but only by consequence, by revealing the qualifications of persons that are beloved of God: and therefore this matter is not to be learned from scripture any other way than by consequence, and from these qualifications; for things are not to be *learned from* the scripture any other way than they are *taught in* the scripture.

Affections

Affections really arise from ignorance, rather than instruction, in these instances which have been mentioned; as likewise in some others that might be mentioned. As some, when they find themselves free of speech in prayer, they call it God's being with them; and this affects them more; and so their affections are set a-going and increased; when they look not into the cause of this freedom of speech, which may arise many other ways besides God's spiritual presence. So some are much affected with some apt thoughts that come into their minds about the scripture, and call it the Spirit of God teaching them. So they ascribe many of the workings of their own minds, which they have a high opinion of, and are pleased and taken with, to the special immediate influences of God's Spirit; and so are mightily affected with their privilege. And there are some instances of persons, in whom it seems manifest, that the first ground of their affection is some bodily sensation. The animal spirits, by some cause, (and probably sometimes by the devil) are suddenly and unaccountably put into a very agreeable motion, causing persons to feel pleasantly in their bodies; the animal spirits are put into such a motion as is wont to be connected with the exhilaration of the mind; and the soul, by the laws of the union of soul and body, hence feels pleasure. The motion of the animal spirits does not first arise from any affection or apprehension of the mind whatsoever; but the very first thing that is felt, is an exhilaration of the animal spirits, and a pleasant external sensation, it may be in their breasts. Hence through ignorance, the person being surprized, begins to think, surely this is the Holy Ghost coming into him. And then the mind begins to be affected and raised: there is first great joy; and then many other affections, in a very tumultuous manner, putting all nature, both body and mind, into a mighty ruffle. For though, as I observed before, it is the soul only that is *the seat of the affections*; yet this hinders not but that bodily sensations may, in this manner, be *an occasion of affections* in the mind.

And if mens religious affections do truly arise from some instruction or light in the understanding; yet the affection is not gracious, unless the light which is the ground of it be spiritual. Affections may be excited by that understanding of things, which they obtain merely by human teaching, with the common improvement of the faculties of the mind. Men may be much affected by knowlege of things of religion that they ob-

tain this way; as some philosophers have been mightily affected, and almost carried beyond themselves, by the discoveries they have made in mathematicks and natural philosophy. So men may be much affected from common illuminations of the Spirit of God, in which God assists mens faculties to a greater degree of that kind of understanding of religious matters, which they have in some degree, by only the ordinary exercise and improvement of their own faculties. Such illuminations may much affect the mind; as in many whom we read of in scripture, *that were once enlightened*: but these affections are not spiritual.

There is such a thing, if the scriptures are of any use to teach us any thing, as a spiritual, supernatural understanding of divine things, that is peculiar to the saints, and which those who are not saints have nothing of. It is certainly a kind of understanding, apprehending or discerning of divine things, that natural men have nothing of, which the apostle speaks of, 1 Cor. ii. 14. "But the natural men receiveth not the things of the Spirit of God; for they are foolishness unto him; neither can he know them, because they are spiritually discerned." It is certainly a kind of seeing or discerning spiritual things peculiar to the saints, which is spoken of, 1 John iii. 6. "Whosoever sinneth, hath not seen him, neither known him." 3 John 11. "He that doth evil, hath not seen God." And John vi. 40. "This is the will of him that sent me, that every one that seeth the Son, and believeth on him, may have everlasting life." Chap. xiv. 19. "The world seeth me no more; but ye see me." Chap. xvii. 3. "This is eternal life, that they might know thee the only true God, and Jesus Christ whom thou hast sent." Matth. xi. 27. "No man knoweth the Son, but the Father: neither knoweth any man the Father, but the Son, and he to whomsoever the Son will reveal him." John xii. 45. "He that seeth me, seeth him that sent me." Psal. ix. 10. "They that know thy name, will put their trust in thee." Phil. iii. 8. "I count all things but loss, for the excellency of the knowlege of Christ Jesus my Lord:"—vers. 10. "That I may know him."—And innumerable other places there are, all over the Bible, which shew the same. And that there is such a thing as an understanding of divine things, which in its nature and kind is wholly different from all knowlege that natural men have, is evident from this, that there is an understanding of divine things,

things, which the scripture calls spiritual understanding: Col. i. 9. "We do not cease to pray for you, and to desire that you may be filled with the knowlege of his will, in all wisdom and spiritual understanding." It has been already shown that that which is *spiritual*, in the ordinary use of the word in the New Testament, is entirely different in nature and kind, from all which natural men are, or can be the subjects of.

From hence it may be surely inferred, wherein spiritual understanding consists. For if there be in the saints a kind of apprehension or perception, which is in its nature perfectly diverse from all that natural men have, or that it is possible they should have, until they have a new nature; it must consist in their having a certain kind of ideas or sensations of mind, which are simply diverse from all that is or can be in the minds of natural men. And that is the same thing as to say, that it consists in the sensations of a new spiritual sense, which the souls of natural men have not; as is evident by what has been before, once and again observed. But I have already shown what that new spiritual sense is, which the saints have given them in regeneration, and what is the object of it. I have shown that the immediate object of it is the supreme beauty and excellency of the nature of divine things, as they are in themselves. And this is agreeable to the scripture: the apostle very plainly teaches, that the great thing discovered by spiritual light, and understood by spiritual knowlege, is the glory of divine things, 2 Cor. iv. 3, 4. "But if our gospel be hid, it is hid to them that are lost: in whom the god of this world hath blinded the minds of them that believe not, lest the light of the glorious gospel of Christ, who is the image of God, should shine unto him:" together with vers. 6. "For God, who commands the light to shine out of darkness, hath shined into our hearts, to give the light of the knowlege of the glory of God, in the face of Jesus Christ." And chap. iii. 18. preceding, "but we all with open face, beholding as in a glass the glory of the Lord, are changed into the same image, from glory to glory, even as by the Spirit of the Lord." And it must need be so, for as has been before observed, the scripture often teaches, that all true religion summarily consists in the love of divine things. And therefore that kind of understanding or knowlege, which is the proper foundation of true religion, must be the knowlege of the *loveliness of divine things*. For doubtless, that knowlege which is the proper foundation of *love*, is

the

the knowlege of *loveliness*. What that beauty or loveliness of divine things is, which is the proper and immediate object of a spiritual sense of mind, was shewed under the last head insisted on, *viz.* That it is the beauty of their moral perfection. Therefore it is in the view or sense of this, that spiritual understanding does more immediately and primarily consist. And indeed it is plain it can be nothing else; for (as has been shown) there is nothing pertaining to divine things, besides the beauty of their moral excellency, and those properties and qualities of divine things which this beauty is the foundation of, but what natural men and devils can see and know, and will know fully and clearly to all eternity.

From what has been said, therefore, we come necessarily to this conclusion, concerning that wherein spiritual understanding consists; *viz.* That it consists in *a sense of the heart, of the supreme beauty and sweetness of the holiness or moral perfection of divine things, together with all that discerning and knowlege of things of religion, that depends upon, and flows from such a sense.*

Spiritual understanding consists primarily in *a sense of heart of that spiritual beauty.* I say, *a sense of heart*; for it is not speculation merely that is concerned in this kind of understanding; nor can there be a clear distinction made between the two faculties of understanding and will, as acting distinctly and separately, in this matter. When the mind is sensible of the sweet beauty and amiableness of a thing, that implies a sensibleness of sweetness and delight in the presence of the idea of it: and this sensibleness of the amiableness or delightfulness of beauty, carries in the very nature of it, *the sense of the heart*; or an effect and impression the soul is the subject of, as a substance possessed of taste, inclination and will.

There is a distinction to be made between a mere *notional understanding*, wherein the mind only beholds things in the exercise of a speculative faculty; and *the sense of the heart*, wherein the mind does not only *speculate* and *behold* but *relishes* and *feels*. That sort of knowlege, by which a man has a sensible perception of amiableness and loathsomeness, or of sweetness and nauseousness, is not just the same sort of knowlege with that, by which he knows what a triangle is, and what a square is. The one is mere speculative knowlege; the other sensible knowlege, in which more than the mere intellect is concerned; the heart is the proper subject of it, or the soul as a being that not only beholds, but has inclination, and is pleased or displeased. And yet there is the nature of instruction

in it; as he that has perceived the sweet taste of honey, knows much more about it, than he who has only looked upon and felt of it.

The apostle seems to make a distinction between mere speculative knowlege of the things of religion, and spiritual knowlege, in calling that *the form of knowlege, and of the truth*: Rom. ii. 20. "Which hast the form of knowlege, and of the truth in the law." The latter is often represented by relishing, smelling, or tasting; 2 Cor. ii. 14. "Now thanks be to God, which always causeth us to triumph in Christ Jesus, and maketh manifest the favor of his knowlege in every place." Matth. xvi. 23. "Thou savourest not the things that be of God, but those things that be of men." 1 Pet. ii. 2, 3. "As newborn babes desire the sincere milk of the word, that ye may grow thereby; if so be ye have tasted that the Lord is gracious." Cant. i. 3. "Because of the *savour* of thy good ointments, thy name is as ointment poured forth, therefore do the virgins love thee:" compared with 1 John ii. 20. "But ye have an *unction* from the holy One, and ye know all things." Spiritual understanding *primarily* consists in this *sense, or taste of the moral beauty of divine things*; so that no knowlege can be called spiritual, any further than it arises from this, and has this in it. But *secondarily*, it includes *all that discerning and knowlege of things of religion, which depends upon, and flows from such a sense.*

When the true beauty and amiableness of the holiness or true moral good that is in divine things, is discovered to the soul, it as it were opens a new world to its view. This shews the glory of all the perfections of God, and of every thing appertaining to the divine Being. For as was observed before, the beauty of all arises from God's moral perfection. This shews the glory of all God's works, both of creation and providence. For it is the special glory of them, that God's holiness, righteousness, faithfulness, and goodness are so manifested in them; and without these moral perfections, there would be no glory in that power and skill with which they are wrought. The glorifying of God's moral perfections, is the special end of all the works of God's hands. By this sense of the moral beauty of divine things, is understood the sufficiency of Christ as a Mediator: for it is only by the discovery of the beauty of the moral perfection of Christ, that the believer is let into the knowlege of the excellency of his person, so as to know any thing more of it than the devils do: and it is only by the knowlege of the excellency of Christ's person, that any know his sufficiency as a Mediator;

Mediator ; for the latter depends upon, and arises from the former. It is by seeing the excellency of Christ's person, that the saints are made sensible of the preciousness of his blood, and its sufficiency to atone for sin : for therein consists the preciousness of Christ's blood, that it is the blood of so excellent and amiable a person. And on this depends the meritoriousness of his obedience, and sufficiency and prevalence of his intercession. By this sight of the moral beauty of divine things, is seen the beauty of the way of salvation by Christ ; for that consists in the beauty of the moral perfections of God, which wonderfully shines forth in every step of this method of salvation, from beginning to end. By this is seen the fitness and suitableness of this way ; for this wholly consists in its tendency to deliver us from sin and hell, and to bring us to the happiness which consists in the possession and enjoyment of moral good, in a way sweetly agreeing with God's moral perfections. And in the way's being contrived so as to attain these ends, consists the excellent wisdom of that way. By this is seen the excellency of the word of God. Take away all the moral beauty and sweetness in the word, and the Bible is left wholly a dead letter, a dry, lifeless, tasteless thing. By this is seen the true foundation of our duty, the worthiness of God to be so esteemed, honoured, loved, submitted to, and served, as he requires of us, and the amiableness of the duties themselves that are required of us. And by this is seen the true evil of sin : for he who sees the beauty of holiness, must necessarily see the hatefulnes of sin, its contrary. By this men understand the true glory of heaven, which consists in the beauty and happiness that is in holiness. By this is seen the amiableness and happiness of both saints and angels. He that sees the beauty of holiness, or true moral good, sees the greatest and most important thing in the world, which is the fulness of all things, without which all the world is empty, no better than nothing, yea, worse than nothing. Unless this is seen, nothing is seen that is worth the seeing ; for there is no other true excellency or beauty. Unless this be understood, nothing is understood that is worthy of the exercise of the noble faculty of understanding. This is the beauty of the Godhead, and the divinity of divinity, (if I may so speak,) the good of the infinite fountain of good ; without which God himself (if that were possible to be) would be an infinite evil ; without which, we ourselves had better never have been ; and without which there had better have been no being. He therefore in effect knows nothing, that knows not this ; his knowledge is but the shadow of knowledge, or the form of knowledge, as the apostle calls it. Well therefore

therefore may the scripture represent those who are destitute of that spiritual sense, by which is perceived the beauty of holiness, as totally blind, deaf, and senseless, yea, dead. And well may regeneration, in which this divine sense is given to the soul by its Creator, be represented as opening the blind eyes, and raising the dead, and bringing a person into a new world. For if what has been said be considered, it will be manifest, that when a person has this sense and knowlege given him, he will view nothing as he did before; though before he *knew* all things *after the flesh*, yet *henceforth he will know them so no more*; and *he is become a new creature, old things are passed away, behold, all things are become new*; agreeable to 2 Cor. v. 16, 17.

And besides the things that have been already mentioned, there arises from this sense of spiritual beauty, all true experimental knowlege of religion, which is of itself as it were a new world of knowlege. He that sees not the beauty of holiness, knows not what one of the graces of God's Spirit is, he is destitute of any idea or conception of all gracious exercises of soul, and all holy comforts and delights, and all effects of the saving influences of the Spirit of God on the heart; and so is ignorant of the greatest works of God, the most important and glorious effects of his power upon the creature; and also is wholly ignorant of the saints as saints, he knows not what they are; and in effect is ignorant of the whole spiritual world.

Things being thus, it plainly appears, that God's implanting that spiritual supernatural sense which has been spoken of, makes a great change in a man. And were it not for the very imperfect degree, in which this sense is commonly given at first, or the small degree of this glorious light that first dawns upon the soul; the change made by this spiritual opening of the eyes in conversion, would be much greater, and more remarkable every way, than if a man, who had been born blind, and with only the other four senses, should continue so a long time, and then at once should have the sense of seeing imparted to him in the midst of the clear light of the sun, discovering a world of visible objects. For though sight be more noble than any of the other external senses, yet this spiritual sense which has been spoken of, is infinitely more noble than that, or any other principle of discerning that a man naturally has, and the object of this sense infinitely greater and more important.

This

This sort of understanding or knowlege, is that knowlege of divine things from whence all truly gracious affections do proceed; by which therefore all affections are to be tried. Those affections that arise wholly from any other kind of knowlege, or do result from any other kind of apprehensions of mind, are vain. †

From what has been said, may be learned wherein the most essential difference, lies between that light or understanding which is given by the common influences of the Spirit of God, on the hearts of natural men, and that saving instruction which is given to the saints. The latter primarily and most essentially lies in beholding the holy beauty that is in divine things; which is the only *true* moral good, and which the soul of fallen man is by nature totally blind to. The former consists only in a further understanding, through the assistance of natural principles, of those things which men may know, in some measure, by the alone ordinary exercise of their faculties. And this knowlege consists only in the knowlege of those things pertaining

† “ Take heed of contenting yourselves with every kind of knowlege. Do not worship every image of your own heads; especially you that fall short of truth, or the knowlege of it. For when you have some, there may be yet that wanting, which may make you sincere. There are many men of great knowlege, able to teach themselves, and others too; and yet their hearts are unsound. How comes this to pass? Is it because they have so much light? No; but because they want much. And therefore content not yourselves with every knowlege. There is some knowlege which men have by the light of nature, (which leaves them without excuse) from the book of creation; some by power of education; some by the light of the law, whereby men know their sin and evils; some by the letter of the gospel; and so men may know much, and speak well; and so in seeing, see not: some by the Spirit, and may see much, so as to prophecy in Christ’s name, and yet bid depart, Matth. vii. Now there is *a light of glory*, whereby the elect see things in another manner: to tell you how, they cannot: it is the beginning of light in heaven: and the same Spirit that fills Christ, filling their minds, that they know, by this anointing, all things; which if ever you have, you must become babes and fools in your own eyes. God will never write his law in your minds, until all the scribblings of it are blotted out. Account all your knowlege loss for the gaining of this. It is sad to see many a man pleasing himself in his own dreaming delusions; yet the poor creature in seeing, sees not; which is God’s heavy curse upon men under greatest means, and which lays all waste and desolate.” *Shepard’s Parable*, Part. I. p. 147.

taining to religion, which are *natural*. Thus for instance, in those awakenings and convictions of conscience, that natural men are often subject to, the Spirit of God gives no knowledge of the true *moral* beauty which is in divine things; but only assists the mind to a clearer idea of the guilt of sin, or its relation to a punishment, and connection with the *evil of suffering*, (without any sight of its true *moral* evil, or odiousness as sin,) and a clearer idea of the *natural* perfections of God, wherein consists, not his holy beauty and glory, but his awful and terrible greatness. It is a clear sight of this, that will fully awaken the consciences of wicked men at the day of judgment, *without any spiritual light*. And it is a lesser degree of the same, that awakens the consciences of natural men, *without spiritual light*, in this world. The same discoveries are in some measure given in the conscience of an awakened sinner in this world, which will be given more fully in the consciences of sinners at the day of judgment. The same kind of sight or apprehension of God, in a lesser degree makes awakened sinners in this world sensible of the dreadful guilt of sin, against so great and terrible a God, and sensible of its amazing punishment, and fills them with fearful apprehensions of divine wrath; that will thoroughly convince all wicked men, of the infinitely dreadful nature and guilt of sin, and astonish them with apprehensions of wrath, when Christ shall come in the glory of his power and majesty, and every eye shall see him, and all the kindreds of the earth shall wail because of him. And in those common illuminations, which are sometimes given to natural men, exciting in them some kind of religious desire, love and joy, the mind is only assisted to a clearer apprehension of the *natural good* that is in divine things. Thus sometimes, under common illuminations, men are raised with the ideas of the natural good that is in heaven; as its outward glory, its ease, its honor and advancement, a being there the objects of the high favour of God, and the great respect of men and angels, &c. So there are many things exhibited in the gospel, concerning God and Christ, and the way of salvation, that have a *natural good* in them, which suits the natural principle of self-love. Thus in that great goodness of God to sinners, and the wonderful dying love of Christ, there is a natural good, which all men love, as they love themselves; as well as a spiritual and holy beauty, which is seen only by the regenerate. Therefore there are many things appertaining to the word

of God's grace delivered in the gospel, which may cause natural men, when they hear it, *anon with joy to receive it*. All that love which natural men have to God, and Christ, and Christian virtues, and good men, is not from any sight of the amiableness of the holiness, or true *moral* excellency of these things; but only for the sake of the *natural* good there is in them. All natural mens hatred of sin, is as much from principles of nature, as mens hatred of a tyger for his rapaciousness, or their aversion to a serpent for his poison and hurtfulness: and all their love of Christian virtue, is from no higher principle than their love of a man's good nature, which appears amiable to natural men; but no otherwise than silver and gold appears amiable in the eyes of a merchant, or than the blackness of the soil is beautiful in the eyes of the farmer.

From what has been said of the nature of spiritual understanding, it appears, that spiritual understanding does not consist in any new doctrinal knowlege, or in having suggested to the mind any new proposition, not before read or heard of: for it is plain, that this suggesting of new propositions, is a thing entirely diverse from giving the mind a new taste or relish of beauty and sweetness. * It is also evident, that spiritual knowlege does not consist in any new doctrinal explanation of any part of the scripture; for still, this is but doctrinal knowlege, or the knowlege of propositions; the doctrinal explaining of any part of scripture, is only giving us to understand, what are the propositions contained or taught in that part of scripture.

Hence it appears, that the *spiritual understanding* of the scripture, does not consist in opening to the mind the mystical meaning of the scripture, in its parables, types and allegories; for this is only a doctrinal explication of the scripture. He that explains

* Calvin, in his Institutions, Book I. Chap. ix. § 1. says, "It is not the office of the Spirit that is promised us, to make new and before unheard-of revelations, or to coin some new kind of doctrine, which tends to draw us away from the received doctrine of the gospel; but to seal and confirm to us that very doctrine which is by the gospel." And in the same place he speaks of some, that in those days maintained the contrary notion, *pretending to be immediately led by the Spirit, as persons that were governed by a most haughty self conceit; and not so properly to be looked upon as only labouring under a mistake, as driven by a sort of raving madness.*

explains what is meant by the stony ground, and the seed's springing up suddenly, and quickly withering away, only explains what propositions or doctrines are taught in it. So he that explains what is typified by Jacob's ladder, and the angels of God ascending and descending on it, or what was typified by Joshua's leading Israel through Jordan, only shews what propositions are hid in these passages. And many men can explain these types, who have no spiritual knowlege. It is possible that a man might know how to interpret all the types, parables, enigmas, and allegories in the Bible, and not have one beam of spiritual light in his mind; because he may not have the least degree of that spiritual sense of the holy beauty of divine things which has been spoken of, and may see nothing of this kind of glory in any thing contained in any of these mysteries, or any other part of the scripture. It is plain, by what the apostle says, that a man might understand all such mysteries, and have no saving grace; 1 Cor. xiii. 2. "And though I have the gift of prophecy, and understand all mysteries, and all knowlege, and have not charity, it profiteth me nothing." They therefore are very foolish, who are exalted in an opinion of their own spiritual attainments, from notions that come into their minds, of the mystical meaning of these and those passages of scripture, as though it was a spiritual understanding of these passages, immediately given them by the Spirit of God, and hence have their affections highly raised: and what has been said, shews the vanity of such affections.

From what has been said, it is also evident, that it is not spiritual knowlege, for persons to be informed of their duty, by having it immediately suggested to their minds, that such and such outward actions or deeds are the will of God. If we suppose that it is truly God's manner thus to signify his will to his people, by immediate inward suggestions, such suggestions have nothing of the nature of spiritual light. Such kind of knowlege would only be one kind of doctrinal knowlege: a proposition concerning the will of God, is as properly a doctrine of religion, as a proposition concerning the nature of God, or a work of God: and an having either of these kinds of propositions, or any other proposition, declared to a man, either by speech or inward suggestion, differs vastly from an having the holy beauty of divine things manifested to the soul, wherein spiritual knowlege does most essentially consist. Thus there was no spiritual light in Balaam; though he had the will of God

God immediately suggested to him by the Spirit of God from time to time, concerning the way that he should go, and what he should do and say.

It is manifest therefore, that a being led and directed in this manner, is not that holy and spiritual *leading of the Spirit of God*, which is peculiar to the saints, and a distinguishing mark of the sons of God, spoken of Rom. viii. 14. "For as many as are led by the Spirit of God, are the sons of God." Gal. v. 18. "But if ye be led by the Spirit, ye are not under the law."

And if persons have the will of God concerning their actions, suggested to them by some text of scripture, suddenly and extraordinarily brought to their minds, which text, as the words lay in the Bible before they came to their minds, related to the action and behaviour of some other person, but they suppose, as God sent the words to them, he intended something further by them, and meant such a particular action of theirs; I say, if persons should have the will of God thus suggested to them with texts of scripture, it alters not the case. The suggestion being accompanied with an apt text of scripture, does not make the suggestion to be the nature of spiritual instruction. As for instance, if a person in New-England, on some occasion, were at a loss whether it was his duty to go into some popish or heathenish land, where he was like to be exposed to many difficulties and dangers, and should pray to God that he would shew him the way of his duty; and after earnest prayer, should have those words which God spake to Jacob, Gen. xli. suddenly and extraordinarily brought to his mind, as if they were spoken to him; "Fear not to go down into Egypt; and I will go with thee; and I will also surely bring thee up again." In which words, though as they lay in the Bible before they came to his mind, they related only to Jacob, and his behavior; yet he supposes that God has a further meaning, as they were brought and applied to him; that thus they are to be understood in a new sense, that by Egypt is to be understood this particular country he has in his mind, and that the action intended is his going thither, and that the meaning of the promise is, that God would bring him back into New-England again. There is nothing of the nature of a spiritual or gracious leading of the Spirit in this; for there is nothing of the nature of spiritual understanding in it. Thus to understand texts of scripture, is not to have a spiritual understanding of them. Spiritually to understand

understand the scripture, is rightly to understand what *is in* the scripture, and what *was in* it before it was understood; it is to understand rightly, what *used to be contained in* the meaning of it, and not the making a new meaning. When the mind is enlightened spiritually and rightly to understand the scripture, it is enabled to see that in the scripture, which before was not seen, *by reason of blindness*. But if it was by reason of blindness, that is an evidence that the same meaning was in it before, otherwise it would have been no blindness not to see it; it is no blindness not to see a meaning which is not there. Spiritually enlightening the eyes to understand the scripture, is *to open the eyes*, Psa. cxix. 18. "Open thou mine eyes, that I may behold wondrous things out of thy law;" which argues that the reason why the same was not seen in the scripture before, was, that the eyes were *shut*; which would not be the case, if the meaning that is now understood was not there before, but is now newly added to the scripture, by the manner of the scripture's coming to my mind. This making a new meaning to the scripture, is the same thing as making a new scripture; it is properly adding to the word, which is threatened with so dreadful a curse. Spiritually to understand the scripture, is to have the eyes of the mind opened, to behold the wonderful spiritual excellency of the glorious things contained in the true meaning of it, and that always were contained in it, ever since it was written: to behold the amiable and bright manifestations of the divine perfections, and of the excellency and sufficiency of Christ, and the excellency and suitableness of the way of salvation by Christ, and the spiritual glory of the precepts and promises of the scripture, &c. which things are and always were in the Bible, and would have been seen before, if it had not been for blindness, without having any new sense added, by the words being sent by God to a particular person, and spoken anew to him, with a new meaning.

And as to a gracious *leading of the Spirit*, it consists in two things; partly in *instructing* a person in his duty by the Spirit, and partly in powerfully *inducing* him to comply with that instruction. But so far as the gracious leading of the Spirit lies in instruction, it consists in a person's being guided by a spiritual and distinguishing taste of that which has in it true moral beauty. I have shewn that spiritual knowlege primarily consists in a taste or relish of the amiableness and beauty of that which is truly good and holy: this holy relish is a thing that
discerns

discerns and distinguishes between good and evil, between holy and unholy, without being at the trouble of a train of reasoning. As he who has a true relish of external beauty, knows what is beautiful by looking upon it; he stands in no need of a train of reasoning about the proportion of the features, in order to determine whether that which he sees be a beautiful countenance or no; he needs nothing but only the glance of his eye. He who has a rectified musical ear, knows whether the sound he hears be true harmony; he does not need first to be at the trouble of the reasonings of a mathematician, about the proportion of the notes. He that has a rectified palate, knows what is good food, as soon as he tastes it, without the reasoning of a physician about it. There is a holy beauty and sweetness in words and actions, as well as a natural beauty in countenances and sounds, and sweetness in food; Job. xii. 11. "Doth not the ear try words, and the mouth taste his meet?" When a holy and amiable action is suggested to the thoughts of a holy soul; that soul, if in the lively exercise of its spiritual taste, at once sees a beauty in it, and so inclines to it, and closes with it. On the contrary, if an unworthy unholy action be suggested to it, its sanctified eye sees no beauty in it, and is not pleased with it; its sanctified taste relishes no sweetness in it, but on the contrary, it is nauseous to it. Yea its holy taste and appetite leads it to think of that which is truly lovely, and naturally suggests it; as a healthy taste and appetite naturally suggests the idea of its proper object. Thus a holy person is led by the Spirit, as he is instructed and led by his holy taste, and disposition of heart; whereby, in the lively exercise of grace, he easily distinguishes good and evil, and knows at once what is a suitable amiable behaviour towards God, and towards man, in this case and the other; and judges what is right, as it were spontaneously, and of himself, without a particular deduction, by any other arguments than the beauty that is seen, and goodness that is tasted. Thus Christ blames the Pharisees, that they *did not, even of their own selves, judge what was right*, without needing miracles to prove it, Luke xii. 57. The apostle seems plainly to have respect to this way of judging of spiritual beauty, in Rom. xii. 2. "Be ye transformed by the renewing of your mind, that ye may prove what is that good, and perfect, and acceptable will of God."

There is such a thing as *good taste of natural beauty*, (which learned men often speak of,) that is exercised about *temporal things*,

things, in judging of them ; as about the justness of a speech, the goodness of style, the beauty of a poem, the gracefulness of deportment, &c. A late great philosopher of our nation, writes thus upon it* ; “ To have a *taste*, is to give things their real value, to be touched with the good, to be shocked with the ill ; not to be dazzled with false lustres, but in spite of all colours, and every thing that might deceive or amuse, to judge soundly. *Taste* and *judgment* then should be the same thing ; and yet it is easy to discern a difference. The *judgment* forms its opinions from reflection : the reason on this occasion fetches a kind of circuit, to arrive at its end ; it supposes principles, it draws consequences, and it judges ; but not without a thorough knowledge of the case ; so that after it has pronounced, it is ready to render a reason of its decrees. *Good taste* observes none of these formalities ; ere it has time to consult, it has taken its side ; as soon as ever the object is presented it, the impression is made, the sentiment formed, ask no more of it. As the ear is wounded with a harsh sound, as the smell is soothed with an agreeable odour, before ever the reason have meddled with those objects to judge of them, so the *taste* opens itself at once, and prevents all reflection. They may come afterwards to confirm it, and discover the secret reasons of its conduct ; but it was not in its power to wait for them. Frequently it happens not to know them at all, and what pains soever it uses, cannot discover what it was determined it to think as it did. This conduct is very different from that the *judgment* observes in its decisions : unless we chuse to say, that *good taste* is as it were a first motion, or a kind of instinct of right reason, which hurries on with rapidity, and conducts more securely than all the reasonings she could make ; it is a first glance of the eye, which discovers to us the nature and relations of things in a moment.”

Now as there is such a kind of *taste* of the mind as this, which philosophers speak of, whereby persons are guided in their judgment, of the natural beauty, gracefulness, propriety, nobleness and sublimity of speeches and actions, whereby they judge as it were by the glance of the eye, or by inward sensation, and the first impression of the object ; so there is likewise
such

* Chambers's Dictionary, under the word TASTE.

such a thing as a *divine taste*, given and maintained by the Spirit of God, in the hearts of the saints, whereby they are in like manner led and guided in discerning and distinguishing the true spiritual and holy beauty of actions; and that more easily, readily, and accurately, as they have more or less of the Spirit of God dwelling in them. And thus *the sons of God are led by the Spirit of God, in their behaviour in the world.*

A holy disposition and spiritual taste, where grace is strong and lively, will enable a soul to determine what actions are right and becoming Christians, not only more speedily, but far more exactly, than the greatest abilities without it. This may be illustrated by the manner in which some habits of mind, and dispositions of heart, of a nature inferior to true grace, will teach and guide a man in his actions. As for instance, if a man be a very good natured man, his good nature will teach him better how to act benevolently amongst mankind, and will direct him, on every occasion, to those speeches and actions, which are agreeable to rules of goodness, than the strongest reason will a man of a morose temper. So if a man's heart be under the influence of an entire friendship, and most endeared affection to another; though he be a man of an indifferent capacity, yet this habit of his mind will direct him, far more readily and exactly, to a speech and deportment, or manner of behaviour, which shall in all respects be sweet and kind, and agreeable to a benevolent disposition of heart, than the greatest capacity without it. He has as it were a spirit within him, that guides him; the habit of his mind is attended with a taste, by which he immediately relishes that air and mien which is benevolent, and disrelishes the contrary, and causes him to distinguish between one and the other *in a moment*, more precisely, than the most accurate reasonings can find out *in many hours*. As the nature and inward tendency of a stone, or other heavy body, that is let fall from a loft, shews the way to the centre of the earth, more exactly in an instant, than the ablest mathematician, without it, could determine, by his most accurate observations, in a whole day. Thus it is that a spiritual disposition and taste teaches and guides a man in his behaviour in the world. So an eminently humble, or meek, or charitable disposition, will direct a person of mean capacity to such a behaviour, as is agreeable to Christian rules of humility, meekness and charity, far more readily and precisely, than the most diligent study, and elaborate reasonings, of a man of the strongest faculties,

faculties, who has not a Christian spirit within him. So also will a spirit of love to God, and holy fear and reverence towards God, and filial confidence in God, and an heavenly disposition, teach and guide a man in his behaviour.

It is an exceeding difficult thing for a wicked man, destitute of Christian principles in his heart, to guide him, to know how to demean himself like a Christian, with the life, and beauty, and heavenly sweetness of a truly holy humble, Christ-like behaviour. He knows not how to put on these garments. neither do they fit him; Eccl. x. 2, 3. "A wise man's heart is at his right hand; but a fool's heart is at his left. Yea also, when he that is a fool walketh by the way, his wisdom faileth him, and he saith to every one that he is a fool:" with vers. 15. "The labor of the foolish wearieth every one of them, because he knoweth not how to go to the city." Prov. x. 32. "The lips of the righteous know what is acceptable." Chap. xv. 2. "The tongue of the wise useth knowlege aright: but the mouth of fools poureth out foolishness." And chap. xvi. 23. "The heart of the righteous teacheth his mouth, and addeth learning to his lips."

The saints in thus judging of actions by a spiritual taste, have not a particular recourse to the express rules of God's word, with respect to every word and action that is before them, the good or evil of which they thus judge of: but yet their taste itself in general, is subject to the rule of God's word, and must be tried by that, and a right reasoning upon it. As a man of a rectified palate judges of particular morsels by his taste; but yet his palate itself must be judged of, whether it be right or no, by certain rules and reasons. But a spiritual taste of soul, mightily helps the soul, in its reasonings on the word of God, and in judging of the true meaning of its rules; as it removes the prejudices of a depraved appetite, and naturally leads the thoughts in the right channel, casts a light on the word of God, and causes the true meaning most naturally to come to mind, through the harmony there is between the disposition and relish of a sanctified soul, and the true meaning of the rules of God's word. Yea, this harmony tends to bring the texts themselves to mind, on proper occasions; as the particular state of the stomach and palate, tends to bring such particular meats and drinks to mind, as are agreeable to that state. Thus *the children of God are led by the Spirit of God* in judging of actions themselves, and in their meditations upon, and judg-

ing of, and applying the rules of God's holy word : and so God *teaches them his statutes, and causes them to understand the way of his precepts* ; which the psalmist so often prays for.

But this leading of the Spirit is a thing exceeding diverse from that which some call so ; which consists not in teaching them God's statutes and precepts, that he has already given ; but in giving them new precepts, by immediate inward speech or suggestion ; and has in it no tasting the true excellency of things, or judging or discerning the nature of things at all. They do not determine what is the will of God by any taste or relish, or any manner of judgment of the nature of things, but by an immediate dictate concerning the thing to be done ; there is no such thing as any judgment or wisdom in the case. Whereas in that leading of the Spirit which is peculiar to God's children, is imparted that true wisdom, and holy discretion, so often spoken of in the word of God ; which is high above the other way, as the stars are higher than a glow-worm ; and that which Balaam and Saul (who sometimes were led by the Spirit in that other way) never had, and no natural man can have, without a change of nature.

What has been said of the nature of spiritual understanding, as consisting most essentially in a divine supernatural sense and relish of the heart, not only shews that there is nothing of it in this falsely supposed *leading of the Spirit*, which has been now spoken of ; but also shows the difference between spiritual understanding, and all kinds and forms of enthusiasm, all imaginary fights of God and Christ and heaven, all supposed witnessing of the Spirit, and testimonies of the love of God by immediate inward suggestion ; and all impressions of future events, and immediate revelations of any secret facts whatsoever ; all enthusiastical impressions and applications of words of scripture, as though they were words now immediately spoken by God to a particular person, in a new meaning, and carrying something more in them, than the words contain as they lie in the Bible ; and all interpretations of the mystical meaning of the scripture, by supposed immediate revelation. None of these things consist in a divine sense and relish of the *heart*, of the holy beauty and excellency of divine things ; nor have they any thing to do with such a sense ; but all consist in impressions in the *head* ; all are to be referred to the head of *impressions on the imagination*, and consist in the exciting external ideas in the mind, either in ideas of outward shapes and colours, or words spoken,

spoken, or letters written, or ideas of things external and sensible, belonging to actions done, or events accomplished or to be accomplished. An enthusiastical supposed manifestation of the love of God, is made by the exciting an idea of a smiling countenance, or some other pleasant outward appearance, or by the idea of pleasant words spoken, or written, excited in the imagination, or some pleasant bodily sensation. So when persons have an imaginary revelation of some secret fact, it is by exciting external ideas; either of some words, implying a declaration of that fact, or some visible or sensible circumstances of such a fact. So the supposed leading of the Spirit, to do the will of God, in outward behaviour, is either by exciting the idea of words (which are outward things) in their minds, either the words of scripture or other words, which they look upon as an immediate command of God; or else by exciting and impressing strongly the ideas of the outward actions themselves. So when an interpretation of a scripture type or allegory, is immediately, in an extraordinary way, strongly suggested, it is by suggesting words, as though one secretly whispered and told the meaning; or by exciting other ideas in the imagination.

Such sort of experiences and discoveries as these commonly raise the affections of such as are deluded by them, to a great height, and make a mighty uproar in both soul and body. And a very great part of the false religion that has been in the world, from one age to another, consists in such discoveries as these, and in the affections that flow from them. In such things consisted the experiences of the ancient Pythagoreans among the Heathen, and many others among them, who had strange ecstasies and raptures, and pretended to a divine *afflatus*, and immediate revelations from heaven. In such things as these seem to have consisted the experiences of the Essenes, an ancient sect among the Jews, at, and after the times of the apostles. In such things as these consisted the experiences of many of the ancient Gnostics, and the Montanists, and many other sects of ancient heretics, in the primitive ages of the Christian church. And in such things as these consisted the pretended immediate converse, with God and Christ, and saints and angels of heaven, of the Monks, Anchorites, and Recluses, that formerly abounded in the church of Rome. In such things consisted the pretended high experiences, and great spirituality of many sects of enthusiasts, that swarmed in the world after the reformation; such as the Anabaptists, Antinomians, and Familists,

Familists, the followers of N. Stork, Th. Muncer, Jo. Becold, Henry Pfeifer, David George, Casper Swenckfield, Henry Nicolas, Johannes Agricola Eislebius; and the many wild enthusiasts that were in England in the days of Oliver Cromwell; and the followers of Mrs. Hutchison, in New-England; as appears by the particular and large accounts given of all these sects, by that eminently holy man, Mr. Samuel Rutherford, in his *Display of the spiritual Antichrist*. And in such things as these consisted the experiences of the late French prophets, and their followers. And in these things seems to lie the religion of the many kinds of enthusiasts of the present day. It is by such sort of religion as this chiefly that Satan transforms himself into an angel of light: and it is that which he has ever most successfully made use of to confound hopeful and happy revivals of religion, from the beginning of the Christian church to this day. When the Spirit of God is poured out, to begin a glorious work, then the old serpent, as fast as possible, and by all means introduces this bastard religion, and mingles it with the true; which has from time to time soon brought all things into confusion. The pernicious consequence of it is not easily imagined or conceived of, until we see and are amazed with the awful effects of it, and the dismal desolation it has made. If the revival of true religion be very great in its beginning, yet if this bastard comes in, there is danger of its doing as Gideon's bastard Ahimelech did, who never left until he had slain all his threescore and ten true born sons, excepting one, that was forced to flee. Great and strict therefore should be the watch and guard that ministers maintain against such things, especially at a time of great awakening: for men, especially the common people, are easily bewitched with such things; they having such a glaring and glistening shew of high religion; and the devil hiding his own shape, and appearing as an angel of light, that men may not be afraid of him, but may adore him.

The imagination or phantasy seems to be that wherein are formed all those delusions of Satan, which those are carried away with, who are under the influence of false religion, and counterfeit graces and affections. Here is the devil's grand lurking-place, the very nest of foul and delusive spirits. It is very much to be doubted, whether the devil can come at the soul of man, at all to affect it, or to excite any thought or motion, or produce any effect whatsoever in it, any other way, than by the phantasy; which is that power of the soul, by which

it receives, and is the subject of the species, or ideas of outward and sensible things. As to the laws and means which the Creator has established, for the intercourse and communication of unbodied spirits, we know nothing about them; we do not know by what medium they manifest their thoughts to each other, or excite thoughts in each other. But as to spirits that are united to bodies, those bodies God has united them to are their medium of communication. They have no other medium of acting on other creatures, or being acted on by them, than the body. Therefore it is not to be supposed that Satan can excite any thought, or produce any effect in the soul of man, any otherwise, than by some motion of the animal spirits, or by causing some motion or alteration in something which appertains to the body. There is this reason to think that the devil cannot produce thoughts in the soul immediately, or any other way than by the medium of the body, *viz.* that he cannot immediately see or know the thoughts of the soul: it is abundantly declared in the scripture, to be peculiar to the omniscient God to do that. But it is not likely that the devil can *immediately produce* an effect, which is out of the reach of his *immediate view*. It seems unreasonable to suppose, that his immediate agency should be out of his own sight, or that it should be impossible for him to see what he himself immediately does. Is it not unreasonable to suppose, that any spirit or intelligent agent, should by the act of his will, produce effects, according to his understanding, or agreeable to his own thoughts, and that immediately, and yet the effects produced, be beyond the reach of his understanding, or where he can have no immediate perception or discerning at all? But if this be so, that the devil cannot produce thoughts in the soul immediately, or any other way than by the animal spirits, or by the body, then it follows, that he never brings to pass any thing in the soul, but by the imagination or phantasy, or by exciting external ideas. For we know that alterations in the body, do immediately excite no other sort of ideas in the mind, but external ideas, or ideas of the outward senses, or ideas which are of the same outward nature. As to reflection, abstraction, reasoning, &c. and those thoughts and inward motions which are the fruits of these acts of the mind, they are not the next effects of impressions on the body. So that it must be only by the imagination, that Satan has access to the soul, to tempt and delude it, or suggest

any thing to it. * And this seems to be the reason why persons that are under the disease of melancholy, are commonly so visibly and remarkably subject to the suggestions and temptations of Satan; that being a disease which peculiarly affects the animal spirits, and is attended with weakness of that part of the body which is the fountain of the animal spirits, even the brain, which is, as it were, the seat of the phantasy. It is by impressions made on the brain, that any ideas are excited in the mind, by the motion of the animal spirits, or any changes made in the body. The brain being thus weakened and diseased, it is less under the command of the higher faculties of the soul, and yields the more easily to extrinsic impressions, and is over-powered by the disordered motions of the animal spirits; and so the devil

* “ The imagination is that room of the soul, wherein the devil doth often appear. Indeed (to speak exactly,) the devil hath no efficient power over the rational part of a man: he cannot change the will, he cannot alter the heart of a man. So that the utmost he can do, in tempting a man to sin, is by suasion and suggestion only. But then how doth the devil do this? Even by working upon the imagination. He observeth the temper, and bodily constitution of a man; and thereupon suggests to his fancy, and injects his fiery darts thereinto, by which the mind and will come to be wrought upon. The devil then, though he hath no imperious efficacy over thy will, yet because he can thus stir and move thy imagination, and thou being naturally destitute of grace, canst not withstand these suggestions; hence it is that any sin in thy imagination, though but in the outward works of the soul, yet doth quickly lay hold on all. And indeed, by this means do arise those horrible delusions, that are in many erroneous ways of religion: all is because their imaginations are corrupted. Yea, how often are these diabolical delusions of the imagination, taken for the gracious operations of God’s Spirit?—It is from hence that many have pretended to enthusiasms;—they leave the scriptures, and wholly attend to what they perceive and feel within them.” *Burgess on Original Sin*, p. 369.

The great Turretin, speaking on that question, *What is the power of Angels?* says, “ As to bodies, there is no doubt, but that they can do a great deal upon all sorts of elementary and sublunary bodies, to move them locally, and variously to agitate them. It is also certain, that they can act upon the external and internal senses, to excite them, or to bind them. But as to the rational soul itself, they can do nothing immediately upon that; for to God alone, who knows and searches the hearts, and who has them in his hands, does it also appertain to bow and move them whithersoever he will. But angels can act upon the rational soul, only mediately, by imaginations.” *Theolog. Elench. Loc. VII. Quest. 7.*

devil has greater advantage to affect the mind, by working on the imagination. And thus Satan, when he casts in those horrid suggestions into the minds of many melancholy persons, in which they have no hand themselves, he does it by exciting imaginary ideas, either of some dreadful words or sentences, or other horrid outward ideas. And when he tempts other persons who are not melancholy, he does it by presenting to the imagination, in a lively and alluring manner, the objects of their lusts, or by exciting ideas of words, and so by them exciting thoughts; or by promoting an imagination of outward actions, events, circumstances, &c. Innumerable are the ways by which the mind might be led on to all kind of evil thoughts, by exciting external ideas in the imagination.

If persons keep no guard at these avenues of Satan, by which he has access to the soul, to tempt and delude it, they will be likely to have enough of him. And especially, if instead of guarding against him, they lay themselves open to him, and seek and invite him, because he appears as an angel of light, and counterfeits the illuminations and graces of the Spirit of God, by inward whispers, and immediate suggestions of facts and events, pleasant voices, beautiful images, and other impressions on the imagination. There are many who are deluded by such things, and are lifted up with them, and seek after them, that have a continued course of them, and can have them almost when they will; and especially when their pride and vain-glory has most occasion for them, to make a shew of them before company. It is with them, something as it is with those who are professors of the art of telling where lost things are to be found, by impressions made on their imaginations; they laying themselves open to the devil, he is always at hand to give them the desired impression.

Before I finish what I would say on this head of imaginations, counterfeiting spiritual light, and affections arising from them. I would renewedly (to prevent misunderstanding of what has been said) desire it may be observed, that I am far from determining, that no affections are spiritual which are attended with imaginary ideas. Such is the nature of man, that he can scarcely think of any thing intensely, without some kind of outward ideas. They arise and interpose themselves unavoidably, in the course of a man's thoughts; though oftentimes they are very confused, and are not what the mind regards. When the mind is much engaged, and the thoughts intense, oftentimes the imagination

gination is more strong, and the outward idea more lively, especially in persons of some constitutions of body. But there is a great difference between these two things, viz. *lively imaginations arising from strong affections*, and *strong affections arising from lively imaginations*. The former may be, and doubtless often is, in case of truly gracious affections. The affections do not arise from the imagination, nor have any dependence upon it; but on the contrary, the imagination is only the accidental effect, or consequent of the affection, through the infirmity of human nature. But when the latter is the case, as it often is, that the affection arises from the imagination, and is built upon it, as its foundation, instead of a spiritual illumination or discovery, then is the affection, however elevated, worthless and vain. And this is the drift of what has been now said, of impressions on the imagination. Having observed this, I proceed to another mark of gracious affections.

V. Truly gracious affections are attended with a reasonable and spiritual conviction of the judgment, of the reality and certainty of divine things.

This seems to be implied in the text that was laid as the foundation of this discourse, *Whom having not seen, ye love; in whom though now ye see him not, yet BELIEVING, ye rejoice with joy unspeakable, and full of glory.*

All those who are truly gracious persons have a solid, full, thorough and effectual conviction of the truth of the great things of the gospel; I mean, that they no longer halt between two opinions; the great doctrines of the gospel cease to be any longer doubtful things, or matters of opinion, which, though probable, are yet disputable; but with them, they are points settled and determined, as undoubted and indisputable; so that they are not afraid to venture there all upon their truth. Their conviction is an *effectual* conviction: so that the great, spiritual, mysterious, and invisible things of the gospel, have the *influence* of real and certain things upon them; they have the *weight* and *power* of real things in their hearts; and accordingly rule in their affections, and govern them through the course of their lives. With respect to Christ's being the Son of God, and Saviour of the world, and the great things he has revealed concerning himself, and his Father, and another world, they have not only a predominating opinion that these things are true, and so yield their assent, as they do in many other matters of doubtful speculation; but they *see that it is really so*:
 their

their eyes are opened, so that they see that really Jesus is the Christ, the Son of the living God. And as to the things which Christ has revealed, of God's eternal purposes and designs, concerning fallen man, and the glorious and everlasting things prepared for the saints in another world, they see that they are to indeed: and therefore these things are of great weight with them, and have a mighty power upon their hearts, and influence over their practice, in some measure answerable to their infinite importance.

That all true Christians have such a kind of conviction of the truth of the things of the gospel, is abundantly manifest from the holy scriptures. I will mention a few places of many; Matth. xvi. 15, 16, 17. "But whom say ye that I am? Simon" "Peter answered and said, Thou art Christ, the Son of the living God. And Jesus answered and said unto him, Blessed art thou Simon Barjona:—my Father which is in heaven hath revealed it unto thee." John vi. 68, 69. "Thou hast the words of eternal life. And we believe, and are sure that thou art that Christ, the Son of the living God." John xvii. 6, 7, 8. "I have manifested thy name unto the men which thou gavest me out of the world.—Now they have known that all things whatsoever thou hast given me, are of thee. For I have given unto them the words which thou gavest me; and they have received them, and have known surely that I came out from thee, and they have believed that thou didst send me." Acts viii. 37. "If thou believest with all thy heart, thou mayst." 2 Cor. iv. 11, 12, 13, 14. "We which live, are always delivered unto death for Jesus sake.—Death worketh in us.—We having the spirit of faith, according as it is written, I believed, and therefore have I spoken: we also believe, and therefore speak; knowing, that he which raised up the Lord Jesus, shall raise up us also by Jesus, and shall present us with you." Together with vers. 16. "For which cause we faint not." And vers. 18. "While we look not at the things which are seen," &c. And chap. v. 1. "For we know, that if our earthly house of this tabernacle were dissolved, we have a building of God. And vers. 6, 7, 8. "Therefore we are always confident, knowing that whilst we are at home in the body, we are absent from the Lord: for we walk by faith, not by sight. We are confident, I say, and willing rather to be absent from the body, and present with the Lord." 2 Tim. i. 12. "For the which cause I also suffer these things; nevertheless I am not ashamed: for I know whom I have believed, and I am per-

“suaded that he is able to keep that which I have committed unto him against that day.” Heb. iii. 6. “Whose house are we, if we hold fast the confidence, and the rejoicing of the hope firm unto the end.” Heb. xi. 1. “Now faith is the substance of things hoped for, and the evidence of things not seen :” together with that whole chapter. 1 John iv. 13, 14, 15, 16. “Hereby know we that we dwell in him, and he in us, because he hath given us of his Spirit. And we have seen and do testify, that the Father sent the Son to be the Saviour of the world. Whosoever shall confess that Jesus is the Son of God, God dwelleth in him, and he in God. And we have known and believed the love that God hath to us.” Chap. v. 4, 5. “For whatsoever is born of God, overcometh the world: and this is the victory that overcometh the world, even our faith. Who is he that overcometh the world, but he that believeth that Jesus is the Son of God?”

Therefore truly gracious affections are attended with such a kind of conviction and persuasion of the truth of the things of the gospel, and sight of their evidence and reality, as these and other scriptures speak of.

There are many religious affections, which are not attended with such a conviction of the judgment. There are many apprehensions and ideas which some have, that they call divine discoveries, which are affecting, but not convincing. Though for a little while, they may seem to be more persuaded of the truth of the things of religion, than they used to be, and may yield a forward assent, like many of Christ's hearers, who believed for a while; yet they have no thorough and effectual conviction; nor is there any great abiding change in them, in this respect, that whereas formerly they did not realize the great things of the gospel, now these things, with regard to reality and certainty, appear new to them, and they behold them quite in another view than they used to do. There are many persons who have been exceedingly raised with religious affections, and think they have been converted, they do not go about the world any more convinced of the truth of the gospel, than they used to be; or at least, there is no remarkable alteration: they are not men who live under the influence and power of a realizing conviction of the infinite and eternal things which the gospel reveals; if they were it would be impossible for them to live as they do. Because their affections are not attended with a thorough conviction of the mind, they are not at all to be depended on; however great a show and noise they make,

it is like the blaze of tow, or crackling of thorns, or like the forward flourishing blade on stony ground, that has no root, nor deepness of earth to maintain its life.

Some persons, under high affections, and a confident persuasion of their good estate, have that, which they very ignorantly call a seeing the truth of the word of God, and which is very far from it, after this manner; they have some text of scripture coming to their minds, in a sudden and extraordinary manner, immediately declaring unto them (as they suppose) that their sins are forgiven, or that God loves them, and will save them; and it may be have a chain of scriptures coming one after another, to the same purpose; and they are convinced that it is truth; *i. e.* they are confident that it is certainly so, that their sins are forgiven, and God does love them, &c.—they say they know it is so; and when the words of scripture are suggested to them, and as they suppose immediately spoken to them by God, in this meaning, they are ready to cry out, *Truth, truth! it is certainly so! the word of God is true!* And this they call a seeing the truth of the word of God. Whereas the whole of their faith amounts to no more, than only a strong confidence of their own good estate, and so a confidence that those words are true, which they suppose tell them they are in a good estate: when indeed (as was shown before) there is no scripture which declares that any person is in a good estate directly, or any other way than by consequence. So that this, instead of being a real sight of the truth of the word of God, is a sight of nothing but a phantom, and is all over a delusion. Truly to see the truth of the word of God, is to see the truth of the gospel; which is the glorious doctrine the word of God contains, concerning God, and Jesus Christ, and the way of salvation of by him, and the world of glory that he is entered into, and purchased for all them who believe; and not a revelation that such and such particular persons are true Christians, and shall go to heaven. Therefore those affections which arise from no other persuasion of the truth of the word of God than this, arise from delusion, and not true conviction; and consequently are themselves delusive and vain.

But if the religious affections that persons have, do indeed arise from a strong persuasion of the truth of the Christian religion; their affections are not the better, unless their persuasion be a *reasonable* persuasion or conviction. By a reasonable conviction, I mean a conviction founded on real evidence, or upon that which is a good reason, or just ground of conviction. Men may have a strong persuasion that the Christian religion is true,

when

when their persuasion is not at all built on evidence, but altogether on education, and the opinion of others; as many Mahometans are strongly persuaded of the truth of the Mahometan religion, because their fathers, and neighbors, and nation believe it.— That belief of the truth of the Christian religion, which is built on the very same grounds with Mahometans belief of the Mahometan religion, is the same sort of belief. And though the thing believed happens to be better; yet that does not make the belief itself to be of a better sort: for though the thing believed happens to be true, yet the belief of it is not owing to this truth, but to education. So that as the conviction is no better than the Mahometans conviction; so the affections that flow from it, are no better, in themselves, than the religious affections of Mahometans.

But if that belief of Christian doctrines, which persons affections arise from, be not merely from education, but indeed from reasons and arguments which are offered, it will not from thence necessarily follow, that their affections are truly gracious: for in order to that, it is requisite, not only that the belief which their affections arise from, should be a *reasonable*, but also a *spiritual* belief or conviction. I suppose none will doubt but that some natural men do yield a kind of assent of their judgments to the truth of the Christian religion, from the rational proofs or arguments that are offered to evince it. Judas, without doubt, thought Jesus to be the Messiah, from the things which he saw and heard; but yet all along was a devil. So in John ii. 23, 24, 25. we read of *many that believed in Christ's name, when they saw the miracles that he did*; whom yet Christ knew had not that within them, which was to be depended on. So Simon the sorcerer believed, when he beheld the miracles and signs which were done; but yet remained "in the gall of bitterness, and bond of iniquity," Acts viii. 13, 23. And if there is such a belief or assent of the judgment in some natural men, none can doubt but that religious affections may arise from that assent or belief; as we read of some who *believed for a while*, that were greatly affected, and anon with joy received the word.

It is evident that there is such a thing as a *spiritual* belief or conviction of the truth of the things of the gospel, or a belief that is peculiar to those who are spiritual, or who are regenerated, and have the Spirit of God, in his holy communications, and dwelling in them as a vital principle. So that the conviction they have, does not only differ from that which natural

men have, in its concomitants, in that it is accompanied with good works; but the belief itself is diverse, the assent and conviction of the judgment is of a kind peculiar to those who are spiritual, and that which natural men are wholly destitute of. This is evident by the scripture, if any thing at all is so; John xvii. 8. "They have believed that thou didst send me." Tit. i. 1. "According to the faith of God's elect, and the acknowledging of the truth which is after godliness." John xvi. 27. "The Father himself loveth you, because ye have loved me, and have believed that I came out from God." 1 John iv. 15. "Whosoever shall confess that Jesus is the Son of God, God dwelleth in him, and he in God." Chap. v. 1. "Whosoever believeth that Jesus is the Christ, is born of God." vers. 10. "He that believeth on the Son of God, hath the witness in himself."

What a *spiritual conviction* of the judgment is, we are naturally led to determine from what has been said already, under the former head of a *spiritual understanding*. The conviction of the judgment arises from the illumination of the understanding: the passing of a right judgment on things, depends on an having a right apprehension or idea of things. And therefore it follows, that a spiritual conviction of the truth of the great things of the gospel, is such a conviction, as arises from having a spiritual view or apprehension of those things in the mind. And this is also evident from the scripture, which often represents, that a saving belief of the reality and divinity of the things proposed and exhibited to us in the gospel, is from the Spirit of God's enlightening the mind, to have right apprehensions of the nature of those things, and so as it were unvailing things, or revealing them, and enabling the mind to view them and see them as they are. Luke x. 21, 22. "I thank thee, O Father, Lord of heaven and earth, that thou hast HIDDEN these things from the wise and prudent, and hast REVEALED them unto babes: even so, Father, for so it seemed good in thy sight. All things are delivered unto me of my Father: and no man knoweth who the Son is, but the Father; and who the Father is, but the Son, and he to whom the Son will REVEAL him." John vi. 40. "And this is the will of him that sent me, that every one which SEETH the Son, and BELIEVETH on him, may have everlasting life." Where it is plain, that true faith arises from a spiritual sight of Christ. And John xvii. 6, 7, 8. "I have
" MANIFESTED

“ MANIFESTED thy name unto the men which thou gavest
 “ me out of the world.—Now they have known that all things
 “ whatsoever thou hast given me, are of thee. For I have
 “ given unto them the words which thou gavest me ; and they
 “ have received them, and have known surely that I came out
 “ from thee, and they have believed that thou didst send me.”
 Where Christ’s manifesting God’s name to the disciples, or
 giving them a true apprehension and view of divine things, was
 that whereby they knew that Christ’s doctrine was of God, and
 that Christ himself was of him, and was sent by him. Matth.
 xvi. 16, 17. “ Simon Peter said, Thou art Christ, the Son of
 “ the living God. And Jesus answered and said unto him,
 “ Blessed art thou Simon Barjona: for flesh and blood hath
 “ not REVEALED it unto thee, but my Father which is in
 “ heaven.” 1 John v. 10. “ He that believeth on the Son of
 “ God, hath the witness in himself.” Gal. i. 14, 15, 16.
 “ Being more exceedingly zealous of the traditions of my
 “ fathers. But when it pleased God, who separated me from
 “ my mother’s womb, and called me by his grace, to REVEAL
 “ his Son in me, that I might preach him among the heathen ;
 “ immediately I conferred not with flesh and blood.”

If it be so, that that is a spiritual conviction of the divinity
 and reality of the things exhibited in the gospel, which arises
 from a spiritual understanding of those things ; I have shown
 already what that is, *viz.* a sense and taste of the divine, su-
 preme, and holy excellency and beauty of those things. So
 that then is the mind spiritually convinced of the divinity and
 truth of the great things of the gospel, when that conviction
 arises, either directly or remotely, from such a sense or view of
 their divine excellency and glory as is there exhibited. This
 clearly follows from things that have been already said ; and
 for this the scripture is very plain and express : 2 Cor. iv. 3,
 to 6. “ But if our gospel be hid, it is hid to them that are
 “ lost : in whom the god of this world hath blinded the minds
 “ of them that BELIEVE not, lest the light of the GLORIOUS
 “ GOSPEL of Christ, who is the image of God, should shine
 “ unto them. For we preach not ourselves, but Christ Jesus
 “ the Lord ; and ourselves your servants for Jesus’ sake. For
 “ God who commanded the light to shine out of darkness,
 “ hath shined in our hearts, to give the LIGHT OF THE
 “ KNOWLEDGE OF THE GLORY OF GOD, in the face of
 “ Jesus Christ.” Together with the last verse of the foregoing
 chapter,

chapter, which introduces this, "But we all with open face, beholding as in a glass the GLORY OF THE LORD, are changed into the same image, from glory to glory, even as by the Spirit of the Lord." Nothing can be more evident, than that a saving belief of the gospel is here spoken of, by the apostle, as arising from the mind's being enlightened to behold the divine glory of the things it exhibits.

This view or sense of the divine glory, and unparalleled beauty of the things exhibited to us in the gospel, has a tendency to convince the mind of their divinity, two ways; *directly*, and more *indirectly*, and *remotely*. 1. A view of this divine glory *directly*, convinces the mind of the divinity of these things, as this glory is in itself a direct, clear, and all-conquering evidence of it; especially when clearly discovered, or when this supernatural sense is given in a good degree.

He that has his judgment thus *directly* convinced and assured of the divinity of the things of the gospel, by a clear view of their divine glory, has a *reasonable* conviction; his belief and assurance is altogether agreeable to reason; because the divine glory and beauty of divine things is in itself, real evidence of their divinity, and the most direct and strong evidence. He that truly sees the divine, transcendent, supreme glory of those things which are divine, does as it were know their divinity intuitively; he not only argues that they are divine, but he sees that they are divine; he sees that in them wherein divinity chiefly consists; for in this glory, which is so vastly and inexpressibly distinguished from the glory of artificial things, and all other glory, does mainly consist the true notion of divinity. God is God, and distinguished from all other beings, and exalted above them, chiefly by his divine beauty, which is infinitely diverse from all other beauty. They therefore that see the stamp of this glory in divine things, they see divinity in them, they see God in them, and so see them to be divine; because they see that in them wherein the truest idea of divinity does consist. Thus a soul may have a kind of intuitive knowledge of the divinity of the things exhibited in the gospel; not that he judges the doctrines of the gospel to be from God, without any argument or deduction at all; but it is without any long chain of arguments; the argument is but one, and the evidence direct; the mind ascends to the truth of the gospel but by one step, and that is its divine glory.

It would be very strange, if any professing Christian should deny

deny it to be possible, that there should be an excellency in divine things, which is so transcendent, and exceedingly different from what is in other things, that if it were seen, would evidently distinguish them. We cannot rationally doubt, but that things that are *divine*, that appertain to the supreme Being, are vastly different from things that are *human*: that there is a God-like, high, and glorious excellency in them, that does so distinguish them from the things which are of men, that the difference is ineffable; and therefore such, as, if seen, will have a most convincing, satisfying influence upon any one, that they are what they are, *viz.* divine. Doubtless there is that glory and excellency in the divine Being, by which he is so infinitely distinguished from all other beings, that if it were seen, he might be known by it. It would therefore be very unreasonable to deny, that it is possible for God to give manifestations of this distinguishing excellency, in things by which he is pleased to make himself known; and that this distinguishing excellency may be clearly seen in them. There are *natural* excellencies that are very evidently distinguishing of the subjects or authors, to any one who beholds them. How vastly is the speech of an understanding man different from that of a little child! And how greatly distinguished is the speech of some men of great genius, as Homer, Cicero, Milton, Locke, Addison, and others, from that of many other understanding men! There are no limits to be set to the degrees of manifestation of mental excellency, that there may be in speech. But the appearances of the *natural* perfections of God, in the manifestations he makes of himself, may doubtless be unspeakably more evidently distinguishing, than the appearances of those excellencies of worms of the dust, in which they differ one from another. He that is well acquainted with mankind, and their works, by viewing the sun, may know it is no human work. And it is reasonable to suppose, that when Christ comes at the end of the world, in the glory of his Father, it will be with such ineffable appearances of divinity, as will leave no doubt to the inhabitants of the world, even the most obstinate infidels, that he who appears is a divine person. But above all, do the manifestations of the *moral* and *spiritual* glory of the divine Being, (which is the proper beauty of the divinity,) bring their own evidence, and tend to assure the heart. Thus the disciples were assured that Jesus was the Son of God, for “they beheld
“his glory, as the glory of the only begotten of the Father,
“full

“ full of grace and truth.” John i. 14. When Christ appeared in the glory of his transfiguration to his disciples, with that outward glory to their bodily eyes, which was a sweet and admirable symbol and semblance of his spiritual glory, together with his spiritual glory itself, manifested to their minds; the manifestation of glory was such, as did perfectly, and with good reason, assure them of his divinity; as appears by what one of them, viz, the apostle Peter, says concerning it, 2 Pet. i. 16, 17, 18. “ For we have not followed cunningly devised fables, when we made known unto you the power and coming of our Lord Jesus Christ, but were eye-witnesses of his majesty: for he received from God the Father, honour and glory, when there came such a voice to him from the excellent glory, This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased. And this voice which came from heaven we heard, when we were with him in the holy mount.” The apostle calls that mount, *the holy mount*, because the manifestations of Christ which were there made to their minds, and which their minds were especially impressed and ravished with, was the glory of his *holiness*, or the beauty of his *moral excellency*; or, as another of these disciples, who saw it, expresses it, *His glory, as full of grace and truth*.

Now this distinguishing glory of the divine Being has its brightest appearance and manifestation, in the things proposed and exhibited to us in the gospel, the doctrines there taught, the word there spoken, and the divine counsels, acts and works there revealed. These things have the clearest, most admirable, and distinguishing representations and exhibitions of the glory of God's moral perfections, that ever were made to the world. And if there be such a distinguishing, evidential manifestation of divine glory in the gospel, it is reasonable to suppose that there may be such a thing as seeing it: what should hinder but that it may be seen? It is no argument that it cannot be seen, that some do not see it; though they may be discerning men in temporal matters. If there be such ineffable, distinguishing, evidential excellencies in the gospel, it is reasonable to suppose, that they are such as are not to be discerned, but by the special influence and enlightenings of the Spirit of God. There is need of uncommon force of mind to discern the distinguishing excellencies of the works of authors of great genius: those things in Milton, which to mean judges appear tasteless and imperfections, are his inimitable excellencies in the eyes of those who

are of greater discerning, and better taste. And if there be a book, which God is the author of, it is most reasonable to suppose, that the distinguishing glories of his word are of such a kind, as that the sin and corruption of mens hearts, which above all things alienates men from the Deity, and makes the heart dull and stupid to any sense or taste of those things wherein the moral glory of the divine perfections consists; I say, it is but reasonable to suppose, that this would blind men from discerning the beauties of such a book; and that therefore they will not see them, but as God is pleased to enlighten them, and restore an holy taste, to discern and relish divine beauties.

This sense of the spiritual excellency and beauty of divine things, does also tend *directly* to convince the mind of the truth of the gospel, as there are very many of the most important things declared in the gospel, that are hid from the eyes of natural men, the truth of which does in effect consist in this excellency, or does so immediately depend upon it and result from it, that in this excellency's being seen, the truth of those things is seen. As soon as ever the eyes are opened to behold the holy beauty and amiableness that is in divine things, a multitude of most important doctrines of the gospel, that depend upon it, (which all appear strange and dark to natural men,) are at once seen to be true. As for instance, hereby appears the truth of what the word of God declares concerning the exceeding evil of sin; for the same eye that discerns the transcendent beauty of holiness, necessarily therein sees the exceeding odiousness of sin: the same taste which relishes the sweetness of true moral good, tastes the bitterness of moral evil. And by this means a man sees his own sinfulness and loathsomeness; for he has now a sense to discern objects of this nature; and so sees the truth of what the word of God declares concerning the exceeding sinfulness of mankind, which before he did not see. He now sees the dreadful pollution of his heart, and the desperate depravity of his nature, in a new manner; for his soul has now a sense given it to feel the pain of such a disease: and this shows him the truth of what the scripture reveals concerning the corruption of man's nature, his original sin, and the ruinous undone condition man is in, and his need of a Saviour, his need of the mighty power of God to renew his heart, and change his nature. Men by seeing the true excellency of holiness, do see the glory of all those things,

things, which both reason and scripture shew to be in the divine Being; for it has been shown, that the glory of them depend on this: and hereby they see the truth of all that the scripture declares concerning God's glorious excellency and majesty, his being the fountain of all good, the only happiness of the creature, &c. And this again shews the mind the truth of what the scripture teaches concerning the evil of sin against so glorious a God; and also the truth of what it teaches concerning sin's just desert of that dreadful punishment which it reveals; and also concerning the impossibility of our offering any satisfaction, or sufficient atonement for that which is so infinitely evil and heinous. And this again shews the truth of what the scripture reveals concerning the necessity of a Saviour, to offer an atonement of infinite value for sin. And this sense of spiritual beauty that has been spoken of, enables the soul to see the glory of those things which the gospel reveals concerning the person of Christ; and so enables to see the exceeding beauty and dignity of his person, appearing in what the gospel exhibits of his word, works, acts, and life: and this apprehension of the superlative dignity of his person, shews the truth of what the gospel declares concerning the value of his blood and righteousness, and so the infinite excellency of that offering he has made to God for us, and so its sufficiency to atone for our sins, and recommend us to God. And thus the spirit of God discovers the way of salvation by Christ; thus the soul sees the fitness and suitableness of this way of salvation, the admirable wisdom of the contrivance, and the perfect answerableness of the provision that the gospel exhibits, (as made for us,) to our necessities. A sense of true divine beauty being given to the soul, the soul discerns the beauty of every part of the gospel-scheme. This also shews the soul the truth of what the word of God declares concerning man's chief happiness, as consisting in holy exercises and enjoyments. This shews the truth of what the gospel declares concerning the unspeakable glory of the heavenly state. And what the prophecies of the Old Testament, and the writings of the apostles declare concerning the glory of the Messiah's kingdom, is now all plain; and also what the scripture teaches concerning the reasons and grounds of our duty. The truth of all these things revealed in the scripture, and many more that might be mentioned, appear to the soul, only by imparting that spiritual taste of divine beauty, which has been spoken of; they being hidden things to the soul before.

And

And besides all this, the truth of all those things which the scripture says about experimental religion, is hereby known; for they are now experienced. And this convinces the soul, that one who knew the heart of man, better than we know our own hearts, and perfectly knew the nature of virtue and holiness, was the author of the scriptures. And the opening to view, with such clearness, such a world of wonderful and glorious truth in the gospel, that before was unknown, being quite above the view of a natural eye, but now appearing so clear and bright, has a powerful and invincible influence on the soul, to persuade of the divinity of the gospel.

Unless men may come to a reasonable solid persuasion and conviction of the truth of the gospel, by the internal evidences of it, in the way that has been spoken, *viz.* by a sight of its glory; it is impossible that those who are illiterate, and unacquainted with history, should have any thorough and effectual conviction of it at all. They may without this, see a great deal of probability of it; it may be reasonable for them to give much credit to what learned men, and historians tell them; and they may tell them so much, that it may look very probable and rational to them, that the Christian religion is true; and so much that they would be very unreasonable not to entertain this opinion. But to have a conviction, so clear, and evident, and assuring, as to be sufficient to induce them, with boldness to sell all, confidently and fearlessly to run the venture of the loss of all things, and of enduring the most exquisite and long continued torments, and to trample the world under foot, and count all things but dung for Christ; the evidence they can have from history, cannot be sufficient. It is impossible that men, who have not something of a general view of the historical world, or the series of history from age to age, should come at the force of arguments for the truth of Christianity, drawn from history, to that degree, as effectually to induce them to venture their all upon it. After all that learned men have said to them, there will remain innumerable doubts on their minds; they will be ready, when pinched with some great trial of their faith, to say, "How do I know this, or that?" "How do I know when these histories were written? Learned men tell me these histories were so and so attested in the day of them; but how do I know that there were such attestations then? They tell me there is equal reason to believe these facts, as any whatsoever that are related at such a distance;

“ tance ; but how do I know that other facts which are related of those ages, ever were ?” Those who have not something of a general view of the series of historical events, and of the state of mankind from age to age, cannot see the clear evidence from history, of the truth of facts, in distant ages ; but there will endless doubts and scruples remain.

But the gospel was not given only for learned men. There are at least nineteen in twenty, if not ninety-nine in an hundred, of those for whom the scriptures were written, that are not capable of any certain or effectual conviction of the divine authority of the scriptures, by such arguments as learned men make use of. If men who have been brought up in Heathenism, must wait for a clear and certain conviction of the truth of Christianity, until they have learning and acquaintance with the histories of politer nations, enough to see clearly the force of such kind of arguments ; it will make the evidence of the gospel, to them, immensely cumbersome, and will render the propagation of the gospel among them, infinitely difficult. Miserable is the condition of the Houffatunnuck Indians, and others, who have lately manifested a desire to be instructed in Christianity, if they can come at no evidence of the truth of Christianity, sufficient to induce them to sell all for Christ, in any other way but this.

It is unreasonable to suppose, that God has provided for his people, no more than probable evidences of the truth of the gospel. He has with great care, abundantly provided, and given them, the most convincing, assuring, satisfying and manifold evidence of his faithfulness in the covenant of grace ; and as David says, *made a covenant, ordered in all things and sure.* Therefore it is rational to suppose, that at the same time, he would not fail of ordering the matter so, that there should not be wanting, as great, and clear evidence, *that this is his covenant*, and that these promises are his promises ; or which is the same thing, that the Christian religion is true, and that the gospel is his word. Otherwise in vain are those great assurances he has given of his faithfulness in his covenant, by confirming it with his oath, and so variously establishing it by seals and pledges. For the evidence that it is his covenant, is properly the foundation on which all the force and effect of those other assurances do stand. We may therefore undoubtedly suppose and conclude, that there is some sort of evidence which God has given, that this covenant, and these promises are his, beyond

yond all mere probability; that there are some grounds of assurance of it held forth, which, if we are not blind to them, tend to give an higher persuasion, than any arguing from history, human tradition, &c. which the illiterate and unacquainted with history, are capable of: yea, that which is good ground of the highest and most perfect assurance, that mankind have in any case whatsoever; agreeable to those high expressions which the apostle uses, Heb. x. 22. "Let us draw near in FULL ASSURANCE OF FAITH." And Col. ii. 2. "That their hearts might be comforted, being knit together in love, and unto ALL RICHES OF THE FULL ASSURANCE OF UNDERSTANDING, to the acknowledgment of the mystery of God, and of the Father, and of Christ." It is reasonable to suppose, that God would give the greatest evidence of those things which are greatest, and the truth of which is of greatest importance to us: and that we therefore, if we are wise, and act rationally, shall have the greatest desire of having full, undoubting, and perfect assurance of. But it is certain, that such an assurance is not to be attained, by the greater part of them who live under the gospel, by arguments fetched from ancient traditions, histories, and monuments.

And if we come to fact and experience, there is not the least reason to suppose, that one in an hundred of those who have been sincere Christians, and have had a heart to sell all for Christ, have come by their conviction of the truth of the gospel, this way. If we read over the histories of the many thousands that died martyrs for Christ, since the beginning of the reformation, and have cheerfully undergone extreme tortures, in a confidence of the truth of the gospel, and considered their circumstances and advantages; how few of them were there, that we can reasonably suppose, ever came by their assured persuasion, this way; or indeed for whom it was possible, reasonably to receive so full and strong an assurance, from such arguments! Many of them were weak women and children, and the greater part of them illiterate persons, many of whom had been brought up in popish ignorance and darkness, and were but newly come out of it, and lived and died in times, wherein those arguments for the truth of Christianity from antiquity and history, had been but very imperfectly handled. And indeed, it is but very lately that these arguments have been set in a clear and convincing light, even by learned men themselves: and since it has been done, there never were fewer thorough

thorough believers, among those who have been educated in the true religion; infidelity never prevailed so much, in any age, as in this, wherein these arguments are handled to the greatest advantage.

The true martyrs of Jesus Christ, are not those who have only been strong in opinion that the gospel of Christ is true, but *those that have seen the truth of it*: as the very name of martyrs or witnesses (by which they are called in scripture) implies. Those are very improperly called witnesses of the truth of any thing, who only declare they are very much of opinion that such a thing is true. Those only are proper witnesses, who can, and do testify that they have seen the truth of the thing they assert; John iii. 11. "We speak that we do know, and testify that we have seen." John i. 34. "And I saw, and bare record, that this is the Son of God." 1 John iv. 14. "And we have seen, and do testify, that the Father sent the Son to be the Saviour of the world." Acts xxii. 14, 15. "The God of our fathers hath chosen thee, that thou shouldst know his will, and see that just One, and shouldst hear the voice of his mouth: for thou shalt be his witness unto all men, of what thou hast seen and heard." But the true martyrs of Jesus Christ are called his witnesses: and all the saints, who by their holy practice under great trials, declare that faith, *which is the SUBSTANCE of things hoped for, and the EVIDENCE of things not seen*, are called witnesses, Heb. xi. 1. and xii. 1. because by their profession and practice, they declare their assurance of the truth and divinity of the gospel having had the eyes of their minds enlightened to see divinity in the gospel, or to behold that unparalleled, ineffable, excellent, and truly divine glory shining in it, which is altogether distinguishing, evidential, and convincing: so that they may truly be said to have seen God in it, and to have seen that it is indeed divine; and so can speak in the style of witnesses: and not only say, that *they think* the gospel is divine, but say, that *it is divine*, giving it in as their testimony, because they have seen it to be so. Doubtless Peter, James, and John, after they had seen that excellent glory of Christ in the mount, would have been ready, when they came down, to speak in the language of witnesses, and to say positively that *Jesus is the Son of God*: as Peter says, *they were eye-witnesses*, 2 Pet. i. 16. And so all nations will be ready positively to say this, when they shall behold his glory at the day of judgment; though what will

be universally seen, will be only his natural glory, and not his moral and spiritual glory, which is much more distinguishing. But yet, it must be noted, that among those who have a spiritual sight of the divine glory of the gospel, there is a great variety of degrees of strength of faith, as there is a vast variety of the degrees of clearness of views of this glory: but there is no true and saving faith; or spiritual conviction of the judgment, of the truth of the gospel, that has nothing in it, of this manifestation of its internal evidence, in some degree. The gospel of the blessed God does not go abroad a-begging for its evidence, so much as some think; it has its highest and most proper evidence in itself. Though great use may be made of external arguments, they are not to be neglected, but highly prized and valued; for they may be greatly serviceable to awaken unbelievers, and bring them to serious consideration, and to confirm the faith of true saints: yea, they may be in some respects subservient to the *begetting* of a saving faith in men. Though what was said before remains true, that there is no spiritual conviction of the judgment, but what arises from an apprehension of the spiritual beauty and glory of divine things: for, as has been observed, this apprehension or view has a tendency to convince the mind of the truth of the gospel, two ways; either directly or indirectly. Having therefore already observed how it does this directly, I proceed now,

2. To observe how a view of this divine glory does convince the mind of the truth of Christianity, more indirectly.

First, It doth so, as the prejudices of the heart against the truth of divine things are hereby removed, so that the mind thereby lies open to the force of the reasons which are offered. The mind of man is naturally full of enmity against the doctrines of the gospel; which is a disadvantage to those arguments that prove their truth, and causes them to lose their force upon the mind: but when a person has discovered to him the divine excellency of Christian doctrines, this destroys that enmity, and removes the prejudices, and sanctifies the reason, and causes it to be open and free. Hence is a vast difference, as to the force that arguments have to convince the mind. Hence was the very different effect, which Christ's miracles had to convince the disciples, from what they had to convince the Scribes and Pharisees: not that they had a stronger reason,

or had their reason more improved ; but their reason was sanctified, and those blinding prejudices, which the Scribes and Pharisees were under, were removed, by the sense they had of the excellency of Christ and his doctrine.

Secondly, It not only removes the hindrances of reason, but positively helps reason. It makes even the speculative notions more lively. It assists and engages the attention of the mind to that kind of objects ; which causes it to have a clearer view of them, and more clearly to see their mutual relations. The ideas themselves, which otherwise are dim and obscure, by this means have a light cast upon them, and are impressed with greater strength, so that the mind can better judge of them ; as he that beholds the objects on the face of the earth, when the light of the sun is cast upon them, is under greater advantage to discern them, in their true forms, and mutual relations, and to see the evidences of divine wisdom and skill in their contrivance, than he that sees them in a dim star-light, or twilight.

What has been said, may serve in some measure to shew the nature of a spiritual conviction of the judgment of the truth and reality of divine things ; and so to distinguish truly gracious affections from others ; for gracious affections are ever more attended with such a conviction of the judgment.

But before I dismiss this head, it will be needful to observe the ways whereby some are deceived, with respect to this matter ; and take notice of several things, that are sometimes taken for a spiritual and saving belief of the truth of the things of religion, which are indeed very diverse from it.

1. There is a degree of conviction of the truth of the great things of religion, that arises from the common enlightenings of the Spirit of God. That more lively and sensible apprehension of the things of religion, with respect to what is *natural* in them, such as natural men have who are under awakenings and common illuminations, will give some degree of conviction of the truth of divine things, beyond what they had before they were thus enlightened. For hereby they see the manifestations there are, in the revelation made in the holy scriptures, and things exhibited in that revelation, of the natural perfections of God ; such as his greatness, power, and awful majesty ; which tends to convince the mind, that this is the word of a great and terrible God. From the tokens there are of God's

greatness and majesty in his word and works, which they have a great sense of, from the common influence of the Spirit of God, they may have a much greater conviction that these are indeed the word and works of a very great invisible Being. And the lively apprehension of the greatness of God, which natural men may have, tends to make them sensible of the great guilt, which sin against such a God brings, and the dreadfulness of his wrath for sin. And this tends to cause them more easily and fully to believe the revelation the scripture makes of another world, and of the extreme misery it threatens, there to be inflicted on sinners. And so from that sense of the great natural good there is in the things of religion, which is sometimes given in common illuminations, men may be the more induced to believe the truth of religion. These things persons may have, and yet have no sense of the beauty and amiableness of the moral and holy excellency that is in the things of religion; and therefore no spiritual conviction of their truth. But yet such convictions are sometimes mistaken for saving convictions, and the affections flowing from them, for saving affections.

2. The extraordinary impressions which are made on the imaginations of some persons, in the visions, and immediate strong impulses and suggestions that they have, as though they saw lights, and had words spoken to them, may, and often do beget a strong persuasion of the truth of invisible things. Though the general tendency of such things, in their final issue, is to draw men off from the word of God, and to cause them to reject the gospel, and to establish unbelief and Atheism; yet for the present, they may, and often do beget a confident persuasion of the truth of some things that are revealed in the scriptures; however their confidence is founded in delusion, and so nothing worth. As for instance, if a person has by some invisible agent, immediately and strongly impressed on his imagination, the appearance of a bright light, and glorious form of a person seated on a throne, with great external majesty and beauty, uttering some remarkable words, with great force and energy; the person who is the subject of such an operation, may be from hence confident, that there are invisible agents, spiritual beings, from what he has experienced, knowing that he had no hand himself in this extraordinary effect, which he has experienced: and he may also be confident, that this is Christ whom

whom he saw and heard speaking : and this may make him confident that there is a Christ, and that Christ reigns on a throne in heaven, as he saw him ; and may be confident that the words which he heard him speak are true, &c.—in the same manner, as the lying miracles of the Papists, may for the present, beget in the minds of the ignorant deluded people, a strong persuasion of the truth of many things declared in the New Testament. Thus when the images of Christ, in Popish churches, are on some extraordinary occasions, made by priest-craft to appear to the people as if they wept, and shed fresh blood, and moved, and uttered such and such words ; the people may be verily persuaded that it is a miracle wrought by Christ himself ; and from thence may be confident there is a Christ, and that what they are told of his death and sufferings, and resurrection, and ascension, and present government of the world is true ; for they may look upon this miracle, as a certain evidence of all these things, and a kind of ocular demonstration of them. This may be the influence of these lying wonders for the present ; though the general tendency of them is not to convince that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh, but finally to promote Atheism, Even the intercourse which Satan has with witches, and their often experiencing his immediate power, has a tendency to convince them of the truth of some of the doctrines of religion ; as particularly the reality of an invisible world or world of spirits, contrary to the doctrine of the Sadducés. The general tendency of Satan's influences is delusion : but yet he may mix some truth with his lies, that his lies may not be so easily discovered.

There are multitudes that are deluded with a counterfeit faith, from impressions on their imagination, in the manner which has been now spoken of. They say they know that there is a God, for they have seen him ; they know that Christ is the Son of God, for they have seen him in his glory ; they know that Christ died for sinners, for they have seen him hanging on the cross, and his blood running from his wounds ; they know there is a heaven and a hell, for they have seen the misery of the damned souls in hell, and the glory of saints and angels in heaven, (meaning some external representations, strongly impressed on their imagination ;) they know that the scriptures are the word of God, and that such and such promises in particular are his word, for they have heard him speak them to them, they came to their minds suddenly and immediately from God, without their having any hand in it.

3. Persons may seem to have their belief of the truth of the things of religion greatly increased, when the foundation of it
is

is only a persuasion they have received, of their interest in them. They first, by some means or other, take up a confidence, that if there be a Christ in heaven, they are theirs; and this prejudices them more in favor of the truth of them. When they hear of the great and glorious things of religion, it is with this notion, that all these things belong to them; and hence easily become confident that they are true; they look upon it to be greatly for their interest that they should be true. It is very obvious what a strong influence mens interest and inclinations have on their judgments. While a natural man thinks, that if there be a heaven and hell; the latter, and not the former, belongs to him; then he will be hardly persuaded that there is a heaven or hell: but when he comes to be persuaded, that hell belongs only to other folks, and not to him; then he can easily allow the reality of hell, and cry out of others senselessness and sottishness in neglecting means of escape from it: and being confident that he is a child of God, and that God has promised heaven to him, he may seem strong in the faith of its reality, and may have a great zeal against that infidelity which denies it.

But I proceed to another distinguishing sign of gracious affections.

VI. Gracious affections are attended with *evangelical humiliation*.

Evangelical humiliation is a sense that a Christian has of his own utter insufficiency, despicableness, and odiousness, with an answerable frame of heart.

There is a distinction to be made between a *legal* and *evangelical* humiliation. The former is what men may be the subjects of, while they are yet in a state of nature, and have no gracious affection; the latter is peculiar to true saints: the former is from the common influence of the Spirit of God, assisting natural principles, and especially natural conscience; the latter is from the special influences of the Spirit of God, implanting and exercising supernatural and divine principles: the former is from the mind's being assisted to a greater sense of the things of religion, as to their natural properties and qualities, and particularly of the natural perfections of God, such as his greatness, terrible majesty, &c. which were manifested to the congregation of Israel, in giving the law at mount Sinai; the latter is from a sense of the transcendent beauty of divine things in their moral qualities: in the former, a sense of the awful greatness,

greatness, and natural perfections of God, and of the strictness of his law, convinces men that they are exceeding sinful, and guilty, and exposed to the wrath of God, as it will wicked men and devils at the day of judgment; but they do not see their own *odiousness* on the account of sin; they do not see the hateful nature of sin; a sense of this is given in *evangelical humiliation*, by a discovery of the beauty of God's holiness and moral perfection. In a *legal humiliation*, men are made sensible that they are little and nothing before the great and terrible God, and that they are undone, and wholly insufficient to help themselves; as wicked men will be at the day of judgment: but they have not an *answerable frame of heart*, consisting in a disposition to abase themselves, and exalt God alone; this disposition is given only in evangelical humiliation, by overcoming the heart, and changing its inclination, by a discovery of God's holy beauty: in a legal humiliation, the conscience is convinced; as the consciences of all will be most perfectly at the day of judgment; but because there is no spiritual understanding, the will is not bowed, nor the inclination altered; this is done only in evangelical humiliation. In legal humiliation, men are brought to despair of helping themselves; in evangelical, they are brought voluntarily to deny and renounce themselves: in the former, they are subdued and forced to the ground; in the latter, they are brought sweetly to yield, and freely and with delight to prostrate themselves at the feet of God.

Legal humiliation has in it no spiritual good, nothing of the nature of true virtue; whereas evangelical humiliation is that wherein the excellent beauty of Christian grace does very much consist. Legal humiliation is useful, as a means in order to evangelical; as a common knowledge of the things of religion is a means requisite in order to spiritual knowledge. Men may be legally humbled and have no *humility*; as the wicked at the day of judgment will be thoroughly convinced that they have no righteousness, but are altogether sinful, and exceeding guilty, and justly exposed to eternal damnation, and be fully sensible of their own helplessness, without the least mortification of the pride of their hearts: but the essence of evangelical humiliation consists in such *humility*, as becomes a creature, in itself exceeding sinful, under a dispensation of grace; consisting in a mean esteem of himself, as in himself nothing, and altogether contemptible and odious; attended with a mortification of a disposition to exalt himself, and a free renunciation of his own glory.

This

This is a great and most essential thing in true religion. The whole frame of the gospel, and every thing appertaining to the new covenant, and all God's dispensations towards fallen man, are calculated to bring to pass this effect in the hearts of men. They that are destitute of this, have no true religion, whatever profession they may make, and how high soever their religious affections may be; Hab. ii. 4. "Behold, his soul which is lifted up, is not upright in him; but the just shall live by his faith;" *i. e.* he shall live by his faith on God's righteousness and grace, and not his own goodness and excellency. God has abundantly manifested in his word, that this is what he has a peculiar respect to in his saints, and that nothing is acceptable to him without it; Psal. xxxiv. 18. "The Lord is nigh unto them that are of a broken heart, and saveth such as be of a contrite spirit." Psal. li. 17. "The sacrifices of God are a broken spirit: a broken and a contrite heart, O God, thou wilt not despise." Psal. cxxxviii. 6. "Though the Lord be high, yet hath he respect unto the lowly." Prov. iii. 34. "He giveth grace unto the lowly." Is. lvii. 15. "Thus saith the high and lofty One who inhabiteth eternity, whose name is Holy, I dwell in the high and holy place; with him also that is of a contrite and humble spirit, to revive the spirit of the humble, and to revive the heart of the contrite ones." Is. lxvi. 1, 2. "Thus saith the Lord, The heaven is my throne, and the earth is my footstool:—but to this man will I look, even to him that is poor and of a contrite spirit, and trembleth at my word." Micah vi. 8. "He hath shewed thee, O man, what is good; and what doth the Lord thy God require of thee, but to do justly, and to love mercy, and to walk humbly with thy God?" Matth. v. 3. "Blessed are the poor in spirit: for theirs is the kingdom of God." Matth. xviii. 3, 4. "Verily I say unto you, Except ye be converted, and become as little children, ye shall not enter into the kingdom of heaven. Whosoever therefore shall humble himself as this little child, the same is greatest in the kingdom of heaven." Mark x. 15. "Verily I say unto you, Whosoever shall not receive the kingdom of God as a little child, he shall not enter therein." The centurion, that we have an account of, Luke vii. acknowledged that *he was not worthy that Christ should enter under his roof, and that he was not worthy to come to him.* See the manner of the woman's coming to Christ, that was a sinner, Luke vii. 37, &c. "And behold,

" behold, a woman in the city, which was a sinner, when
 " she knew that Jesus sat at meat in the Pharisee's house,
 " brought an alabaster-box of ointment, and stood at his
 " feet behind him weeping, and began to wash his feet
 " with tears, and did wipe them with the hairs of her head."
 She did not think the hair of her head, which is the natural
 crown and glory of a woman, (1 Cor. xi. 15.) too good to wipe
 the feet of Christ withal. Jesus most graciously accepted her,
 and says to her, *Thy faith hath saved thee, go in peace.* The
 woman of Canaan submitted to Christ, in his saying, *It is not
 meet to take the children's bread, and to cast it to dogs,* and did
 as it were own that she was worthy to be called a dog; where-
 upon Christ says unto her, " O woman, great is thy faith; be
 " it unto thee, even as thou wilt," Matt. xv. 26, 27, 28. The
 prodigal son said, " I will arise and go to my father, and I will
 " say unto him, Father, I have sinned against heaven, and be-
 " fore thee, and am no more worthy to be called thy son; make
 " me as one of thy hired servants," Luke xv. 18, &c. See al-
 so Luke xviii. 9, &c. " And he spake this parable unto certain
 " which trusted in themselves that they were righteous, and
 " despised others, &c.—The publican standing afar off, would
 " not so much as lift up his eyes to heaven, but smote upon
 " his breast, saying, God be merciful to me a sinner. I tell
 " you, this man went down to his house justified rather than the
 " other: for every one that exalteth himself, shall be abased;
 " and he that humbleth himself, shall be exalted." Matt. xxviii.
 9. " And they came and held him by the feet, and worshipped
 " him." Col. iii. 12. " Put ye on, as the elect of God—hum-
 " bleness of mind." Ezek. xx. 41, 43. " I will accept you
 " with your sweet savour, when I bring you out from the
 " people, &c.—And there shall ye remember your ways, and
 " all your doings, wherein ye have been defiled, and ye shall
 " lothe yourselves in your own sight, for all your evils that ye
 " have committed." Chap. xxxvi. 26, 27, 31. " A new heart
 " also will I give unto you—and I will put my Spirit within
 " you, and cause you to walk in my statutes, &c.—Then shall
 " ye remember your own evil ways, and your doings that were
 " not good, and shall lothe yourselves in your own sight, for
 " your iniquities, and for your abominations." Chap. xvi.
 63. " That thou mayst remember and be confounded, and ne-
 " ver open thy mouth any more because of thy shame, when
 " I am pacified toward thee for all that thou hast done, saith

" the

“ the Lord.” Job xlii. 6. “ I abhor myself, and repent in dust and ashes.”

As we would therefore make the holy scriptures, our rule, in judging of the nature of true religion, and judging of our own religious qualifications and state; it concerns us greatly to look at this humiliation, as one of the most essential things pertaining to true Christianity.* This is the principal part of the great Christian duty of *self-denial*. That duty consists in two things, *viz.* *first*, In a man's denying his worldly inclinations, and in forsaking and renouncing all worldly objects and enjoyments; and, *secondly*, In denying his natural self-exaltation, and renouncing his own dignity and glory, and in being emptied of himself; so that he does freely, and from his very heart, as it were renounce himself, and annihilate himself. Thus the Christian doth, in evangelical humiliation. And this latter is the greatest and most difficult part of self-denial: although they always go together, and one never truly is, where the other is not; yet natural men can come much nearer to the former than the latter. Many Anchorites and Recluses have abandoned (though without any true mortification,) the wealth, and pleasures, and common enjoyments of the world, who were far from renouncing their own dignity and righteousness; they never denied themselves for Christ, but only sold one lust to feed another, sold a beastly lust to pamper a devilish one; and so were never the better, but their latter end was worse than their beginning; they turned out one black devil, to let in seven white ones, that were worse than the first, though of a fairer countenance. It is inexpressible, and almost inconceivable, how strong a self-righteous, self-exalting disposition is naturally in man; and what he will not do and suffer, to feed and gratify it; and what lengths have been gone in a seeming self-denial in other respects, by Essenes and Pharisees among the Jews, and by Papists, many sects of heretics, and enthusiasts, among professing

* Calvin, in his institutions, Book II. chap. 2. § 11. says, “ I was always exceedingly pleased with that saying of Chrysostom, ‘ The foundation of our philosophy is humility; ’ and yet more pleased with that of Augustine, ‘ As, says he, the rhetorician being asked, what was the first thing in the rules of eloquence, he answered, Pronunciation; what was the second, pronunciation; what was the third, still he answered, pronunciation. So if you should ask me concerning the precepts of the Christian religion, I would answer, firstly, secondly, and thirdly, and for ever, Humility. ”

professing Christians; and by many Mahometans; and by Pythagorean philosophers, and others, among the Heathen: and all to do sacrifice to this Moloch of spiritual pride or self-righteousness; and that they may have something wherein to exalt themselves before God, and above their fellow-creatures.

That humiliation which has been spoken of, is what all the most glorious hypocrites, who make the most splendid shew of mortification to the world, and high religious affection, do grossly fail in. Were it not that this is so much insisted on in scripture, as a most essential thing in true grace; one would be tempted to think that many of the heathen philosophers were truly gracious, in whom was so bright an appearance of many virtues, and also great illuminations, and inward fervors and elevations of mind, as though they were truly the subjects of divine illapses and heavenly communications.† It is true, that many hypocrites make great pretences to humility, as well as

X x

other

† “ Albeit the Pythagoreans were thus famous for Judaic mysterious wisdom, and many moral, as well as natural accomplishments; yet were they not exempted from boasting and pride; which was indeed a vice most epidemic, and as it were congenial, among all the philosophers; but in a more particular manner, among the Pythagoreans. So Hornius Hist. Philosoph. L. 3. chap. 11. *The manners of the Pythagoreans were not free from boasting. They were all* **ἡΕΡΙΑΥΤΟΔΟΓΟΙ**, *such as abounded in the sense and commendation of their own excellencies, and boasting even almost to the degree of immodestly and impudence, as great Heinsius ad Horat, has rightly observed.* Thus indeed does proud nature delight to walk in the sparks of its own fire. And although many of these old philosophers could, by the strength of their own lights and heats, together with some common elevations and raises of spirit, (peradventure from a more than ordinary, though not special and saving assistance of the Spirit,) abandon many grosser vices; yet they were all deeply immerged in that miserable cursed abyss of spiritual pride: so that all their natural, and moral and philosophic attainments, did feed, nourish, strengthen, and render most inveterate, this hell bred pest of their hearts. Yea those of them that seemed most modest, as the Academics, who professed they knew nothing, and the Cynics, who greatly decried, both in words and habits, the pride of others, yet even they abounded in the most notorious and visible pride. So connatural and morally essential to corrupt nature, in this envenomed root, fountain, and plague of spiritual pride; especially where there is any natural, moral, or philosophic excellence to feed the same. Whence Austin rightly judged all these philosophic virtues, to be but splendid sins.”

Gale's Court of the Gentiles, Part II. B. ii. chap. 10. § 17.

other graces; and very often there is nothing whatsoever what they make a higher profession of. They endeavour to make a great shew of humility in speech and behaviour; but they commonly make bungling work of it, though glorious work in their own eyes. They cannot find out what a humble speech and behaviour is, or how to speak and act so that there may indeed be a favour of Christian humility in what they say and do: that sweet humble air and mien is beyond their art, being not *led by the Spirit*, or naturally guided to a behaviour becoming holy humility, by the vigor of a lowly spirit within them. And therefore they have no other way, many of them, but only to be much in declaring that they be humble, and telling how they were humbled to the dust at such and such times, and abounding in very bad expressions which they use about themselves; such as, *I am the least of all saints, I am a poor vile creature, I am not worthy of the least mercy, or that God should look upon me! Oh, I have a dreadful wicked heart! my heart is worse than the devil! Oh, this cursed heart of mine, &c.* Such expressions are very often used, not with a heart that is broken, not with spiritual mourning, not with the tears of her that washed Jesus's feet with her tears, not as *remembering and being confounded, and never opening their mouth more because of their shame, when God is pacified*, as the expression is, Ezek. xvi. 63. but with a light air, with smiles in the countenance, or with a pharisaical affectation: and we must believe that they are thus humble, and see themselves so vile, upon the credit of their *say so*; for there is nothing appears in them of any favour of humility, in the manner of their deportment and deeds that they do. There are many that are full of expressions of their own vileness, who yet expect to be looked upon as eminent and bright saints by others, as their due; and it is dangerous for any, so much as to hint the contrary, or to carry it towards them any otherwise, than as if we looked upon them some of the chief of Christians. There are many that are much in crying out of their wicked hearts, and their great short-comings, and unprofitableness, and speaking as though they looked on themselves as the meanest of the saints; who yet, if a minister should seriously tell them the same things in private, and should signify, that he feared they were very low and weak Christians, and thought they had reason solemnly to consider of their great barrenness and unprofitableness, and falling so much short of many others; it would be more than they could digest; they would think themselves highly injured; and there

would

would be danger of a rooted prejudice in them against such a minister.

There are some that are abundant in talking against *legal doctrines, legal preaching, and a legal spirit*, who do but little understand the thing they talk against. A *legal spirit* is a more subtil thing than they imagine, it is too subtil for them. It lurks, and operates, and prevails in their hearts, and they are most notoriously guilty of it, at the same time, when they are inveighing against it. So far as a man is not emptied of himself, and of his own righteousness and goodness, in whatever form or shape, so far he is of a *legal spirit*. A spirit of pride of a man's own righteousness, morality, holiness, affection, experience, faith, humiliation, or any goodness whatsoever, is a legal spirit. It was no pride in Adam before the fall, to be of a legal spirit; because of his circumstances, he might seek acceptance by his own righteousness. But a legal spirit in a fallen sinful creature, can be nothing also but spiritual pride; and reciprocally, a spiritually proud spirit is a legal spirit. There is no man living that is lifted up with a conceit of his own experiences and discoveries, and upon the account of them glisters in his own eyes, but what trusts in his experiences, and makes a righteousness of them; however he may use humble terms, and speak of his experiences as of the *great things God has done for him*, and it may be calls upon others to glorify God for them; yet he that is proud of his experiences, arrogates something to himself, as though his experiences were some dignity of his. And if he looks on them as his own dignity, he necessarily thinks that God looks on them so too; for he necessarily thinks his own opinion of them to be true; and consequently judges that God looks on them as he does; and so unavoidably imagines that God looks on his experiences as a dignity in him, as he looks on them himself; and that he glisters as much in God's eyes, as he does in his own. And thus he trusts in what is inherent in him, to make him shine in God's sight, and recommend him to God; and with this encouragement he goes before God in prayer; and this makes him expect much from God; and this makes him think that Christ loves him, and that he is willing to clothe him with his righteousness; because he supposes that he is taken with his experiences and graces. And this is a high degree of living on his own righteousness; and such persons are in the high road to hell. Poor deluded wretches, who think they look so glistering in God's eyes, when they are a smoke in his nose, and are many

many of them more odious to him, than the most impure beast in Sodom, that makes no pretence to religion! To do as these do, is to *live upon experiences*, according to the true notion of it; and not to do as those, who only make use of spiritual experiences, as evidences of a state of grace, and in that way receive hope and comfort from them.

There is a sort of men, who indeed abundantly cry down works, and cry up faith in opposition to works, and set up themselves very much as evangelical persons, in opposition to those that are of a legal spirit, and make a fair shew of advancing Christ and the gospel, and the way of free grace; who are indeed some of the greatest enemies to the gospel-way of free grace, and the most dangerous opposers of pure humble Christianity.†

There is a pretended great humiliation, and being dead to the law, and emptied of self, which is one of the biggest and most elated things in the world. Some there are, who have made great profession of experience of a thorough work of the law on their own hearts, and of being brought fully off from works; whose conversation has favoured most of a self-righteous spirit, of any that ever I had opportunity to observe. And some who think themselves quite emptied of themselves, and
are

† “ Take not every opinion and doctrine from men or angels, that bears a fair shew of advancing Christ; for they may be but the fruits of evangelical hypocrisy and deceit; that being deceived themselves, may deceive others too; Matth. vii. 15. “ Beware of “ them, that come in sheep’s cloathing;” in the innocency, purity, and meekness of Christ and his people; “ but inwardly are wolves,” proud, cruel, censorious, *speaking evil of what they know not. By their fruits you shall know them.* Do not think, beloved, that Satan will not seek to send delusions among us. And do you think these delusions will come out of the Popish pack, whose inventions smell above ground here? No, he must come, and will come with more evangelical, fine-spun devices. It is a rule observed amongst Jesuits, at this day, if they would conquer religion by subtilty, never oppose religion with a cross religion; but set it against itself. So oppose the gospel by the gospel. And look, as churches pleading for works, had new invented devised works; so when faith is preached, men will have their new inventions of faith. I speak not this against the doctrine of faith, where it is preached; but am glad of it: not that I would have men content themselves with every form of faith; for I believe that most mens faith needs confirming or trying. But I speak to prevent danger on that hand.” *Shepard’s Parable*, Part I. p. 122.

are confident that they are abased in the dust, are full as they can hold with the glory of their own humility, and lifted up to heaven with an high opinion of their abasement. Their humility is a swelling, self-conceited, confident, showy, noisy, assuming humility. It seems to be the nature of spiritual pride to make men conceited and ostentatious of their humility. This appears in that first-born of pride, among the children of men, that would be called *his holiness*, even the man of sin, that exalts himself above all that is called God or is worshipped; he styles himself *servant of servants*; and to make a shew of humility, washes the feet of a number of poor men at his inauguration.

For persons to be truly emptied of themselves, and to be poor in spirit, and broken in heart, is quite another thing, and has other effects, than many imagine. It is astonishing how greatly many are deceived about themselves as to this matter, imagining themselves most humble, when they are most proud, and their behaviour is really the most haughty. The deceitfulness of the heart of man appears in no one thing so much, as this of spiritual pride and self-righteousness. The subtilty of Satan appears in its height, in his managing of persons with respect to this sin. And perhaps one reason may be, that here he has most experience: he knows the way of its coming in; he is acquainted with the secret springs of it; it was his own sin. Experience gives vast advantage in leading souls, either in good or evil.

But though spiritual pride be so subtil and secret an iniquity, and commonly appears under a pretext of great humility; yet there are two things by which it may (perhaps universally and surely) be discovered and distinguished.

The *first* thing is this; he that is under the prevalence of this distemper, is apt to think highly of his attainments in religion, as comparing himself with others. It is natural for him to fall into that thought of himself, that he is an eminent saint, that he is very high amongst the saints, and has distinguishingly good and great experiences. That is the secret language of his heart, Luke xviii. 11. "God, I thank thee, that I am not as other men." And If. lxxv. 5. "I am holier than thou." Hence such are apt to put themselves forward among God's people, and as it were to take a high seat among them, as if there was no doubt of it but it belonged to them. They, as it were, naturally do that which Christ condemns, Luke xiv. 7. *Ecce*
take

take the highest room. This they do, by being forward to take upon them the place and business of the chief; to guide, teach, direct and manage; "They are confident that they are guides to the blind, a light of them which are in darkness, instructors of the foolish, teachers of babes," Rom. ii. 19, 20. It is natural for them to take it for granted, that it belongs to them to do the part of dictators and masters in matters of religion; and so they implicitly affect to be called of men Rabbi, which is by interpretation Master, as the Pharisees did, Matth. xxiii. 6. 7. *i. e.* they are apt to expect that others should regard them, and yield to them, as masters, in matters of religion.*

But he whose heart is under the power of Christian humility, is of a contrary disposition. If the scriptures are at all to be relied on, such an one is apt to think his attainments in religion to be comparatively mean, and to esteem himself low among the saints, and one of the least of saints. Humility, or true lowliness of mind, disposes persons to think others better than themselves; Phil. ii. 3. "In lowliness of mind, let each esteem others better than themselves." Hence they are apt to think the lowest room belongs to them; and their inward disposition naturally leads them to obey that precept of our Saviour, Luke xiv. 10. It is not natural to them to take it upon them to do the part of teachers; but on the contrary, they are disposed to think that they are not the persons, that others are fitter for it than they; as it was with Moses and Jeremiah, (Exod. iii. 11. Jer. i. 6.) though they were such eminent saints, and of great knowlege. It is not natural to them to think that it belongs to them to teach, but to be taught: they are much more eager to hear, and to receive instruction from others, than to dictate to others; Jam. i. 19. "Be ye swift to hear, slow to speak." And when they do speak, it is not natural to them to speak with a bold, masterly air; but humility disposes them rather to speak, trembling. Hos. xiii. 1. "When Ephraim spake, trembling, he exalted himself in Israel; but when he offended in Baal, he died." They are not apt to assume authority, and to take upon them to be chief managers and masters; but rather to be subject.

* "There be two things wherein it appears that a man has only common gifts, and no inward principle; 1. These gifts ever puff up, and make a man something in his own eyes, as the Corinthian knowlege did; and many a private man thinks himself fit to be a minister."

Shepard's Parable, Part I. p. 181, 182.

subject to others; Jam. iii. 1, 2. "Be not many masters." 1 Pet. v. 5. "All of you be subject one to another, and be clothed with humility." Eph. v. 21. "Submitting yourselves one to another in the fear of God."

There are some persons experiences that naturally work that way, to make them think highly of their experiences; and they do often themselves speak of their experiences as very great and extraordinary; they freely speak of the *great things they have met with*. This may be spoken and meant in a good sense. In one sense, every degree of saving mercy is a *great thing*: it is indeed a thing *great*, yea, *infinitely great*, for God to bestow the least crumb of childrens bread on such dogs as we are in ourselves; and the more humble a person is that hopes that God has bestowed such mercy on him, the more apt will he be to call it a *great thing that he has met with*, in this sense. But if by *great things which they have experienced*, they mean comparatively great spiritual experiences, or great compared with others experiences, or beyond what is ordinary, which is evidently oftentimes the case; then for a person to say, *I have met with great things*, is the very same thing as to say, *I am an eminent saint*, and have more grace than ordinary: for to have great experiences, if the experiences be true and worth the telling of, is the same thing as to have great grace: there is no true experience, but the exercise of grace; and exactly according to the degree of true experience, is the degree of grace and holiness. The persons that talk thus about their experiences, when they give an account of them, expect that others should admire them. Indeed they do not call it boasting to talk after this manner about their experiences, nor do they look upon it as any sign of pride: because they say, *they know that it was not they that did it, it was free grace, they are the great things that God has done for them, they would acknowledge the great mercy God has shown them, and not make light of it*. But so it was with the Pharisee that Christ tells us of, Luke xviii. He in words gave God the glory of making him to differ from other men; *God, I thank thee, says he, that I am not as other men.** Their verbally ascribing it to the grace of God, that they

* Calvin, in his Institutions, B. III. chap. xii. § 7. speaking of this Pharisee, observes, "That in his outward confession, he acknowledges that the righteousness that he has is the gift of God: but (says he) because he trusts *that he is righteous*, he goes away out of the presence of God, unacceptable and odious."

they are holier than other saints, does not hinder their forwardness to think so highly of their holiness, being a sure evidence of the pride and vanity of their minds. If they were under the influence of an humble spirit, their attainments in religion would not be so apt to shine in their own eyes, nor would they be so much in admiring their own beauty. The Christians that are really the most eminent saints, and therefore have the most excellent experiences, "and are greatest in the kingdom of heaven, humble themselves as a little child," Matt. xviii. 4. because they look on themselves as but little children in grace, and their attainments to be but the attainments of babes in Christ, and are astonished at, and ashamed of the low degrees of their love, and their thankfulness, and their little knowledge of God. Moses when he had been conversing with God in the mount, and his face shone so bright in the eyes of others as to dazzle their eyes, *wist not that his face shone*. There are some persons that go by the name of high professors, and some will own themselves to be high professors, but eminently humble saints, that will shine brightest in heaven, are not at all apt to profess high. I do not believe there is an eminent saint in the world that is a high professor. Such will be much more likely to profess themselves to be the least of all saints, and to think that every saint's attainments and experiences are higher than his.†

Such

† Luther, as his words are cited by Rutherford, in his *Display of the spiritual Antichrist*, p. 143, 144. says thus, "So is the life of a Christian, that he that has begun, seems to himself to have nothing; but strives and presses forward, that he may apprehend. Whence Paul says, *I count not myself to have apprehended*. For indeed nothing is more pernicious to a believer, than that presumption, that he has already apprehended, and has no further need of seeking. Hence also many fall back, and pine away in spiritual security and slothfulness. So Bernard says, *To stand still in God's way, is to go back*. Wherefore this remains to him that has begun to be a Christian, to think that he is not yet a Christian, but to seek that he may be a Christian, that he may glory with Paul, *I am not, but I desire to be*; a Christian not yet finished, but only in his beginnings. Therefore he is not a Christian, that is a Christian, that is, he that thinks himself a finished Christian, and is not sensible how he falls short. We reach after heaven, but are not in heaven. Wo to him that is wholly renewed, that is, that thinks himself to be so. That man, without doubt, has never so much as begun to be renewed, nor did he ever taste what it is to be a Christian."

Such is the nature of grace, and of true spiritual light that they naturally dispose the faints in the present state, to look upon their grace and goodness little, and their deformity great. And they that have the most grace and spiritual light, of any in this world, have most of this disposition. As will appear most clear and evident to any one that soberly and thoroughly weighs the nature and reason of things, and considers the things following.

That grace and holiness is worthy to be called little, that is, little in comparison of what it ought to be. And so it seems to one that is truly gracious: for such an one has his eye upon the rule of his duty; a conformity to that is what he aims at; it is what his soul struggles and reaches after; and it is by that that he estimates and judges of what he does, and what he has. To a gracious soul, and especially to one eminently gracious, *that* holiness appears little, which is little of what it should be; little of what he sees infinite reason for, and obligation to. If his holiness appears to him to be at a vast distance from this, it naturally appears despicable in his eyes, and not worthy to be mentioned as any beauty or amiableness in him. For the like reason as a hungry man naturally accounts that which is set before him, but a little food, a small matter, not worth mentioning, that is nothing in comparison of his appetite. Or as the child of a great prince, that is jealous for the honor of his father, and beholds the respect which men shew him, naturally looks on that honor and respect very little, and not worthy to be regarded, which is nothing in comparison of that which the dignity of his father requires.

But that is the nature of true grace and spiritual light, that it opens to a person's view the infinite reason there is that he should be holy in a high degree. And the more grace he has, the more this is opened to view, the greater sense he has of the infinite excellency and glory of the divine Being, and of the infinite dignity of the person of Christ, and the boundless length and breadth, and depth and height, of the love of Christ to sinners. And as grace increases, the field opens more and more to a distant view, until the soul is swallowed up with the vastness of the object, and the person is astonished to think how much it becomes him to love this God, and this glorious Redeemer, that has so loved man, and how little he does love. And so the more he apprehends, the more the smallness of his grace and love appears strange and wonderful:

and therefore is more ready to think that others are beyond him. For wondering at the littleness of his own grace, he can scarcely believe that so strange a thing happens to other saints: it is amazing to him, that one that is really a child of God, and that has actually received the saving benefits of that unspeakable love of Christ, should love no more: and he is apt to look upon it as a thing peculiar to himself, a strange and exempt instance; for he sees only the outside of other Christians, but he sees his own inside.

Here the reader may possibly object, that love to God is really increased in proportion as the knowledge of God is increased; and therefore how should an increase of knowledge in a saint, make his love appear less, in comparison of what is known? To which I answer, that although grace and the love of God in the saints, be answerable to the degree of knowledge or sight of God; yet it is not in proportion to the object seen and known. The soul of a saint, by having something of God opened to sight, is convinced of much more than is seen. There is something that is seen, that is wonderful; and that sight brings with it a strong conviction of something vastly beyond, that is not immediately seen. So that the soul, at the same time, is astonished at its ignorance, and that it knows so little, as well as that it loves so little. And as the soul, in a spiritual view, is convinced of infinitely more in the object, yet beyond sight; so it is convinced of the capacity of the soul, of knowing vastly more, if clouds and darkness were but removed. Which causes the soul, in the enjoyment of a spiritual view, to complain greatly of spiritual ignorance, and want of love, and long and reach after more knowledge, and more love.

Grace and the love of God in the most eminent saints in this world, is truly very little in comparison of what it ought to be. Because the highest love, that ever any attain to in this life, is poor, cold, exceeding low, and not worthy to be named in comparison of what our obligations appear to be, from the joint consideration of these two things; *viz.* 1. The reason God has given us to love him, in the manifestations he has made of his infinite glory, in his word, and in his works; and particularly in the gospel of his Son, and what he has done for sinful man by him. And, 2. The capacity there is in the soul of man, by those intellectual faculties which God has given it, of seeing and understanding these reasons, which God has given us to love him. How small indeed is the love of the
 most

most eminent saint on earth, in comparison of what these things jointly considered do require ! And this grace tends to convince men of ; and especially eminent grace : for grace is of the nature of light, and brings truth to view. And therefore he that has much grace, apprehends much more than others, that great height to which his love ought to ascend ; and he sees better than others, how little a way he has risen towards that height. And therefore, estimating his love by the whole height of his duty, hence it appears astonishingly little and low in his eyes.

And the eminent saint, having such a conviction of the high degree in which he ought to love God, this shews him, not only the littleness of his grace, but the greatness of his remaining corruption. In order to judge how much corruption or sin we have remaining in us, we must take our measure from that height to which the rule of our duty extends : the whole of the distance we are at from that height, is sin : for failing of duty is sin ; otherwise our duty is not our duty ; and by how much the more we fall short of our duty, so much the more sin have we. Sin is no other than disagreeableness, in a moral agent, to the law, or rule of his duty. And therefore the degree of sin is to be judged of by the rule : so much disagreeableness to the rule, so much sin, whether it be in *defect* or *excess*. Therefore if men, in their love to God, do not come up half way to that height which duty requires, then they have more corruption in their hearts than grace ; because there is more goodness wanting, than is there ; and all that is wanting is sin : it is an abominable defect ; and appears so to the saints, especially those that are eminent ; it appears exceeding abominable to them, that Christ should be loved so little, and thanked so little for his dying love ; it is in their eyes hateful ingratitude.

And then the increase of grace has a tendency another way, to cause the saints to think their deformity vastly more than their goodness : it not only tends to convince them that their corruption is much greater than their goodness, which is indeed the case ; but it also tends to cause the deformity that there is in the least sin, or the least degree of corruption, to appear so great, as vastly to outweigh all the beauty there is in their greatest holiness ; for this also is indeed the case. For the least sin against an infinite God, has an infinite hatefulness or deformity in it ; but the highest degree of holiness in a creature, has not an infinite loveliness in it : and therefore the
loveliness

loveliness of it is as nothing, in comparison of the deformity of the least sin. That every sin has infinite deformity and hatefulness in it, is most demonstrably evident; because what the evil, or iniquity, or hatefulness of sin consists in, is the violating of an obligation, or the being or doing contrary to what we should be or do, or are obliged to. And therefore by how much the greater the obligation is that is violated, so much the greater is the iniquity and hatefulness of the violation. But certainly our obligation to love and honor any being, is in some proportion to his loveliness and honourableness, or to his worthiness to be loved and honored by us; which is the same thing. We are surely under greater obligation to love a more lovely being, than a less lovely: and if a Being be infinitely lovely or worthy to be loved by us, then our obligations to love him, are infinitely great: and therefore, whatever is contrary to this love, has in it infinite iniquity, deformity, and unworthiness. But on the other hand, with respect to our holiness or love to God, there is not an infinite worthiness in that. The sin of the creature against God, is ill-deserving and hateful in proportion to the distance there is between God and the creature: the greatness of the object, and the meanness and inferiority of the subject, aggravates it. But it is the reverse with regard to the worthiness of the respect of the creature to God; it is *worthless*, and not worthy, in proportion to the meanness of the subject. So much the greater the distance between God and the creature, so much the less is the creature's respect worthy of God's notice or regard. The great degree of superiority increases the obligation on the inferior to regard the superior; and so makes the want of regard more hateful: but the great degree of inferiority diminishes the worth of the regard of the inferior; because the more he is inferior, the less is he worthy of notice, the less he is, the less is what he can offer worth; for he can offer no more than himself, in offering his best respect; and therefore as he is little, and little worth, so is his respect little worth. And the more a person has of true grace and spiritual light, the more will it appear thus to him; the more will he appear to himself infinitely deformed by reason of sin, and the less will the goodness that is in his grace, or good experience, appear in proportion to it. For indeed it is nothing to it; it is less than a drop to the ocean; for finite bears no proportion at all to that which is infinite. But the more a person has of spiritual light, the more do things appear

to him, in this respect, as they are indeed. Hence it most demonstrably appears, that true grace is of that nature, that the more a person has of it, with remaining corruption, the less does his goodness and holiness appear, in proportion to his deformity; and not only to his past deformity, but to his present deformity, in the sin that now appears in his heart, and in the abominable defects of his highest and best affections, and brightest experiences.

The nature of many high religious affections, and great discoveries (as they are called) in many persons that I have been acquainted with, is to hide and cover over the corruption of their hearts, and to make it seem to them as if all their sins was gone, and to leave them without complaints of any hateful evil left in them; (though it may be they cry out much of their past unworthiness;) a sure and certain evidence that their discoveries (as they call them) are darkness and not light. It is darkness that hides mens pollution and deformity; but light let into the heart discovers it, searches it out in its secret corners, and makes it plainly to appear; especially that penetrating, all-searching light of God's holiness and glory. It is true, that saving discoveries may for the present hide corruption in one sense; they restrain the *positive exercises* of it, such as malice, envy, covetousness, lasciviousness, murmuring, &c. but they bring corruption to light, in that which is privative, *viz.* that there is no more love, no more humility, no more thankfulness. Which defects appear most hateful, in the eyes of those who have the most eminent exercises of grace; and are very burdensome, and cause the saints to cry out of their leanness, and odious pride and ingratitude. And whatever positive exercises of corruption, at any time arise, and mingle themselves with eminent actions of grace, grace will exceedingly magnify the view of them, and render their appearance far more heinous and horrible.

The more eminent saints are, and the more they have of the light of *heaven* in their souls, the more do they appear to themselves, as the most eminent saints in this world do, to the saints and angels in *heaven*. How can we rationally suppose the most eminent saints on earth appear to them, if beheld any otherwise, than covered over with the righteousness of Christ, and their deformities swallowed up and hid in the coruscation of the beams of his abundant glory and love? how can we suppose our most ardent love and praises appear to them, that do
 behold

behold the beauty and glory of God without a veil? how does our highest thankfulness for the dying love of Christ appear to them, who see Christ as he is, who know as they are known, and see the glory of the person of him that died, and the wonders of his dying love, without any cloud or darkness? and how do they look on the deepest reverence and humility, with which worms of the dust on earth approach that infinite Majesty, which they behold? do they appear great to them, or so much as worthy of the name of reverence and humility, in those that they see to be at such an infinite distance from that great and holy God, in whose glorious presence they are? The reason why the highest attainments of the saints on earth appear so mean to them, is because they dwell in the light of God's glory, and see God as he is. And it is in this respect with the saints on earth, as it is with the saints in heaven, in proportion as they are more eminent in grace.

I would not be understood, that the saints on earth have, in all respects, the worst opinion of themselves, when they have most of the exercise of grace. In many respects it is otherwise. With respect to the positive exercises of corruption, they may appear to themselves freest and best when grace is most in exercise; and worst when the actings of grace are lowest. And when they compare themselves with themselves, at different times, they may know, when grace is in lively exercise, that it is better with them than it was before, (though before, in the time of it, they did not see so much badness as they see now;) and when afterwards they sink again in the frame of their minds, they may know that they sink, and have a new argument of their great remaining corruption, and a *rational* conviction of a greater vileness than they saw before; and may have more of a sense of guilt, and a kind of *legal* sense of their sinfulness, by far, than when in the lively exercise of grace. But yet it is true, and demonstrable from the forementioned considerations, that the children of God never have so much of a *sensible* and *spiritual* conviction of their deformity, and so great, and quick, and abasing a sense of their present vileness and odiousness, as when they are highest in the exercise of true and pure grace; and never are they so much disposed to set themselves low among Christians as then. And thus *he that is greatest in the kingdom*, or most eminent in the church of Christ, is the same *that humbles himself*, as the least infant among them; agreeable to that great saying of Christ, Matth. xviii. 4.

A true faint may know that he has some true grace : and the more grace there is, the more easily is it known ; as was observed and proved before. But yet it does not follow, that an eminent faint is easily sensible that he is an eminent faint, when compared with others.—I will not deny that it is possible, that he that has much grace, and is an eminent faint, may know it. But he will not be apt to know it ; it will not be a thing obvious to him : that he is better than others, and has higher experiences and attainments, is not a foremost thought ; nor is it that which, from time to time, readily offers itself ; it is a thing that is not in his way, but lies far out of sight ; he must take pains to convince himself of it ; there will be need of a great command of reason, and a high degree of strictness and care in arguing, to convince himself. And if he be rationally convinced, by a very strict consideration of his own experiences, compared with the great appearances of low degrees of grace in some other faints, it will hardly seem real to him, that he has more grace than they ; and he will be apt to lose the conviction, that he has by pains obtained ; nor will it seem at all natural to him to act upon that supposition. And this may be laid down as an infallible thing. *That the person who is apt to think that he, as compared with others, is a very eminent faint, much distinguished in Christian experience, in whom this is a first thought, that rises of itself, and naturally offers itself ; he is certainly mistaken ; he is no eminent faint ; but under the great prevailings of a proud and self-righteous spirit.* And if this be habitual with the man, and is stately the prevailing temper of his mind, he is no faint at all ; he has not the least degree of any true Christian experience ; so surely as the word of God is true.

And that sort of experiences that appears to be of that tendency, and is found from time to time to have that effect, to elevate the subject of them with a great conceit of those experiences, is certainly vain and delusive. Those supposed discoveries that naturally blow up the person with an admiration of the eminency of his discoveries, and fill him with conceit, that now he has seen, and knows more than most other Christians, have nothing of the nature of true spiritual light in them. All true spiritual knowlege is of that nature, that the more a person has of it, the more is he sensible of his own ignorance ; as is evident by 1 Cor. viii. 2. “ He that thinketh he knoweth any thing, he knoweth nothing yet as he ought to know.” Agur,
when

when he had a great discovery of God, and sense of the wonderful height of his glory, and of his marvellous works, and cries out of his greatness and incomprehensibleness; at the same time, had the deepest sense of his brutish ignorance, and looked upon himself the most ignorant of all the saints; Prov. xxx. 2, 3, 4. "Surely I am more brutish than any man, and have not the understanding of a man. I neither learned wisdom, nor have the knowledge of the holy. Who hath ascended up into heaven, or descended? who hath gathered the wind in his fists? who hath bound the waters in a garment? who hath established all the ends of the earth? *what is his name, and what is his son's name, if thou canst tell?*"

For a man to be highly conceited of his spiritual and divine knowledge, is for him to be wise in his own eyes, if any thing is. And therefore it comes under those prohibitions, Prov. iii. 7. "Be not wise in thine own eyes;" Rom. xii. 16. "Be not wise in your own conceits:" and brings men under that wo, Is. v. 21. "Wo unto them that are wise in their own eyes, and prudent in their own sight." Those that are thus wise in their own eyes, are some of the least likely to get good of any in the world. Experience shews the truth of that, Prov. xxvi. 12. "Seest thou a man wise in his own conceit? there is more hope of a fool than of him."

To this some may object, that the psalmist, when we must suppose that he was in a holy frame, speaks of his knowledge as eminently great, and far greater than that of other saints Psal. cxix. 99, 100. "I have more understanding than all my teachers: for thy testimonies are my meditation. I understand more than the ancients: because I keep thy precepts."

To this I answer two things:

(1.) There is no restraint to be laid upon the Spirit of God, as to what he shall reveal to a prophet, for the benefit of his church, who is speaking or writing under *immediate inspiration*. The Spirit of God may reveal to such an one, and dictate to him, to declare to others, secret things, that otherwise would be hard, yea impossible for him to find out. As he may reveal to him mysteries, that otherwise would be above the reach of his reason; or things in a distant place, that he cannot see; or future events, that it would be impossible for him to know and declare, if they were not extraordinarily revealed to him: so the Spirit of God might reveal to David this distinguishing benefit he had received, by conversing much with God's testimonies; and use him as his instrument to record it for the benefit

benefit he had received, by conversing much with God's testimonies; and use him as his instrument to record it for the benefit of others, to excite them to the like duty, and to use the same means to gain knowlege. Nothing can be gathered concerning the natural tendency of the *ordinary* gracious influences of the Spirit of God, from that, that David declares of his distinguishing knowlege under the *extraordinary* influences of God's Spirit, immediately dictating to him the divine mind by inspiration, and using David as his instrument to write what he pleased for the benefit of his church; any more than we can reasonably argue, that it is the natural tendency of grace to incline men to curse others, and wish the most dreadful misery to them that can be thought of, because David, under inspiration, often curses others, and prays that such misery may come upon them.

(2.) It is not certain that the knowlege David here speaks of, is spiritual knowlege, wherein holiness does fundamentally consist. But it may be that greater revelation which God made to him of the Messiah, and the things of his future kingdom, and the far more clear and extensive knowlege that he had of the mysteries and doctrines of the gospel, than others; as a reward for his keeping God's testimonies. In this, it is apparent by the book of Psalms, that David far exceeded all that had gone before him.

Secondly, Another thing that is an infallible sign of spiritual pride, is persons being apt to think highly of their humility. False experiences are commonly attended with a counterfeit humility. And it is the very nature of a counterfeit humility, to be highly conceited of itself. False religious affections have generally that tendency, especially when raised to a great height, to make persons think that their humility is great, and accordingly to take much notice of their great attainments in this respect, and admire them. But eminently gracious affections (I scruple not to say it) are evermore of a contrary tendency, and have universally a contrary effect, in those that have them. They indeed make them very sensible what reason there is that they should be deeply humbled, and cause them earnestly to thirst and long after it; but they make their present humility, or that which they have already attained to, to appear small; and their remaining pride great, and exceedingly abominable.

The reason why a proud person should be apt to think his humility great, and why a very humble person should think his

humility small, may be easily seen, if it be considered, that it is natural for persons, in judging of the degree of their own humiliation, to take their measure from that which they esteem their proper height, or the dignity wherein they properly stand. That may be great humiliation in one, that is no humiliation at all in another; because the degree of honorableness or considerableness, wherein each does properly stand, is very different. For some great man, to stoop to loose the latchet of the shoes of another great man, his equal, or to wash his feet, would be taken notice of as an act of abasement in him; and he being sensible of his own dignity, would look upon it so himself. But if a poor slave is seen stooping to unloose the shoes of a great prince, no body will take any notice of this, as any act of humiliation in him, or token of any great degree of humility: nor would the slave himself, unless he be horribly proud, and ridiculously conceited of himself: and if after he had done it, he should, in his talk and behaviour, shew that he thought his abasement great in it, and had his mind much upon it, as an evidence of his being very humble: would not every body cry out upon him, “Who do you think yourself
 “to be, that you should think this that you have done, such a
 “deep humiliation?” This would make it plain to a demonstration, that this slave was swollen with a high degree of pride and vanity of mind, as much as if he declared in plain terms, *I think myself to be some great one.* And the matter is no less plain and certain, when worthless, vile and loathsome worms of the dust, are apt to put such a construction on their acts of abasement before God; and to think it a token of great humility in them, that they, under their affectionous, can find themselves so willing to acknowledge themselves to be so and so mean and unworthy, and to behave themselves as those that are so inferior. The very reason why such outward acts, and such inward exercises, look like great abasement in such an one, is because he has a high conceit of himself. Whereas if he thought of himself more justly, these things would appear nothing to him, and his humility in them worthy of no regard; but would rather be astonished at his pride, that one so infinitely despicable and vile, is brought no lower before God.—When he says in his heart, “This is a great act of humiliation; it is
 “certainly a sign of great humility in me, that I should feel
 “thus, and do so:” his meaning is, “This is great humility
 “for me, for such a one as I, that am so considerable and
 “worthy.”

“worthy.” He considers how low he is now brought, and compares this with the height of dignity, on which he in his heart thinks he properly stands, and the distance appears very great, and he calls it all mere humility, and as such admires it. Whereas, in him that is truly humble, and really sees his own vileness and loathsomeness before God, the distance appears the other way. When he is brought lowest of all, it does not appear to him, that he is brought below his proper station, but that he is not come to it; he appears to himself, yet vastly above it: he longs to get lower, that he may come to it; but appears at a great distance from it. And this distance he calls pride. And therefore his pride appears great to him, and not his humility. For although he is brought much lower than he used to be; yet it does not appear to him worthy of the name of humiliation, for him that is so infinitely mean and detestable to come down to a place, which though it be lower than what he used to assume, is yet vastly higher than what is proper for him. As men would hardly count it worthy of the name of humility, in a contemptible slave, that formerly affected to be a prince, to have his spirit so far brought down, as to take the place of a nobleman; when this is still so far above his proper station.

All men in the world, in judging of the degree of their own and others humility, as appearing in any act of theirs, consider two things; *viz.* the real degree of dignity they stand in; and the degree of abasement, and the relation it bears to that real dignity. Thus the complying with the same low place, or low act, may be an evidence of great humility in one, that evidences but little or no humility in another. But truly humble Christians have so mean an opinion of their own real dignity, that all their self-abasement, when considered with relation to that, and compared with that, appears very small to them. It does not seem to them to be any great humility, or any abasement to be made much of, for such poor, vile, abject creatures as they, to lie at the foot of God.

The degree of humility is to be judged of by the degree of *abasement*, and the degree of the *cause for abasement*: but he that is truly and eminently humble, never thinks his humility great, considering the cause. The cause why he should be abased appears so great, and the abasement of the frame of his heart so greatly short of it, that he takes much more notice of his pride than his humility.

Every one that has been conversant with souls under convictions of sin, knows that those who are greatly convinced of sin, are not apt to think themselves greatly convinced. And the reason is this: men judge of the degree of their own convictions of sin by two things jointly considered; *viz.* the degree of sense which they have of guilt and pollution, and the degree of cause they have for such a sense, in the degree of their real sinfulness. It is really no argument of any great conviction of sin, for some men to think themselves to be very sinful, beyond most others in the world; because they are so indeed, very plainly and notoriously. And therefore a far less conviction of sin may incline such an one to think so than another; he must be very blind indeed not to be sensible of it. But he that is truly under great convictions of sin, naturally thinks this to be his case. It appears to him, that the cause he has to be sensible of guilt and pollution, is greater than others have; and therefore he ascribes his sensibleness of this, to the greatness of his sin, and not to the greatness of his sensibility. It is natural for one under great convictions, to think himself one of the greatest of sinners in reality, and also that it is so very plainly and evidently; for the greater his convictions are, the more plain and evident it seems to be to him. And therefore it necessarily seems to him so plain and so easy to him to see it, that it may be seen without much conviction. *That* man is under great convictions, whose conviction is great in proportion to his sin. But no man that is truly under great convictions, thinks his conviction great in proportion to his sin. For if he does, it is a certain sign that he inwardly thinks his sins small. And if that be the case, *that* is a certain evidence that his conviction is small. And this, by the way, is the main reason, that persons, when under a work of humiliation, are not sensible of it, in the time of it.

And as it is with conviction of sin, just so it is, by parity of reason, with respect to persons conviction or sensibleness of their own meanness and vileness, their own blindness, their own impotence, and all that low sense that a Christian has of himself, in the exercise of *evangelical humiliation*. So that in a high degree of this, the saints are never disposed to think their sensibleness of their own meanness, filthiness, impotence, &c. to be great; because it never appears great to them, considering the cause.

An eminent saint is not apt to think himself eminent in any thing; all his graces and experiences are ready to appear to him to be comparatively small; but especially his humility. There is nothing that appertains to Christian experience, and true piety, that is so much out of his sight as his humility. He is a thousand times more quick-sighted to discern his pride, than his humility: *that* he easily discerns, and is apt to take much notice of, but hardly discerns his humility. On the contrary, the deluded hypocrite, that is under the power of spiritual pride, is so blind to nothing as his pride; and so quick-sighted to nothing, as the shews of humility that are in him.

The humble Christian is more apt to find fault with his own pride than with other mens. He is apt to put the best construction on others words and behaviour, and to think that none are so proud as himself. But the proud hypocrite is quick to discern the mote in his brother's eye, in this respect; while he sees nothing of the beam in his own. He is very often much in crying out of others pride, finding fault with others apparel, and way of living; and is affected ten times as much with his neighbour's ring or ribbon, as with all the filthiness of his own heart.

From the disposition there is in hypocrites to think highly of their humility, it comes to pass that counterfeit humility is forward to put forth itself to view. Those that have it, are apt to be much in speaking of their humiliations, and to set them forth in high terms, and to make a great outward shew of humility, in affected looks, gestures, or manner of speech, or meanness of apparel, or some affected singularity. So it was of old with the false prophets, Zech. xiii. 4. so it was with the hypocritical Jews, Is. lvii. 5 and so Christ tells us it was with the Pharisees, Matth. vi. 16. - But it is contrariwise with true humility; they that have it, are not apt to display their eloquence in setting of it forth, or to speak of the degree of their abasement in strong terms.* It does not affect

* It is an observation of Mr. Jones, in his excellent treatise of the canon of the New Testament, that the evangelist Mark, who was the companion of St. Peter, and is supposed to have written his gospel under the direction of that apostle, when he mentions Peter's repentance after his denying his Master, he does not use such strong terms to set it forth as the other evangelists, he only uses these words; "When he thought thereon, he wept," Mark xiv. 72.; whereas the other evangelists say thus, "He went out, and wept bitterly," Matth. xvi. 75. Luke xxii. 62.

affect to shew itself in any singular outward meanness of apparel, or way of living; agreeable to what is implied in Math. vi. 17. "But thou, when thou fastest, anoint thine head, and wash thy face." Col. ii. 23. "Which things have indeed a shew of wisdom in will-worship and humility, and neglecting of the body." Nor is true humility a noisy thing; it is not loud and boisterous. The scripture represents it as of a contrary nature. Ahab, when he had a visible humility, a resemblance of true humility, *went softly*, 1 Kings xxi. 27. A penitent, in the exercise of true humiliation, is represented as still and silent, Lam. iii. 28. "He sitteth alone and keepeth silence, because he hath borne it upon him." And silence is mentioned as what attends humility; Prov. xxx. 32. "If thou hast done foolishly in lifting up thyself, or if thou hast thought evil, lay thine hand upon thy mouth."

Thus I have particularly and largely shewn the nature of that true humility that attends holy affections, as it appears in its tendency to cause persons to think meanly of their attainments in religion, as compared with the attainments of others, and particularly, of their attainments in humility: and have shewn the contrary tendency of spiritual pride, to dispose persons to think their attainments in these respects to be great. I have insisted the longer on this matter, because I look upon it a matter of great importance, as it affords a certain distinction between true and counterfeit humility; and also as this disposition of hypocrites to look on themselves better than others, is what God has declared to be very hateful to him, "a smoke in his nose, and a fire that burneth all the day," Is. lxxv. 5. It is mentioned as an instance of the pride of the inhabitants of that holy city (as it was called) Jerusalem, that they esteemed themselves far better than the people of Sodom, and so looked upon them worthy to be overlooked and disregarded by them; Ezek. xvi. 56. "For thy sister Sodom was not mentioned by thy mouth in the day of thy pride."

Let not the reader lightly pass over these things in application to himself. If you once have taken it in, that it is a bad sign for a person to be apt to think himself a better saint than others, there will arise a blinding prejudice in your own favor; and there will probably be need of a great strictness of self-examination, in order to determine whether it be so with you. If on the proposal of the question, you answer, *No, it seems to me, none are so bad as I.* Do not let the matter pass off so; but

but examine again, whether or no you do not think yourself better than others on this very account, because you imagine you think so meanly of yourself. Have not you an high opinion of this humility? and if you answer again, *No, I have not an high opinion of my humility; it seems to me I am as proud as the devil*; yet examine again, whether self-conceit do not rise up under this cover; whether on this very account, that you think yourself as proud as the devil, you do not think yourself to be very humble.

From this opposition that there is between the nature of a true, and of a counterfeit humility, as to the esteem that the subjects of them have of themselves, arises a manifold contrariety of temper and behaviour.

A truly humble person, having such a mean opinion of his righteousness and holiness, is *poor in spirit*. For a person to be poor in spirit, is to be in his own sense and apprehension poor, as to what is in him, and to be of an answerable disposition. Therefore a truly humble person, especially one eminently humble; naturally behaves himself in many respects as a poor man. *The poor useth intreaties, but the rich answereth roughly*. A poor man is not disposed to quick and high resentment when he is among the rich: he is apt to yield to others, for he knows others are above him; he is not stiff and self-willed; he is patient with hard fare: he expects no other than to be despised, and takes it patiently; he does not take it heinously that he is overlooked, and but little regarded; he is prepared to be in low place; he readily honors his superiors; he takes reproofs quietly; he readily honors others as above him; he easily yields to be taught, and does not claim much to his understanding and judgment; he is not over nice or humourfome, and has his spirit subdued to hard things; he is not assuming, nor apt to take much upon him, but it is natural for him to be subject to others. Thus it is with the humble Christian. Humility is (as the great Maastricht expresses it) *a kind of holy pusillanimity*.

A man that is very poor is a beggar; so is he that is poor in spirit. This is a great difference between those affections that are gracious, and those that are false: under the former, the person continues still a poor beggar at God's gates, exceeding empty and needy; but the latter make men appear to them-

selves

felves rich, and increased with goods, and not very necessitous; they have a great stock in their own imagination for their subsistence.†

A poor man is modest in his speech and behaviour; so, and much more, and more certainly and universally is one that is poor in spirit; he is humble and modest in his behaviour amongst men. It is in vain for any to pretend that they are humble, and as little children before God, when they are haughty, assuming, and impudent in their behaviour amongst men. The apostle informs us, that the design of the gospel is to cut off all glorying, not only before God, but also before men, Rom. iv. 1, 2. Some pretend to great humiliation, that are very haughty, audacious and assuming in their external appearance and behaviour; but they ought to consider those scriptures, Psa. cxxxi. 1. "Lord, my heart is not haughty, nor mine eyes
"lofty: neither do I exercise myself in great matters, or in
"things too high for me." Prov. vi. 16, 17. "These six
"things doth the Lord hate; yea, seven are an abomination
"unto him: a proud look," &c.—Chap. xxi. 4. "An high
"look, and a proud heart, are sin." Psa. xviii. 27. "Thou
"wilt bring down high looks." And Psa. ci. 5. "Him
"that hath an high look, and a proud heart, I will not suffer."

1 Cor.

† "This spirit ever keeps a man poor and vile in his own eyes, and empty.—When the man hath got some knowlege, and can discourse pretty well, and hath some tastes of the heavenly gift, some sweet illapses of grace, and so his conscience is pretty well quieted: and if he hath got some answer to his prayers, and hath sweet affections, he grows full: and having ease to his conscience, casts off sense, and daily groaning under sin. And hence the spirit of prayer dies: he loses his esteem of God's ordinances; feels not such need of them; or gets no good, feels no life or power by them.—This is the woful condition of some; but yet they know it not. But now he that is filled with the Spirit, the Lord empties him; and the more, the longer he lives. So that though others think he needs not much grace; yet he accounts himself the poorest." *Shepard's Parable of the ten virgins.* Part II. p. 132.

"After all fillings, be ever empty, hungry, and feeling need, and praying for more." *Ibid.* p. 151.

"Truly, brethren, when I see the curse of God upon many Christians, that are now grown full of their parts, gifts, peace, comforts, abilities, duties, I stand adoring the riches of the Lord's mercy, to a little bandful of poor believers; not only in making them empty, but in keeping them so all their days." *Shepard's Sound Believer,* the late edition in Boston, p. 158, 159.

1 Cor. xiii. 4. "Charity vaunteth not itself, doth not believe
 "itself unseemly." There is a certain amiable modesty and
 fear that belongs to a Christian behaviour among men, arising
 from humility, that the scripture often speaks of; 1 Pet. iii.
 15. "Be ready to give an answer to every man that asketh you,
 "—with meekness and fear." Rom. xiii. 7. "Fear, to whom
 "fear." 2 Cor. vii. 15. "Whilst he remembereth the obe-
 "dience of you all, how with fear and trembling you received
 "him." Eph. vi. 5. "Servants, be obedient to them that are
 "your masters according to the flesh, with fear and trembling."
 1 Pet. ii. 18. "Servants, be subject to your masters with all
 "fear." 1 Pet. iii. 2. "While they behold your chaste con-
 "versation coupled with fear." 1 Tim. ii. 9. "That women
 "adorn themselves in modest apparel, with shamefacedness and
 "sobriety." In this respect a Christian is like a little child;
 a little child is modest before men, and his heart is apt to be
 possessed with fear and awe amongst them.

The same spirit will dispose a Christian to honor all men;
 1 Pet. ii. 17. "Honor all men." A humble Christian is not
 only disposed to honor the saints in his behaviour; but others
 also, in all those ways that do not imply a visible approbation
 of their sins. Thus Abraham, the great pattern of believers,
 honored the children of Heth; Gen. xxiii. 11, 12. "Abraham
 "stood up, and bowed himself to the people of the land." This
 was a remarkable instance of a humble behaviour towards them
 that were out of Christ, and that Abraham knew to be accur-
 sed: and therefore would by no means suffer his servant to
 take a wife to his son, from among them; and Esau's wives,
 being of these children of Heth, were a grief of mind to Isaac
 and Rebeckah. So Paul honored Festus, Acts xxvi. 25. "I
 "am not mad, most noble Festus." Not only will Christian
 humility dispose persons to honor those wicked men that are
 out of the visible church, but also false brethren and persecutors.
 As Jacob, when he was in an excellent frame, having just been
 wrestling all night with God, and received the blessing, honor-
 ed Esau, his false and persecuting brother; Gen. xxxiii. 3. "Ja-
 "cob bowed himself to the ground seven times, until he came
 "near to his brother Esau." So he called him *lord*; and com-
 manded all his family to honor him in like manner.

Thus I have endeavored to describe the heart and behaviour
 of one that is governed by a truly gracious humility, as exactly
 agreeable to the scriptures, as I am able.

Now, it is out of such a heart as this, that all truly holy affections do flow. Christian affections are like Mary's precious ointment, that she poured on Christ's head, that filled the whole house with a sweet odour. *That* was poured out of an *alabaster-box*; so gracious affections flow out to Christ out of a *pure heart*. *That* was poured out of a *broken box*; until the box was broken, the ointment could not flow, nor diffuse its odour: so gracious affections flow out of a *broken heart*. Gracious affections are also like those of Mary Magdalene, (Luke vii. at the latter end) who also pours precious ointment on Christ, out of an alabaster broken box, anointing therewith the feet of Jesus, when she had washed them with her tears, and wiped them with the hair of her head. All gracious affections, that are a sweet odour to Christ, and that fill the soul of a Christian with an heavenly sweetness and fragrantcy, are broken-hearted affections. A truly Christian love, either to God or men, is a humble broken-hearted love. The desires of the saints, however earnest, are humble desires: their hope is an humble hope; and their joy, even when it is *unspeakable, and full of glory*, is a humble, broken-hearted joy, and leaves the Christian more poor in spirit, and more like a little child, and more disposed to an universal lowliness of behaviour.

VII. Another thing, wherein gracious affections are distinguished from others, is, that *they are attended with a change of nature*.

All gracious affections do arise from a spiritual understanding, in which the soul has the excellency and glory of divine things discovered to it, as was shewn before. But all spiritual discoveries are transforming; and not only make an alteration of the present exercise, sensation and frame of the soul; but such power and efficacy have they, that they make an alteration in the very nature of the soul; 2 Cor. iii. 18. "But we all with open face, beholding as in a glass the glory of the Lord, are changed into the same image, from glory to glory, even as by the Spirit of the Lord." Such power as this is properly divine power, and is peculiar to *the Spirit of the Lord*: other power may make a great alteration in mens present frames and feelings; but it is the power of a Creator only that can change the nature, or give a new nature. And no discoveries or illuminations, but those that are divine and supernatural, will have this supernatural effect. But this effect all those discoveries have, that are truly divine. The soul is deeply affected by these discoveries, and so affected as to be transformed. Thus

Thus it is with those affections that the soul is the subject of in its conversion. The scripture representations of conversion do strongly imply and signify a change of nature: such as *being born again; becoming new creatures; rising from the dead; being renewed in the spirit of the mind; dying to sin, and living to righteousness; putting off the old man, and putting on the new man; a being ingrafted into a new stock; a having a divine seed implanted in the heart; a being made partakers of the divine nature, &c.*

Therefore if there be no great and remarkable abiding change in persons, that think they have experienced a work of conversion, vain are all their imaginations and pretences, however they have been affected.* Conversion (if we may give any credit to the scripture) is a great and universal change of the man, turning him from sin to God. A man may be restrained from sin, before he is converted; but when he is converted, he is not only restrained from sin, his very heart and nature is turned from it unto holiness: so that thenceforward he becomes a holy person, and an enemy to sin. If therefore, after a person's high affections, at his supposed first conversion, it comes to that in a little time, that there is no very sensible, or remarkable alteration in him, as to those bad qualities, and evil habits, which before were visible in him, and he is ordinarily under the prevalence of the same kind of dispositions that he used to be, and the same things seem to belong to his character, he appears as selfish, carnal, as stupid, and perverse, as unchristian, and unfavoury as ever; it is greater evidence against him, than the brightest story of experiences that ever was told, is for him. For in Christ Jesus neither circumcision, nor uncircumcision, neither high profession, nor low profession, neither a fair story, nor a broken one, avails any thing; but a new creature.

If there be a very great alteration visible in a person for a while; if it be not abiding, but he afterwards returns, in a stated manner, to be much as he used to be; it appears to be no change of nature; for nature is an abiding thing. A swine that is of a filthy nature may be washed, but the swinish nature remains;

* "I would not judge of the whole soul's coming to Christ, so much by sudden pangs, as by an inward bent. For the whole soul, in affectionate expressions and actions, may be carried to Christ; but being without this bent, and change of affections, is unsound." *Shepard's Parable*, Part I. p. 203.

remains ; and a dove that is of a cleanly nature may be defiled, but its cleanly nature remains.†

Indeed allowances must be made for the natural temper : conversion does not entirely root out the natural temper : those sins which a man by his natural constitution was most inclined to before his conversion, he may be most apt to fall into still. But yet conversion will make a great alteration even with respect to these sins. Though grace, while imperfect, does not root out an evil natural temper, yet it is of great power and efficacy with respect to it, to correct it. The change that is wrought in conversion, is an universal change : grace changes a man with respect to whatever is sinful in him ; the *old man* is put off, and the *new man* put on ; he is sanctified throughout ; and the man becomes a new creature, old things are passed away, and *all things* are become new ; all sin is mortified, constitution sins, as well as others. If a man before his conversion, was by his natural constitution, especially inclined to lasciviousness, or drunkenness, or maliciousness ; converting grace will make a great alteration in him, with respect to these evil dispositions ; so that however he may be still most in danger of these sins, yet they shall no longer have dominion over him ; nor will they any more be properly his character. Yea, true repentance does in some respects, especially turn a man against his own iniquity, *that* wherein he has been most guilty, and has chiefly dishonoured God. He that forsakes other sins, but saves his leading sin, the iniquity he is chiefly inclined to, is like Saul, when sent against God's enemies the Amalekites, with a strict charge to save none of them alive, but utterly to destroy them, small and great ; who utterly destroyed inferior people, but saved the king, the chief of them all, alive.

Some foolishly make it an argument in favor of their discoveries and affections, that when they are gone, they are left wholly without any life or sense, or any thing beyond what they had before. They think it an evidence that what they experienced was wholly of God, and not of themselves, because (say they) when

† “ It is with the soul, as with water ; all the cold may be gone, but the native principle of cold remains still. You may remove the burning of lusts, not the blackness of nature. Where the power of sin lies, change of conscience from security to terror, change of life from profaneness to civility, and fashions of the world, to escape the pollutions thereof, change of lusts, nay quenching them for a time : but the nature is never changed, in the best hypocrite that ever was.”
Shepard's Parable, Part I. p. 194.

when God is departed, all is gone; they can see and feel nothing, and are no better than they used to be.

It is very true, that all grace and goodness in the hearts of the saints is entirely from God; and they are universally and immediately dependent on him for it. But yet these persons are mistaken, as to the manner of God's communicating himself and his Holy Spirit, in imparting saving grace to the soul. He gives his Spirit to be united to the faculties of the soul, and to dwell there after the manner of a principle of nature; so that the soul, in being endued with grace, is endued with a new nature: but nature is an abiding thing. All the exercises of grace are entirely from Christ: but those exercises are not from Christ, as something that is alive, moves and stirs something that is without life, and yet remains without life; but as having life communicated to it; so as through Christ's power, to have inherent in itself, a vital nature. In the soul where Christ savingly *is*, there he *lives*. He does not only live *without* it, so as violently to actuate it, but he lives *in* it, so that that also is alive. Grace in the soul is as much from Christ, as the light in a glass, held out in the sun-beams, is from the sun. But this represents the manner of the communication of grace to the soul, but in part; because the glass remains as it was, the nature of it not being at all changed, it is as much without any lightfomeness in its nature as ever. But the soul of a saint receives light from the Sun of righteousness, in such a manner, that its nature is changed, and it becomes properly a luminous thing: not only does the sun shine in the saints, but they also become little suns, partaking of the nature of the fountain of their light. In this respect, the manner of their derivation of light, is like that of the lamps in the tabernacle, rather than that of a reflecting glass; which though they were lit up by fire from heaven, yet thereby became themselves burning shining things. The saints do not only drink of the water of life, that flows from the original fountain; but this water becomes a fountain of water in them, springing up there, and flowing out of them, John iv. 14. and chap vii. 38, 39. Grace is compared to a seed implanted, that not only is in the ground, but has hold of it, has root there, and grows there, and is an abiding principle of life and nature there.

As it is with spiritual discoveries and affections given at first conversion, so it is in all illuminations and affections of that kind, that persons are the subjects of afterwards; they are all *transforming*.

transforming. There is a like divine power and energy in them, as in the first discoveries: and they still reach the bottom of the heart, and affect and alter the very nature of the soul, in proportion to the degree in which they are given. And a transformation of nature is continued and carried on by them, to the end of life, until it is brought to perfection in glory. Hence the progress of the work of grace in the hearts of the saints, is represented in scripture, as a continued conversion and renovation of nature. So the apostle exhorts those that were at Rome, *beloved of God, called to be saints*, and that were the subjects of God's redeeming mercies, to be *transformed by the renewing of their mind*, Rom. xii. 1, 2. "I beseech you therefore, by the mercies of God, that ye present your bodies a living sacrifice;—and be not conformed to this world: but be ye transformed by the renewing of your mind." Compared with chap. i. 7. So the apostle writing to the *saints and faithful in Christ Jesus*, that were at Ephesus, (Eph. i. 1.) and those who *were once dead in trespasses and sins*, but were now quickened, and raised up, and made to sit together in heavenly places in Christ, and created in Christ Jesus unto good works, that were once far off, but were now made nigh by the blood of Christ, and that were no more strangers and foreigners, but fellow-citizens with the saints, and of the household of God, and that were built together for an habitation of God through the Spirit; I say, the apostle writing to these, tells them, that he ceased not to pray for them, that God would give them the Spirit of wisdom and revelation, in the knowledge of Christ; the eyes of their understanding being enlightened, that they might know, or experience, what was the exceeding greatness of God's power towards them that believe, according to the working of his mighty power, which he wrought in Christ, when he raised him from the dead, and set him at his own right hand in the heavenly places, Eph. i. 16. to the end. In this the apostle has respect to the glorious power and work of God in converting and renewing the soul; as is most plain by the sequel. So the apostle exhorts the same persons "to put off the old man, which is corrupt according to the deceitful lusts; and be renewed in the spirit of their minds; and put on the new man, which after God is created in righteousness and true holiness." Eph. iv. 22, 23, 24.

There is a sort of high affections that some have from time to time, that leave them without any manner of appearance of an

an abiding effect. They go off suddenly; so that from the very height of their emotion, and seeming rapture, they pass at once to be quite dead, and void of all sense and activity. It surely is not wont to be thus with high gracious affections; † they leave a sweet savour and relish of divine things on the heart, and a stronger bent of soul towards God and holiness. As Moses's face not only shone while he was in the mount, extraordinarily conversing with God, but it continued to shine after he came down from the mount. When men have been conversing with Christ in an extraordinary manner, there is a sensible effect of it remains upon them; there is something remarkable in their disposition and frame, which if we take knowledge of, and trace to its cause, we shall find it is because they have been with Jesus, Acts iv. 13.

VIII. Truly gracious affections differ from those affections that are false and delusive, in that they tend *to*, and are attended *with* the lamb-like, dove-like spirit and temper of Jesus Christ; or in other words, they naturally beget and promote such a spirit of love, meekness, quietness, forgiveness and mercy, as appeared in Christ.

The evidence of this in the scripture is very abundant. If we judge of the nature of Christianity, and the proper spirit of the gospel, by the word of God, this spirit is what may, by way of eminency, be called *the Christian spirit*; and may be looked upon as the true, and distinguishing disposition of the hearts of Christians, as Christians. When some of the disciples of Christ said something, through inconsideration and infirmity, that was not agreeable to such a spirit, Christ told them that "they knew not what manner of spirit they were of," Luke ix. 55. implying, that this spirit that I am speaking of, is the proper spirit of his religion and kingdom. All that are truly godly, and real disciples of Christ, have this spirit in them; and not only so, but they *are of* this spirit; it is the spirit by which they are so possessed and governed, that it is their true and proper character. This is evident by what the wise man says, Prov. xvii. 27. (having respect plainly to such a spirit as this,) "A man of understanding is of an excellent spirit;" and by the particular

† "Do you think the Holy Ghost comes on a man, as on Balaam, by immediate acting, and then leaves him, and then he has nothing?" *Shepard's Parable*, Part I, p. 126.

particular description Christ gives of the qualities and temper of such as are truly blessed, that shall obtain mercy, and are God's children and heirs, Matth. v. "Blessed are the meek: for they shall inherit the earth. Blessed are the merciful: for they shall obtain mercy. Blessed are the peace-makers: for they shall be called the children of God." And that this spirit is the special character of the elect of God, is manifest by Col. iii. 12, 13. "Put on therefore as the elect of God, holy and beloved, bowels of mercies, kindness, humbleness of mind, meekness, long-suffering; forbearing one another, and forgiving one another." And the apostle speaking of that temper and disposition, which he speaks of as the most excellent and essential thing in Christianity, and *that* without which none are true Christians, and the most glorious profession and gifts are nothing, (calling this spirit by the name of charity,) he describes it thus; (1 Cor. xiii. 4, 5.) "Charity suffereth long, and is kind; charity envieth not: charity vaunteth not itself, is not puffed up, doth not behave itself unseemly, seeketh not her own, is not easily provoked, thinketh not evil." And the same apostle, Gal. v. designedly declaring the distinguishing marks and fruits of true Christian grace, chiefly insists on the things that appertain to such a temper and spirit as I am speaking of, vers. 22, 23. "The fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, long-suffering, gentleness, goodness, faith, meekness, temperance." And so does the apostle James, in describing true grace, or *that wisdom that is from above*, with that declared design, that others who are of a contrary spirit may not deceive themselves, and lie against the truth, in professing to be Christians, when they are not, James iii. 14—17. "If ye have bitter envying and strife in your hearts, glory not, and lie not against the truth. This wisdom descendeth not from above, but is earthly, sensual, devilish. For where envying and strife is, there is confusion, and every evil work. But the wisdom that is from above, is first pure, then peaceable, gentle, and easy to be intreated, full of mercy and good fruits."

Every thing that appertains to holiness of heart, does indeed belong to the nature of true Christianity, and the character of Christians; but a spirit of holiness as appearing in some particular graces, may more especially be called the Christian spirit or temper. There are some amiable qualities and virtues, that do more especially agree with the nature of the gospel constitution,

tion, and Christian profession ; because there is a special agreeableness in them, with those divine attributes which God has more remarkably manifested and glorified in the work of redemption by Jesus Christ, that is the grand subject of the Christian revelation ; and also a special agreeableness with those virtues that were so wonderfully exercised by Jesus Christ towards us in that affair, and the blessed example he hath therein set us ; and likewise because they are peculiarly agreeable to the special drift and design of the work of redemption, and the benefits we thereby receive, and the relation that it brings us into, to God and one another. And these virtues are such as humility, meekness, love, forgiveness, and mercy. These things therefore especially belong to the character of Christians, as such.

These things are spoken of as what are especially the character of Jesus Christ himself, the great head of the Christian church. They are so spoken of in the prophecies of the Old Testament ; as in that cited Matth. xxi. 5. " Tell ye the daughter of Sion, Behold, thy King cometh unto thee, meek, and sitting upon an ass, and a colt the foal of an ass." So Christ himself speaks of them, Matth. xi. 29. " Learn of me, for I am meek and lowly in heart." The same appears by the name by which Christ is so often called in scripture, *viz*, THE LAMB. And as these things are especially the character of Christ ; so they are also especially the character of Christians. Christians are Christlike : none deserve the name of Christians, that are not so in their prevailing character. " The new man is renewed, after the image of him that creates him," Col. iii. 10. All true Christians " behold as in a glass the glory of the Lord, and are changed into the same image, by his Spirit," 2 Cor. iii. 18. The elect are all " predestinated to be conformed to the image of the Son of God, that he might be the first-born among many brethren," Rom. viii. 29. " As we have borne the image of the first man, that is earthly, so we must also bear the image of the heavenly : for as is the earthly, such are they also that are earthly ; and as is the heavenly, such are they also that are heavenly," 1 Cor. xv. 47, 48, 49. Christ is full of grace ; and Christians all receive of his fulness, and grace for grace ; *i. e.* there is grace in Christians answering to grace in Christ, such an answerableness as there is between the wax and the seal ; there is character for character : such kind of graces, such a spirit and temper, the

same things that belong to Christ's character, belongs to theirs. That disposition wherein Christ's character does in a special manner consist, therein does his image in a special manner consist. Christians that shine by reflecting the light of the Son of righteousness, do shine with the same sort of brightness, the same mild, sweet and pleasant beams. These lamps of the spiritual temple, that are enkindled by fire from heaven, burn with the same sort of flame. The branch is of the same nature with the stock and root, has the same sap, and bears the same sort of fruit. The members have the same kind of life with the head. It would be strange if Christians should not be of the same temper and spirit that Christ is of; when they are *his flesh and his bone*, yea, are *one spirit*, 1 Cor. vi. 17. and live so, that it is *not they that live, but Christ that lives in them*. A Christian spirit is Christ's mark, that he sets upon the souls of his people; his seal in their foreheads, bearing his image and superscription. Christians are the followers of Christ: and they are so, as they are obedient to that call of Christ, Matth. xi. 28, 29. "Come to me, and learn of me, for I am meek and lowly of heart." They follow him as the Lamb; Rev. xiv. 4. "These are they which follow the Lamb whithersoever he goeth." True Christians are as it were clothed with the meek, quiet, and loving temper of Christ; for *as many as are in Christ, have put on Christ*. And in this respect *the church is clothed with the sun*, not only by being clothed with his imputed righteousness, but also by being adorned with his graces, Rom. xiii. 14. Christ the great Shepherd, is himself a lamb, and believers are also lambs; all the flock are lambs; John xxi. 15, "Feed my lambs." Luke x. 3. "I send you forth as lambs in the midst of wolves." The redemption of the church by Christ from the power of the devil, was typified of old, by David's delivering the *lamb* out of the mouth of the lion and the bear.

That such manner of virtue as has been spoken of, is the very nature of the Christian spirit, or the spirit that worketh in Christ and in his members, and the distinguishing nature of it, is evident by this, that *the dove* is the very symbol or emblem, chosen of God, to represent it. Those things are fittest emblems of other things, which do best represent *that* which is most distinguishing in their nature. The Spirit that descended on Christ, when he was anointed of the Father, descended on him *like a dove*. The dove is a noted emblem of meekness, harmlessness,

harmlessness, peace, and love. But the same Spirit that descended on the head of the church, descends to the members. "God hath sent forth the Spirit of his Son into their hearts," Gal. iv. 6. And "if any man have not the Spirit of Christ, he is none of his," Rom. viii. 9. There is but one Spirit to the whole mystical body, head and members, 1 Cor. vi. 17. Eph. iv. 4. Christ breathes his own Spirit on his disciples, John xx. 22. As Christ was anointed with the Holy Ghost, descending on him like a dove, so Christians also "have an anointing from the holy One," 1 John ii. 20, 27. And they are anointed with the same oil; it is the same *precious ointment on the head, that goes down to the skirts of the garments*. And on both it is a spirit of peace and love: Psal. cxxxiii. 1, 2. "Behold, how good and how pleasant it is, for brethren, to dwell together in unity! It is like the precious ointment upon the head, that ran down upon the beard, even Aaron's beard, that went down to the skirts of his garments." The oil on Aaron's garments, had the same sweet and inimitable odour, with that on his head; the smell of the same sweet spices. Christian affections and a Christian behaviour, is but the flowing out of the favour of Christ's sweet ointments. Because the church has a dove-like temper and disposition, therefore it is said of her that she has doves eyes, Cant. i. 15. "Behold, thou art fair, my love; behold, thou art fair, thou hast doves eyes." And chap. iv. 1. "Behold, thou art fair, my love, behold, thou art fair, thou hast doves eyes within thy locks." The same that is said of Christ, chap. vi. 12. "His eyes are as the eyes of doves." And the church is frequently compared to a dove in scripture, Cant. ii. 14. "O my dove, that art in the clefts of the rock."—Chap. v. 2. "Open to me, my love, my dove." And Chap. vi. 9. "My dove, my undefiled is but one." Psal. lxxviii. 13. "Ye shall be as the wings of a dove covered with silver, and her feathers with yellow gold." And lxxiv. 19. "O deliver not the soul of thy turtle-dove unto the multitude of the wicked." The dove that Noah sent out of the ark, that could find no rest for the sole of her foot, until she returned, was a type of a true saint.

Meekness is so much the character of the saints, that *the meek* and *the godly*, are used as synonymous terms in scripture: so Psal. xxxvii. 10, 11. the wicked and the meek are set in opposition one to another, as wicked and godly, "Yet a little while and the wicked shall not be:—but the meek shall inherit the earth."

So Pſal. cxlvii. 6. "The Lord lifteth up the meek : he caſt-
"eth the wicked down to the ground."

It is doubtleſs very much on this account, that Chriſt re-
presents all his diſciples, all the heirs of heaven, as little chil-
dren, Matth. xix. 14. "Suffer little children to come unto me,
"and forbid them not ; for of ſuch is the kingdom of heaven."
Matth. x. 42. "Whoſoever ſhall give to drink unto one of
"theſe little ones, a cup of cold water, in the name of a diſci-
"ple, verily I ſay unto you, he ſhall in no wiſe loſe his re-
"ward." Matth. xviii. 6. "Whoſo ſhall offend one of theſe
"little ones, &c." verſ. 10. "Take heed that ye deſpiſe not
"one of theſe little ones." Verſ. 14. "It is not the will of
"your Father which is in heaven, that one of theſe little ones
"ſhould periſh." John xiii. 33. "Little children, yet a little
"while I am with you." Little children are innocent and harm-
leſs ; they do not do a great deal of miſchief in the world ;
men need not be afraid of them ; they are no dangerous ſort
of perſons ; their anger does not laſt long, they do not lay up
injuries in high reſentment, entertaining deep and rooted ma-
lice. So Chriſtians, in malice, are children, 1 Cor. xiv. 20.
Little children are not guileful and deceitful, but plain and
ſimple ; they are not verſed in the arts of fiction and deceit ;
and are ſtrangers to artful diſguiſes. They are yieldable and
flexible, and not wilful and obſtinate ; do not truſt to their own
underſtanding, but rely on the inſtructions of parents, and
others of ſuperior underſtanding. Here is therefore a fit and
lively emblem of the followers of the Lamb. Perſons being
thus like little children, is not only a thing highly commenda-
ble, and what Chriſtians approve of, and aim at, and which
ſome of extraordinary proficiency do attain to ; but it is their
univerſal character, and abſolutely neceſſary in order to enter-
ing into the kingdom of heaven ; unleſs Chriſt was miſtaken,
Matth. xviii. 3. "Verily I ſay unto you, Except ye be con-
"verted, and become as little children, ye ſhall not enter into
"the kingdom of heaven." Mark x. 15. "Verily I ſay unto
"you, Whoſoever ſhall not receive the kingdom of God as a
"little child, he ſhall not enter therein."

But here ſome may be ready to ſay, Is there no ſuch thing as
Chriſtian fortitude, and boldneſs for Chriſt, being good ſol-
diers in the Chriſtian warfare, and coming out bold againſt the
enemies of Chriſt and his people ?

To which I answer, there doubtless is such a thing. The whole Christian life is compared to a warfare, and fitly so. And the most eminent Christians are the best soldiers, endued with the greatest degrees of Christian fortitude. And it is the duty of God's people to be stedfast, and vigorous in their opposition to the designs and ways of such as are endeavoring to overthrow the kingdom of Christ, and the interest of religion. But yet many persons seem to be quite mistaken concerning the nature of Christian fortitude. It is an exceeding diverse thing from a brutal fierceness, or the boldness of beasts of prey. True Christian fortitude consists in strength of mind, through grace, exerted in two things; in ruling and suppressing the *evil*, and unruly passions and affections of the mind; and in stedfastly and freely exerting, and following *good* affections and dispositions, without being hindered by sinful fear, or the opposition of enemies. But the passions that are restrained and kept under, in the exercise of this Christian strength and fortitude, are those very passions that are vigorously and violently exerted in a false boldness for Christ. And those affections that are vigorously exerted in true fortitude, are those Christian holy affections, that are directly contrary to them. Though Christian fortitude appears, in withstanding and counteracting the enemies that are without us; yet it much more appears, in resisting and suppressing the enemies that are within us; because they are our worst and strongest enemies, and have greatest advantage against us. The strength of the good soldier of Jesus Christ, appears in nothing more, than in stedfastly maintaining the holy calm, meekness, sweetness, and benevolence of his mind, amidst all the storms, injuries, strange behaviour, and surprising acts and events of this evil and unreasonable world. The scripture seems to intimate that true fortitude consists chiefly in this, Prov. xvi. 32. "He that is slow to anger, is better than the mighty; and he that ruleth his spirit, than he that taketh a city."

The directest and surest way in the world, to make a right judgment, what a holy fortitude is, in fighting with God's enemies, is to look to the Captain of all God's hosts, and our great leader and example, and see wherein his fortitude and valour appeared, in his chief conflict, and in the time of the greatest battle that ever was, or ever will be fought with these enemies, when he fought with them all alone, and of the people there was none with him, and exercised his fortitude in the highest degree that ever he did, and got that glorious victory

that

that will be celebrated in the praises and triumphs of all the hosts of heaven, throughout all eternity; even to Jesus Christ in the time of his last sufferings, when his enemies in earth and hell made their most violent attack upon him, compassing him round on every side, like renting and roaring lions.— Doubtless here we shall see the fortitude of a holy warrior and champion in the cause of God, in its highest perfection and greatest lustre, and an example fit for the soldiers to follow, that fight under this Captain. But how did he show his holy boldness and valour at that time? not in the exercise of any fiery passions; not in fierce and violent speeches, and vehemently declaiming against, and crying out of the intolerable wickedness of opposers, giving them their own in plain terms; but in not opening his mouth when afflicted and oppressed, in going as a lamb to the slaughter, and as a sheep before his shearers, is dumb, not opening his mouth; praying that the Father would forgive his cruel enemies, because they knew not what they did; not shedding others blood, but with all-conquering patience and love, shedding his own. Indeed one of his disciples, that made a forward pretence to *boldness for Christ*, and confidently declared he would sooner die with Christ than deny him, began to lay about him with a sword: but Christ meekly rebukes him, and heals the wound he gives. And never was the patience, meekness, love, and forgiveness of Christ, in so glorious a manifestation, as at that time. Never did he appear so much a *Lamb*, and never did he show so much of the *dove-like* spirit, as at that time. If therefore we see any of the followers of Christ, in the midst of the most violent, unreasonable and wicked opposition of God's and his own enemies, maintaining under all this temptation, the humility, quietness, and gentleness of a lamb, and the harmlessness and love, and sweetness of a dove, we may well judge that here is a good soldier of Jesus Christ.

When persons are fierce and violent, and exert their sharp and bitter passions, it shows weakness, instead of strength and fortitude. 1 Cor. iii. at the beginning, "And I, brethren, could not speak unto you as unto spiritual, but as unto carnal, even as unto babes in Christ.—For ye are yet carnal: for whereas there is among you envying, and strife, and divisions, are ye not carnal, and walk as men?"

There is a pretended boldness for Christ that arises from no better principle than pride. A man may be forward to expose himself

himself to the dislike of the world, and even to provoke their displeasure, out of pride. For it is the nature of spiritual pride to cause men to seek distinction and singularity; and so oftentimes to set themselves at war with those that they call carnal, that they may be more highly exalted among their party. True boldness for Christ is universal, and overcomes all, and carries men above the displeasure of friends and foes; so that they will forsake all rather than Christ; and will rather offend all parties, and be thought meanly of by all, than offend Christ. And that duty which tries whether a man is willing to be despised by them that are of his own party, and thought the least worthy to be regarded by them, is a much more proper trial of his boldness for Christ, than his being forward to expose himself to the reproach of opposers. The apostle sought not glory, not only of Heathens and Jews, but of Christians; as he declares, 1 Thess. ii. 6.* He is bold for Christ, that has Christian fortitude enough, to confess his fault openly, when he has committed one that requires it, and as it were to come down upon his knees before opposers. Such things as these are a vastly greater evidence of holy boldness, than resolutely and fiercely confronting opposers.

As some are much mistaken concerning the nature of true *boldness* for Christ, so they are concerning *Christian zeal*. It is indeed a flame, but a sweet one; or rather it is the heat and fervour of a sweet flame. For the flame of which it is the heat, is no other than that of divine love, or Christian charity; which is the sweetest and most benevolent thing that is, or can be, in the heart of man or angel. Zeal is the fervour of this flame, as it ardently and vigorously goes out towards the good that is its object, in desires of it, and pursuit after it; and so consequentially, in opposition to the evil that is contrary to it, and impedes it. There is indeed opposition, and vigorous opposition, that is a part of it, or rather is an attendant of it; but it is against *things*, and not *persons*. Bitterness against the *persons* of men is no part of it, but is very contrary to it; insomuch that so much the warmer true zeal is, and the higher it is raised, so much the further are persons from such bitterness, and so much fuller

* Mr. Shepard, speaking of hypocrites affecting applause, says, "Hence men forsake their friends, and trample under foot the scorns of the world they have credit elsewhere. To maintain their interest in the love of godly men, they will suffer much." *Parable of the ten virgins*, P. I. p. 180.

fuller of love, both to the evil and to the good. As appears from what has been just now observed, that it is no other, in its very nature and essence, than the fervour of a spirit of Christian love. And as to what opposition there is in it, to *things*, it is firstly and chiefly against the *evil things* in the person himself, who has this zeal; against the enemies of God and holiness, that are in his own heart; (as these are most in his view, and what he is most to do with;) and but secondarily against the sins of others. And therefore there is nothing in a true Christian zeal, that is contrary to that spirit of meekness, gentleness, and love, that spirit of a little child, a lamb and dove, that has been spoken of; but it is entirely agreeable to it, and tends to promote it.

But to say something particularly concerning this Christian spirit I have been speaking of, as exercised in these three things, *forgiveness, love, and mercy*; I would observe that the scripture is very clear and express concerning the absolute necessity of each of these, as belonging to the temper and character of every Christian.

It is so as to a *forgiving spirit*, or a disposition to overlook and forgive injuries. Christ gives it to us both as a negative and positive evidence; and is express in teaching us, that if we are of such a spirit, it is a sign we are in a state of forgiveness and favor ourselves; and that if we are not of such a spirit, we are not forgiven of God; and seems to take special care that we should take good notice of it, and always bear it on our minds. Matt. vi. 12, 14, 15. "Forgive us our debts, as we forgive our debtors.—For, if ye forgive men their trespasses, your heavenly Father will also forgive you. But if ye forgive not men their trespasses, neither will your Father forgive your trespasses." Christ expresses the same again at another time, Mark xi. 25, 26. and again in Matt. xviii. 22. to the end, in the parable of the servant that owed his lord ten thousand talents, that would not forgive his fellow servant an hundred pence; and therefore was delivered to the tormentors. In the application of the parable Christ says, vers. 35. "So likewise shall my heavenly Father do, if ye from your hearts forgive not every one his brother their trespasses."

And that all true saints are of a *loving*, benevolent and beneficent temper, the scripture is very plain and abundant. Without it the apostle tells us, though we should speak with the tongues of men and angels, we are as a sounding brass, or
a tinkling

a tinkling cymbal: and that though we have the gift of prophecy, and understand all mysteries, and all knowledge; yet without this spirit we are nothing. And there is no one virtue or disposition of the mind, that is so often, and so expressly, insisted on, in the marks that are laid down in the New Testament, whereby to know true Christians. It is often given as a sign that is peculiarly distinguishing, by which all may know Christ's disciples, and by which they may know themselves; and is often laid down, both as a negative and positive evidence. Christ calls the law of love, by way of eminency, *his commandment*, John xiii. 34. "A new commandment I give unto you, that ye love one another; as I have loved you, that ye also love one another." And chap. xv. 12. "This is my commandment, That ye love one another, as I have loved you." And vers. 17. "These things I command you, that ye love one another." And says, chap. xiii. 35. "By this shall all men know that ye are my disciples, if ye have love one to another." And chap. xiv. 21. (still with a special reference to this which he calls *his commandment*,) "He that hath my commandments, and keepeth them, he it is that loveth me." The beloved disciple, who had so much of this sweet temper himself, abundantly insists on it, in his epistles. There is none of the apostles, is so much in laying down express signs of grace, for professors to try themselves by, as he; and in his signs, he insists scarcely on any thing else, but a spirit of Christian love, and an agreeable practice; 1 John ii. 9, 10. "He that saith he is in the light, and hateth his brother, is in darkness even until now. He that loveth his brother abideth in the light, and there is none occasion of stumbling in him." Chap. iii. 14. "We know that we are passed from death unto life, because we love the brethren: he that loveth not his brother, abideth in death." vers. 18, 19. "My little children, let us not love in word and in tongue, but in deed, and in truth. And hereby we know that we are of the truth, and shall assure our hearts before him." vers. 23, 24. "This is his commandment, that we should love one another. And he that keepeth his commandments, dwelleth in him, and he in him: and hereby we know that he abideth in us, by the Spirit which he hath given us." Chap. iv. 7, 8. "Beloved, let us love one another: for love is of God; and every one that loveth, is born of God, and knoweth God. He that loveth not, knoweth not God; for God is love." vers. 12, 13. "No man hath seen God at any time. If we love one another,

“ God dwelleth in us, and his love is perfected in us. Hereby
 “ know we that we dwell in him, because he hath given us of his
 “ Spirit.” vers. 16. “ God is love; and he that dwelleth in
 “ love, dwelleth in God, and God in him.” vers. 20. “ If a
 “ man say, I love God, and hateth his brother, he is a liar: for
 “ he that loveth not his brother whom he hath seen, how can he
 “ love God whom he hath not seen?”

And the scripture is as plain as it is possible it should be,
 that none are true saints, but those whose true character it is,
 that they are of a disposition to *pity* and *relieve* their fellow-
 creatures, that are poor, indigent, and afflicted; Psal. xxxvii.
 21. “ The righteous sheweth mercy, and giveth.” vers. 26.
 “ He is ever merciful, and lendeth.” Psal. cxii. 5. “ A good
 “ man sheweth favour, and lendeth.” vers. 9. “ He hath dis-
 “ persed abroad, and given to the poor.” Prov. xiv. 31. “ He
 “ that honoureth God, hath mercy on the poor.” Prov. xxi
 26. “ The righteous giveth, and spareth not.” Jer. xxii. 16.
 “ He judged the cause of the poor and needy, then it was well
 “ with him: was not this to know me? saith the Lord.” Jam. i. 27.
 “ Pure religion and undefiled before God and the Father, is this,
 “ To visit the fatherless and widows in their affliction,” Ec.
 Hof. vi. 6. “ For I desired mercy, and not sacrifice; and the
 “ knowlege of God, more than burnt-offerings.” Matth. v. 7.
 “ Blessed are the merciful: for they shall obtain mercy.”
 2 Cor viii. 8. “ I speak not by commandment, but by occa-
 “ sion of the forwardness of others, and to prove the sincerity
 “ of your love.” Jam. ii. 13—16. “ For he shall have judg-
 “ ment without mercy, that hath shewed no mercy.—What
 “ doth it profit, my brethren, though a man say he hath faith,
 “ and have not works? can faith save him? If a brother or
 “ sister be naked, and destitute of daily food; and one of you
 “ say unto them, Depart in peace, be you warmed and filled:
 “ notwithstanding ye give them not those things which are
 “ needful to the body; what doth it profit?” 1 John iii. 17.
 “ Whoso hath this world’s good, and seeth his brother have
 “ need, and shutteth up his bowels of compassion from him,
 “ how dwelleth the love of God in him?” Christ in that des-
 cription he gives us of the day of judgment, Matth. xxv.
 (which is the most particular that we have in all the Bible,)
 represents, that judgment will be passed at that day, according
 as men have been found to have been of a merciful spirit and
 practice, or otherwise. Christ’s design in giving such a descrip-
 tion

tion of the process of that day, is plainly to possess all his followers with that apprehension, that unless this was their spirit and practice, there was no hope of their being accepted and owned by him, at that day. Therefore this is an apprehension that we ought to be possessed with. We find in scripture, that a *righteous man*, and a *merciful man* are synonymous expressions; Is. lvii. 1. "The *righteous* perisheth, and no man layeth it to heart; and *merciful men* are taken away, none considering that the *righteous* is taken away from the evil to come."

Thus we see how full, clear, and abundant, the evidence from scripture is, that those who are truly gracious, are under the government of that lamb-like, dove-like Spirit of Jesus Christ, and that this is essentially and eminently the nature of the saving grace of the gospel, and the proper spirit of true Christianity. We may therefore undoubtedly determine, that all truly Christian affections are attended with such a spirit; and that this is the natural tendency of the fear and hope, the sorrow and the joy, the confidence and the zeal of true Christians.

None will understand me, that true Christians have no remains of a contrary spirit, and can never, in any instances, be guilty of a behaviour disagreeable to such a spirit. But this I affirm, and shall affirm, until I deny the Bible to be any thing worth, that every thing in Christians that belongs to true Christianity, is of this tendency, and works this way; and that there is no true Christian upon earth, but is so under the prevailing power of such a spirit, that he is properly denominated from it, and it is truly and justly his character: and that therefore ministers, and others, have no warrant from Christ to encourage persons, that are of a contrary character and behaviour, to think they are converted, because they tell a fair story of illuminations and discoveries. In so doing, they would set up their own wisdom against Christ's, and judge without, and against that rule by which Christ has declared all men should know his disciples. Some persons place religion so much in certain transient illuminations and impressions, (especially if they are in such a particular method and order,) and so little in the spirit and temper persons are of, that they greatly deform religion, and form notions of Christianity quite different from what it is, as delineated in the scriptures. The scripture knows

of no such true Christians, as are of a fordid, selfish, cross and contentious spirit. Nothing can be invented that is a greater absurdity, than a morose, hard, close, high-spirited, spiteful, true Christian. We must learn the way of bringing men to rules, and not rules to men, and so strain and stretch the rules of God's word, to take in ourselves, and some of our neighbours, until we make them wholly of none effect.

It is true, that allowances must be made for mens natural temper, with regard to these things, as well as others; but not such allowances, as to allow men, that once were wolves and serpents, to be now converted, without any remarkable change in the spirit of their mind. The change made by true conversion, is wont to be most remarkable and sensible, with respect to that which before was the wickedness the person was most notoriously guilty of. Grace has as great a tendency to restrain and mortify such sins, as are contrary to the spirit that has been spoken of, as it has to mortify drunkenness or lasciviousness. Yea, the scripture represents the change wrought by gospel-grace, as especially appearing in an alteration of the former sort; Is. xi. 6—9. "The wolf shall dwell with the lamb, and the leopard shall lie down with the kid: and the calf, and the young lion, and the fatling together, and a little child shall lead them. And the cow and the bear shall feed, their young ones shall lie down together; and the lion shall eat straw like the ox. And the sucking child shall play on the hole of the asp, and the weaned child shall put his hand on the cockatrice-den. They shall not hurt nor destroy in all my holy mountain; for the earth shall be full of the knowledge of the Lord, as the waters cover the sea." And to the same purpose is Is. lxxv. 25. Accordingly we find, that in the primitive times of the Christian church, converts were remarkably changed in this respect; Tit. iii. 3, &c. "For we ourselves also were sometimes foolish, disobedient, deceived, serving divers lusts and pleasures, living in malice and envy, hateful, and hating one another. But after that the kindness and love of God our Saviour toward man appeared,— he saved us by the washing of regeneration, and renewing of the Holy Ghost." And Col. iii. 7, 8. "In the which ye also walked some time, when ye lived in them. But now you also put off all these; anger, wrath, malice, blasphemy, filthy communication out of your mouth."

IX. Gracious affections soften the heart, and are attended and followed with a Christian tenderness of spirit.

False affections, however persons may seem to be melted by them while they are new, yet have a tendency in the end to harden the heart. A disposition to some kind of passions may be established; such as imply self-seeking, self-exaltation, and opposition to others. But false affections with the delusion that attends them, finally tend to stupify the mind, and shut it up against those affections wherein tenderness of heart consists: and the effect of them at last is, that persons in the settled frame of their minds, become less affected with their present and past sins, and less conscientious with respect to future sins, less moved with the warnings and cautions of God's word; or God's chastisements in his providence, more careless of the frame of their hearts, and the manner and tendency of their behaviour, less quick-sighted to discern what is sinful, less afraid of the appearance of evil, than they were while they were under legal awakenings and fears of hell. Now they have been the subjects of such and such impressions and affections, and have a high opinion of themselves, and look on their state to be safe; they can be much more easy than before, in living in the neglect of duties that are troublesome and inconvenient; and are much more slow and partial in complying with difficult commands; are in no measure so alarmed at the appearance of their own defects and transgressions; are emboldened to favor themselves more, with respect to the labour, and painful care and exactness in their walk, and more easily yield to temptations, and the solicitations of their lusts; and have far less care of their behaviour, when they come into the holy presence of God, in the time of public or private worship. Formerly it may be, under legal convictions, they took much pains in religion, and denied themselves in many things: but now they think themselves out of danger of hell, they very much put off the burden of the cross, and save themselves the trouble of difficult duties, and allow themselves more of the comfort of the enjoyment of their ease and their lusts.

Such persons as these, instead of embracing Christ as their *Saviour from sin*, they trust in him as the *saviour of their sins*: instead of flying to him as their refuge *from their spiritual enemies*, they make use of him as the defence of their *spiritual enemies, from God*, and to strengthen them against him. They
make

make Christ the minister of sin, and great officer and vicegerent of the devil, to strengthen his interest, and make him above all things in the world strong against JEHOVAH; so that they may sin against him with good courage, and without any fear, being effectually secured from restraints by his most solemn warnings and most awful threatenings. They trust in Christ to preserve to them the quiet enjoyment of their sins, and to be their shield to defend them from God's displeasure; while they come close to him, even to his bosom, the place of his children, to fight against him, with their mortal weapons, hid under their skirts.* However, some of these, at the same time

* "These are hypocrites that believe, but fail in regard of the use of the gospel, and of the Lord Jesus. And these we read of, Jude 3. viz. of some men *that did turn grace into wantonness*. For therein appears the exceeding evil of a man's heart, that not only the law, but also the glorious gospel of the Lord Jesus, works in him all manner of unrighteousness. And it is too common for men at the first work of conversion, Oh then to cry for grace and Christ, and afterwards grow licentious, live and lie in the breach of the law, and take their warrant for their course from the gospel," *Shepard's Parable*, Part I. p. 126.

Again, p. 232. Mr. Shepard speaks of such hypocrites as those, "who, like strange eggs, being put into the same nest, where honest men have lived, they have been hatched up; and when they are young, keep their nest, and live by crying and opening their mouths wide after the Lord, and the food of his word; but when their wings are grown, and they have got some affections, some knowledge, some hope of mercy, are hardened thereby to fly from God." And adds, "Can that man be good, whom God's grace makes worse?"

Again, Part II. p. 167. "When men fly to Christ in times of peace, that so they may preserve their sins with greater peace of conscience; so that sin makes them fly to Christ, as well as misery; not that they may destroy and abolish sin, but that they may be preserved in their sins with peace; then men may be said to apprehend Christ only by a seeming faith.—Many an heart secretly saith this, If I can have my sin, and peace, and conscience quiet for the present, and God merciful to pardon it afterward; hence he doth rely (as he saith) only on the mercy of God in Christ: and now this hardens and blinds him, and makes him secure, and his faith is sermon proof, nothing stirs him.—And were it not for their faith they should despair, but this keeps them up. And now they think if they have any trouble of mind, the devil troubles them; and so make Christ and faith protectors of sin, not purifiers from sin; which is most dreadful; turning grace to wantonness, as they did sacrifice. So these would

time, make a great profession of love to God, and assurance of his favour, and great joy in tasting the sweetness of his love.

After this manner *they* trusted in Christ, that the apostle Jude speaks of, who *crept in* among the saints *unknown*; but were really “ungodly men, turning the grace of God into lasciviousness,” Jude 4. These are they that trust in their being righteous; and because God has promised that *the righteous shall surely live*, or certainly be saved, are therefore emboldened to *commit iniquity*, whom God threatens in Ezek. xxxiii. 13. “When I shall say to the righteous, that he shall surely live: if he trust to his own righteousness, and commit iniquity; all his righteousness shall not be remembered, but for his iniquity that he hath committed, he shall die for it.”

Gracious affections are of a quite contrary tendency; they turn a heart of stone more and more into a heart of flesh. An holy love and hope are principles that are vastly more efficacious upon the heart, to make it tender, and to fill it with a dread of sin, or whatever might displease and offend God, and to engage it to watchfulness, and care, and strictness, than a slavish fear of hell. Gracious affections, as was observed before, flow out of a contrite heart, or (as the word signifies) a bruised heart, bruised and broken with godly sorrow; which makes the heart tender, as bruised flesh is tender, and easily hurt. Godly sorrow has much greater influence to make the heart tender, than mere legal sorrow from selfish principles.

The tenderness of the heart of a true Christian, is elegantly signified by our Saviour, in his comparing such a one to a little child. The flesh of a little child is very tender: so is the heart of one that is new-born. This is represented in what we are told of Naaman's cure of his leprosy, by his washing in Jordan, by the direction of the prophet; which was undoubtedly a type
of

sin under the shadow of Christ, because the shadow is good and sweet, Mic. iii. 11. They had subtle fly ends in good duties; for therein may lie a man's sin: yet they lean upon the Lord.—When money-changers came into the temple. *You have made it a den of thieves.* Thieves when hunted fly to their den or cave, and there they are secure against all searchers, and hue-and-cries: so here. But Christ whipped them out. So when men are pursued with cries and fears of conscience, away to Christ they go as to their den: not as saints, to pray and lament out the life of their sin there: but to preserve their sin. This is vile; will the Lord receive such?”

of the renewing of the soul, by washing in the laver of regeneration. We are told, 2 Kings v. 14. that "he went down, and dipped himself seven times in Jordan, according to the saying of the man of God; and his flesh came again like unto the flesh of a little child." Not only is the flesh of a little child tender, but his mind is tender. A little child has his heart easily moved, wrought upon and bowed: so is a Christian in spiritual things. A little child is apt to be affected with sympathy, to weep with them that weep, and cannot well bear to see others in distress: so it is with a Christian; John xi. 35. Rom. xii. 15. 1 Cor. xii. 26. A little child is easily won by kindness: so is a Christian. A little child is easily affected with grief at temporal evils, and has his heart melted, and falls a-weeping: thus tender is the heart of a Christian, with regard to the evil of sin. A little child is easily affrighted at the appearance of outward evils, or any thing that threatens its hurt: so is a Christian apt to be alarmed at the appearance of moral evil, and any thing that threatens the hurt of the soul. A little child, when it meets enemies, or fierce beasts, is not apt to trust its own strength, but flies to its parents for refuge: so a saint is not self-confident in engaging spiritual enemies, but flies to Christ. A little child is apt to be suspicious of evil in places of danger, afraid in the dark, afraid when left alone, or far from home: so is a saint apt to be sensible of his spiritual dangers, jealous of himself, full of fear when he cannot see his way plain before him, afraid to be left alone, and to be at a distance from God; Prov. xxviii. 14. "Happy is the man that feareth alway: but he that hardeneth his heart, shall fall into mischief." A little child is apt to be afraid of superiors, and to dread their anger, and tremble at their frowns and threatenings: so is a true saint with respect to God; Psal. cxix. 120. "My flesh trembleth for fear of thee and I am afraid of thy judgments." Is. lxvi. 2. "To this man will I look, even to him that is poor, and trembleth at my word." vers. 5. "Hear ye the word of the Lord, ye that tremble at his word." Ezra. ix. 4. "Then were assembled unto me every one that trembled at the words of the God of Israel." chap. x. 3. "According to the counsel of my lord, and of those that tremble at the commandment of our God." A little child approaches superiors with awe: so do the saints approach God with holy awe and reverence; Job xiii. 11. "Shall not his excellency make you afraid? and his
" dread

“dread fall upon you?” Holy fear is so much the nature of true godliness, that it is called in scripture by no other name more frequently, than the *fear of God*.

Hence gracious affections do not tend to make men bold, forward, noisy and boisterous; but rather to *speak, trembling*; Hof. xiii. 1. “When Ephraim spake, trembling, he exalted himself in Israel; but when he offended in Baal, he died;” and to clothe with a kind of holy fear in all their behaviour towards God and man; agreeable to Plal. ii. 11. 1 Pet. iii. 15. 2 Cor. vii. 15. Eph. vi. 5. 1 Pet. iii. 2. Rom. xi. 20.

But here some may object and say, Is there no such thing as a holy boldness in prayer, and the duties of divine worship? I answer, there is doubtless such a thing; and it is chiefly to be found in eminent saints, persons of great degrees of faith and love. But this holy boldness is not in the least opposite to *reverence*; though it be to *disunion* and *servility*. It abolishes or lessens that disposition which arises from *moral distance* or *alienation*; and also *distance of relation*, as that of a slave: but not at all, that which becomes the *natural distance*, whereby we are infinitely inferior. No boldness in poor sinful worms of the dust, that have a right sight of God and themselves, will prompt them to approach to God with less fear and reverence, than spotless and glorious angels in heaven, who cover their faces before his throne, Is. vi. at the beginning. Rebecca, (who in her marriage with Isaac, in almost all its circumstances, was manifestly a great type of the church, the spouse of Christ,) when she meets Isaac, lights off from her camel, and takes a vail, and covers herself; although she was brought to him as his bride, to be with him, in the nearest relation, and most intimate union, that mankind are ever united one to another in.* Elijah, that great prophet, who had so much holy familiarity with God, at a time of special nearness to God, even when he conversed with him in the mount, wrapped his face in his mantle. Which was not because he was terrified with any servile fear, by the terrible *wind*, and *earthquake*, and *fire*; but after these were all over, and God spake to him as a friend, *in a still small voice*: 1 Kings xix. 12, 13. “And after the fire, a still small voice; and it was so, when Elijah heard it, he wrapped his face in his mantle.” And

D d d

Moses,

* Dr. Ames, in his Cases of conscience, Book III. chap. iv. speaks of an holy modesty in the worship of God, as one sign of true humility.

Moses, with whom God spake face to face, as a man speaks with his friend, and was distinguished from all the prophets, in the familiarity with God that he was admitted to; at a time when he was brought nearest of all, when God shewed him his glory in that same mount, where he afterwards spake to Elijah, "He made haste, and bowed his head towards the earth, and worshipped," Exod. xxxiv. 8. There is in some persons, a most unsuitable and unsufferable boldness, in their addresses to the great JEHOVAH, in an affection of an holy boldness, and ostentation of eminent nearness and familiarity; the very thoughts of which would make them shrink into nothing, with horror and confusion, if they saw the distance that is between God and them. They are like the Pharisee, that boldly came up near, in a confidence of his own eminency in holiness.—Whereas if they saw their vileness, they would be more like the publican, that *stood afar off, and durst not so much as lift up his eyes to heaven; but smote upon his breast, saying, God be merciful to me a sinner.* It becomes such sinful creatures, as we, to approach a holy God (although with faith, and without terror, yet) with contrition, and penitent shame and confusion of face. It is foretold that this should be the disposition of the church, in the time of her highest privileges on earth, in her latter day of glory, when God should remarkably comfort her, by revealing his covenant-mercy to her; Ezek. xvi. 60. to the end. "I will establish unto thee an everlasting covenant. Then thou shalt remember thy ways, and be ashamed. And I will establish my covenant with thee, and thou shalt know that I am the Lord: that thou mayst remember and be confounded, and never open thy mouth any more because of thy shame, when I am pacified toward thee for all that thou hast done, saith the Lord God." The woman that we read of in the viith chapter of Luke, that was an eminent saint, and had much of that true love which casts out fear, by Christ's own testimony, vers. 47. she approached Christ in an amiable and acceptable manner, when she came with that humble modesty, reverence and shame, when she stood at his feet, weeping *behind him*, as not being fit to appear before his face, and washed his feet with her tears.

One reason why gracious affections are attended with this tenderness of spirit which has been spoken of, is, that true grace tends to promote convictions of conscience. Persons are wont to have convictions of conscience before they have any grace:
and

and if afterwards they are truly converted, and have true repentance, and joy, and peace in believing; this has a tendency to put an end to *terrors*, but has no tendency to put an end to *convictions of sin*, but to increase them. It does not stupify a man's conscience; but makes it more sensible, more easily and thoroughly discerning the sinfulness of that which is sinful, and receiving a greater conviction of the heinous and dreadful nature of sin, susceptible of a quicker and deeper sense of it, and more convinced of his own sinfulness, and wickedness of his heart; and consequently it has a tendency to make him more jealous of his heart. Grace tends to give the soul a further and better *conviction* of the same things concerning sin, that it was *convinced* of under a legal work of the Spirit of God; *viz.* its great contrariety in the will and law, and honour of God, the greatness of God's hatred to it, and displeasure against it, and the dreadful punishment it exposes to and deserve. And not only so, but it *convince*s the soul of something further concerning sin, that it saw nothing of, while only under legal *convictions*; and that is the infinitely hateful nature of sin, and its dreadfulness upon that account. And this makes the heart tender with respect to sin; like David's heart, that smote him, when he had cut off Saul's skirt. The heart of a true penitent is like a burnt child, that dreads the fire. Whereas on the contrary, he that has had a counterfeit repentance, and false comforts and joys, is like iron that has been suddenly heat and quenched; it becomes much harder than before. A false conversion puts an end to convictions of conscience; and so either takes away, or much diminishes that conscientiousness, which was manifested under a work of the law.

All gracious affections have a tendency to promote this Christian tenderness of heart, that has been spoken of: not only a godly sorrow; but also a gracious joy: Psal. ii. 11. "Serve the Lord with fear, and rejoice with trembling." As also a gracious hope; Psal. xxxiii. 18. "Behold, the eye of the Lord is upon them that fear him; upon them that hope in his mercy." And Psal. cxlviii. 11. "The Lord taketh pleasure in them that fear him, in those that hope in his mercy." Yea, the most confident and assured hope, that is truly gracious, has this tendency. The higher an holy hope is raised, the more there is of this Christian tenderness. The banishing of a servile fear, by a holy assurance, is attended with a proportionable increase of a reverential fear. The diminishing of the

fear of the fruits of God's displeasure in future punishment, is attended with a proportionable increase of fear of his displeasure itself; the diminishing of the fear of hell, with an increase of the fear of sin. The vanishing of jealousies of the person's state, is attended with a proportionable increase of jealousy of his heart, in a distrust of its strength, wisdom, stability, faithfulness, &c. The less apt he is to be afraid of natural evil, having *his heart fixed trusting in God*, and so *not afraid of evil tidings*; the more apt is he to be alarmed with the appearance of moral evil, or the evil of sin. As he has more holy boldness, so he has less of self-confidence, and a forward assuming boldness, and more modesty. As he is more sure than others of deliverance from hell, so he has more of a sense of the desert of it. He is less apt than others to be shaken in faith; but more apt than others to be moved with solemn warnings, and with God's frowns, and with the calamities of others. He has the firmest comfort, but the softest heart: richer than others, but poorest of all in Spirit: the tallest and strongest saint, but the least and tenderest child among them.

X. Another thing wherein those affections that are truly gracious and holy, differ from those that are false, is *beautiful symmetry and proportion*.

Not that the symmetry of their virtues, and gracious affections of the saints, in this life, is perfect: it oftentimes is in many things defective, through the imperfection of grace, for want of proper instructions, through errors in judgment, or some particular unhappiness of natural temper, or defects in education, and many other disadvantages that might be mentioned. But yet there is, in no wise, that monstrous disproportion in gracious affections, and the various parts of true religion in the saints, that is very commonly to be observed, in the false religion, and counterfeit graces of hypocrites.

In the truly holy affections of the saints is found that proportion, which is the natural consequence of the universality of their sanctification. They have the whole image of Christ upon them: they have *put off the old man*, and have *put on the new man* entire in all his parts and members. *It hath pleased the Father that in Christ all fulness should dwell*: there is in him every grace; *he is full of grace and truth*: and they that are Christ's, do *of his fulness receive, and grace for grace*; (John i. 14, 16.) *i. e.* there is every grace in them, which is

in Christ: *grace for grace*; that is, grace answerable to grace: there is no grace in Christ, but there is its image in believers to answer it: the image is a true image: and there is something of the same beautiful proportion in the image, which is in the original; there is feature for feature, and member for member. There is symmetry and beauty in God's workmanship. The natural body, which God hath made, consists of many members; and all are in a beautiful proportion: so it is in the new man, consisting of various graces and affections. The body of one that was born a perfect child, may fail of exact proportion through distemper, and the weakness and wounds of some of its members; yet the disproportion is in no measure like that of those that are born monsters.

It is with hypocrites, as it was with Ephraim of old, at a time when God greatly complains of their hypocrisy; Hos. vii. "Ephraim is a cake not turned," half roasted and half raw: there is commonly no manner of uniformity in their affections.

There is in many of them a great partiality, with regard to the several kinds of religious affections; great affections in some things, and no manner of proportion in others. An holy hope and holy fear go together in the saints, as has been observed from Psalm. xxxiii. 18. and cxlvii. 11. But in some of these is the most confident hope, while they are void of reverence, self-jealousy and caution, and to a great degree cast off fear. In the saints, joy and holy fear go together, though the joy be never so great: as it was with the disciples, in that joyful morning of Christ's resurrection, Matt. xxviii. 8. "And they departed quickly from the sepulchre, with fear and GREAT joy.*" But many of these rejoice without trembling: their joy is of that sort, that is truly opposite to godly fear.

But particularly, one great difference between saints and hypocrites is this, that the joy and comfort of the former is attended with godly sorrow and mourning for sin. They have not only sorrow to prepare them for their first comfort, but after they are comforted, and their joy established. As it is foretold of the church of God, that they should mourn and loath themselves

* "Renewed care and diligence follows the sealings of the Spirit. Now is the soul at the foot of Christ, as Mary was at the sepulchre, *with fear and great joy*. He that travels the road with a rich treasure about him, is afraid of a thief in every bush." *Flavel's Sacramental Meditations*, Med. 4.

themselves for their sins, after they were returned from the captivity, and were settled in the land of Canaan, the land of rest, and the land that flows with milk and honey, Ezek. xx. 42, 43. "And ye shall know that I am the Lord, when I shall bring you into the land of Israel, into the country for the which I lifted up mine hand to give it to your fathers. And there shall ye remember your ways, and all your doings, wherein ye have been defiled, and ye shall loath yourselves in your own sight, for all your evils that ye have committed." As also in Ezek. xvi. 61, 62, 63. A true saint is like a little child in this respect; he never had any godly sorrow before he was born again; but since has it often in exercise: as a little child, before it is born, and while it remains in darkness, never cries; but as soon as ever it sees the light, it begins to cry; and thenceforward is often crying. Although Christ hath borne our griefs, and carried our sorrows, so that we are freed from the *sorrow of punishment*, and may now sweetly feed upon the comforts Christ hath purchased for us; yet that hinders not but that our feeding on these comforts should be attended with the *sorrow of repentance*. As of old, the children of Israel were commanded, ever more to feed upon the paschal lamb, with bitter herbs.* True saints are spoken of in scripture, not only

* "If repentance accompanies faith, it is no presumption to believe. Many know the sin, and hence believe in Christ, trust in Christ, and there is an end of their faith. But what confession and sorrow for sin? what more love to Christ follows this faith? Truly none. Nay, their faith is the cause why they have none. For they think, if I trust in Christ to forgive me, he will do it; and there is an end of the business. Verily this hedge-faith, this bramble-faith, that catches hold on Christ, and pricks and scratches Christ, by more impenitency, more contempt of him, is mere presumption; which shall one day be burnt up and destroyed by the fire of God's jealousy. Fly upon that faith, that serves only to keep a man from being tormented before his time! Your sins would be your sorrows, but that your faith quiets you. But if faith be accompanied with repentance, mourning for sin, more esteem of God's grace in Christ; so that nothing breaks thy heart more than the thoughts of Christ's unchangeable love to one so vile, and this love makes thee love much, and love him the more; as thy sin increaseth, so thou desirest thy love's increase; and now the stream of thy thoughts run, how thou mayst live to him that died for thee: this was Mary's faith, who sat at Christ's feet weeping, washing them with her tears, and loving much, because much was forgiven." *Shepard's Sound Believer*, p. 128, 129.

"You

only as those that have mourned for sin, but as those do mourn whose manner it is still to mourn; Matt. v. 4. "Blessed are they that mourn: for they shall be comforted."

Not only is there often in hypocrites, an essential deficiency, as to the various kinds of religious affections; but also a strange partiality and disproportion, in the same affections, with regard to different objects.

Thus as to the affection of *love*, some make high pretences, and a great shew of love to God and Christ, and it may be have been greatly affected with what they have heard or thought concerning them; but they have not a spirit of love and benevolence towards men, but are disposed to contention, envy, revenge, and evil-speaking; and will, it may be, suffer an old grudge to rest in their bosoms towards a neighbour, for seven years together, if not twice seven years; living in real ill-will and bitterness of spirit towards him: and it may be in their dealings with their neighbours, are not very strict and conscientious in observing the rule of *doing to others, as they would that they should do to them*: 1 John iv. 20. "If a man say, I love God, and hateth his brother, he is a liar: for he that loveth not his brother whom he hath seen, how can he love God whom he hath not seen?" And on the other hand, there are others, that appear as if they had a great deal of benevolence to men, are very good-natured and generous in their way; but have no love to God. And

"You shall know godly sorrow (says Dr. Preston, in his discourse on Paul's conversion) by the continuance of it; it is constant: but worldly sorrow is but a passion of the mind; it changes, it lasts not. Though for the present it may be violent and strong, and work much outwardly; yet it comes but by fits, and continues not: like a land-flood, which violently, for the present, overflows the banks; but it will away again; it is not always thus. But godly sorrow is like a spring, that still keeps his running both winter and summer, wet and dry, in heat and cold, early and late. So this godly sorrow is the same in a regenerate man still; take him when you will, he is still sorrowing for sin. This godly sorrow stands like the centre of the earth, which removes not, but still remains."

"I am persuaded, many a man's heart is kept from breaking and mourning, because of this. He saith (it may be) that he is a vile sinner; but I trust in Christ, &c. If they do go to Christ to destroy their sin, this makes them more secure in their sin. For (say they) I cannot help it, and Christ must do all. Whereas faith makes the soul mourn after the Lord the more." *Shepard's Parable of the ten Virgins*, Part II. p. 168.

And as to the love to men, there are some that have flowing affections to some ; but their love is far from being of so extensive and universal a nature, as a truly Christian love is. They are full of dear affections to some, and full of bitterness towards others. They are knit to their own party, them that approve of them, love them and admire them ; but are fierce against those that oppose and dislike them. Matth. v. 45, 46. “ Be like your Father which is in heaven ; for he maketh his sun to rise on the evil and on the good.—For if ye love them which love you, what reward have ye ? do not even the publicans the same ? ” Some shew a great affection to their neighbours, and pretend to be ravished with the company of the children of God *abroad* ; and at the same time are uncomfortable and churlish towards their wives and other near relations *at home*, and are very negligent of relative duties. And as to the great love to sinners and opposers of religion, and the great concern for their souls, that there is an appearance of in some, even to extreme distress and agony, singling out a particular person, from among a multitude, for its object, there being at the same time no general compassion to sinners, that are in equally miserable circumstances, but what is in a monstrous disproportion ; this seems not to be of the nature of a gracious affection. Not that I suppose it to be at all strange, that pity to the perishing souls of sinners should be to a degree of agony, if other things are answerable ; or that a truly gracious compassion to souls should be exercised much more to some persons than others that are equally miserable, especially on some particular occasions : there may many things happen to fix the mind, and affect the heart, with respect to a particular person, at such a juncture ; and without doubt some saints have been in great distress for the souls of particular persons, so as to be as it were in travail for them : but when persons appear, at particular times, in wracking agonies for the soul of some single person, far beyond what has been usually heard or read of in eminent saints, but appear to be persons that have a spirit of meek and fervent love, charity, and compassion to mankind in general, in a far less degree than they ; I say, such agonies are greatly to be suspected, for reasons already given ; viz. that the Spirit of God is wont to give graces and gracious affections in a beautiful symmetry and proportion.

And as there is a monstrous disproportion in the love of some, in its exercises towards different persons, so there is in their seeming exercises of love towards the same persons. Some
men

men shew a love to others as to their outward man, they are liberal of their worldly substance, and often give to the poor; but have no love to, or concern for the souls of men. Others pretend a great love to mens souls, that are not compassionate and charitable towards their bodies. The making a great shew of love, pity, and distress for souls, costs them nothing; but in order to shew mercy to mens bodies, they must part with money out of their pockets. But a true Christian love to our brethren, extends both to their souls and bodies; and herein is like the love and compassion of Jesus Christ. He shewed mercy to mens souls, by labouring for them in preaching the gospel to them; and shewed mercy to their bodies, in going about doing good, healing all manner of sickness and diseases among the people. We have a remarkable instance of Christ's having compassion at once both to mens souls and bodies, and shewing compassion by feeding both, in Mark vi. 34, &c. "And Jesus, when he came out, saw much people, and was moved with compassion toward them, because they were as sheep not having a shepherd: and he began to teach them many things." Here was his compassion to their souls. And in the sequel, we have an account of his compassion to their bodies, because they had been a long while *having nothing to eat*: he fed five thousand of them with five loaves and two fishes. And if the compassion of professing Christians towards others does not work in the same ways, it is a sign that it is no true Christian compassion.

And furthermore, it is a sign that affections are not of the right sort, if persons seem to be much affected with the bad qualities of their fellow-Christians, as the coldness and lifelessness of other saints, but are in no proportion affected with their own defects and corruptions. A true Christian may be affected with the coldness and unfavouriness of other saints, and may mourn much over it: but at the same time, he is not so apt to be affected with the badness of any body's heart, as his own; this is most in his view; this he is most quick-sighted to discern; this he sees most of the aggravations of, and is most ready to cry out of. And a lesser degree of virtue will bring him to pity himself, and be concerned at his own calamities, than rightly to be affected with others calamities. And if men have not attained to the less, we may determine they never attained to the greater.

And here by the way, I would observe, that it may be laid down as a general rule, That if persons pretend that they come

to high attainments in religion, but have never yet arrived to the lesser attainments, it is a sign of a vain pretence. As if persons pretend, that they have got beyond mere *morality*, to live a *spiritual* and *divine* life; but really have not come to be so much as *moral* persons: or pretend to be greatly affected with the wickedness of their hearts, and are not affected with the palpable violations of God's commands in their practice, which is a lesser attainment: or if they pretend to be brought to be even willing to be damned for the glory of God, but have no forwardness to suffer a little in their estates and names, and worldly convenience, for the sake of their duty: or pretend that they are not afraid to venture their souls upon Christ, and commit their all to God, trusting to his bare word, and the faithfulness of his promises, for their eternal welfare; but at the same time, have not confidence enough in God, to dare to trust him with a little of their estates, bestowed to pious and charitable uses: I say, when it is thus with persons, their pretences are manifestly vain. He that is in a journey, and imagines he has got far beyond such a place in his road, and never yet came to it, must be mistaken; and he is not yet arrived to the top of the hill, that never yet got half-way thither. But this by the way.

The same that has been observed of the affection of *love*, is also to be observed of *other* religious affections. Those that are true, extend in some proportion, to the various things that are their due and proper objects: but when they are false, they are commonly strangely disproportionate. So it is with religious *desires* and longings: these in the saints, are to those things that are spiritual and excellent in general, and that in some proportion to their excellency, importance or necessity, or their near concern in them: but in false longings it is often far otherwise. They will strangely run, with an impatient vehemence, after something of less importance, when other things of greater importance are neglected. Thus for instance, some persons, from time to time, are attended with a vehement inclination, and unaccountably violent pressure, to declare to others what they experience, and to exhort others; when there is at the same time, no inclination, in any measure equal to it, to other things, that true Christianity has as great, yea, a greater tendency to; as the pouring out the soul before God in secret earnest prayer and praise to him, and more conformity to him, and living more to his glory, &c. We read in scripture

of groanings that cannot be uttered, and soul-breakings for the longing it hath, and longings, thirstings and pantings, much more frequently to these latter things, than the former.

And so as to *hatred* and *zeal*; when these are from right principles, they are against sin in general, in some proportion to the degree of sinfulness; Psal. cxix. 104. "I hate every false way." So vers. 128. But a false hatred and zeal against sin, is against some particular sin only. Thus some seem to be very zealous against profaneness, and pride in apparel, who themselves are notorious for covetousness, closeness, and it may be backbiting, envy towards superiors, turbulency of spirit towards rulers, and rooted ill-will to them that have injured them. False zeal is against the sins of others, while men have no zeal against their own sins. But he that has true zeal, exercises it chiefly against his own sins; though he shews also a proper zeal against prevailing and dangerous iniquity in others. And some pretend to have a great abhorrence of their own sins of heart, and cry out much of their inward corruption; and yet make light of sins in practice, and seem to commit them without much restraint or remorse; though these imply sin, both in heart and life.

As there is a much greater disproportion in the exercises of false affections, than of true, as to different objects; so there is also, as to different times. For although true Christians are not always alike; yea, there is very great difference, at different times, and the best have reason to be greatly ashamed of their unsteadiness; yet there is in no wise that instability and inconstancy in the hearts of those who are true *virgins, that follow the Lamb whither soever he goeth*, which is in false-hearted professors. The righteous man is truly said to be one *whose heart is fixed, trusting in God*, (Psal. cxii. 7.) and to have *his heart established with grace*, (Heb. xiii. 9.) and to *hold on his way*; Job xvii. 9. "The righteous shall hold on his way, and he that hath clean hands shall wax stronger and stronger." It is spoken of as a note of the hypocrisy of the Jewish church, that they *were as a swift dromedary, traversing her ways*.

If therefore persons are religious only by fits and starts; if they now and then seem to be raised up to the clouds in their affections, and then suddenly fall down again, lose all, and become quite careless and carnal, and this is their manner of carrying on religion; if they appear greatly moved, and mightily engaged in religion, only in extraordinary seasons, in the

time

time of a remarkable out-pouring of the Spirit, or other uncommon dispensation of providence, or upon the real or supposed receipt of some great mercy, when they have received some extraordinary temporal mercy, or suppose that they are newly converted, or have lately had what they call a great discovery; but quickly return to such a frame, that their hearts are chiefly upon other things, and the prevailing bent of their hearts and stream of their affections is ordinarily towards the things of this world; when they are like the children of Israel in the wilderness, who had their affections highly raised by what God had done for them at the Red sea, and sang his praise, and soon fell a lusting after the flesh-pots of Egypt; but then again when they came to mount Sinai, and saw the great manifestations God made of himself there, seemed to be greatly engaged again, and mightily forward to enter into covenant with God, saying, *All that the Lord hath spoken will we do, and be obedient*, but then quickly made them a golden calf: I say, when it is thus with persons, it is a sign of the unsoundness of affections.† They are like the waters in the time of a shower

† Dr. Owen (on the Spirit, Book III. Chap. ii. § 18.) speaking of a common work of the Spirit, says, “This work operates greatly on the affections: we have given instances, in fear, sorrow, joy, and delight, about spiritual things, that are stirred up and acted thereby: but yet it comes short in two things, of a thorough work upon the affections themselves. For, *1st*, It doth not *fix* them. And, *2dly*, It doth not *fill* them. 1. It is required that our affections be fixed on heavenly and spiritual things: and true grace will effect it; Col. iii. 1, 2. “If ye be risen with Christ, seek those things which are above, where Christ sitteth on the right hand of God. Set your affections on things above.” The joys, the fears, the hopes, the sorrows with reference unto spiritual and eternal things, which the work before mentioned doth produce, are evanid, uncertain, unstable, not only as to the degrees, but as to the very being of them. Sometimes they are as a river ready to overflow its banks, men cannot but be pouring them out on all occasions; and sometimes as waters that fail, no drop comes from them. Sometimes they are hot, and sometimes cold; sometimes up, and sometimes down; sometimes all heaven, and sometimes all world; without equality, without stability. But true grace fixeth the affections on spiritual things. As to the degrees of their exercise, there may be, and is in them a great variety, according as they may be excited, aided, assisted by grace and the means of it; or obstructed and impeded, by the interposition of temptations

shower of rain, which during the shower, and a little after, run like a brook, and flow abundantly; but are presently quite dry: and when another shower comes, then they will flow again. Whereas a true saint is like a stream from a living spring; which though it may be greatly increased by a shower of rain, and diminished in time of drought, yet constantly runs: (John iv. 14. "The water that I shall give him, shall be in him a well of water springing up," &c.) or like a tree planted by such a stream, that has a constant supply at the root, and is always green, even in time of the greatest drought; Jer. xvii. 7, 8. "Blessed is the man that trusteth in the Lord, and whose hope the Lord is. For he shall be as a tree planted by the waters, and that spreadeth out her roots by the river, and shall not see when heat cometh, but her leaf shall be green, and shall not be careful in the year of drought, neither shall cease from yielding fruit." Many hypocrites are like comets, that appear for a while with a mighty blaze; but are very unsteady and irregular in their motion, (and are therefore called wandering stars, Jude 13.) and their blaze soon disappears, and they appear but once in a great while. But the true saints are like the fixed stars, which, though they rise and set, and are often clouded, yet are stedfast in their orb, and may truly be said to shine with a constant light. Hypocritical affections are

temptations and diversions. But the constant bent and inclination of renewed affections, is unto spiritual things; as the scripture every where testifieth, and as experience doth confirm."

"There is (says Dr. Preston) a certain love, by fits, which God accepts not; when men come and offer to God great promises, like the waves of the sea, as big as mountains: Oh, they think, they will do much for God! But their minds change; and they become as those high waves, which at last fall level with the other waters. If a man should proffer thee great kindnesses, and thou shouldst afterwards come to him to make use of him, and he should look strangely upon thee, as if he were never acquainted with thee; how wouldst thou esteem of such love? If we are now on, now off, in our love, God will not esteem of such love." *Discourse on the divine love of Christ.*

Mr. Flavel, speaking of these changeable professors, says, "These professors have more of the moon than of the sun; little light, less heat, and many changes. They deceive many, yea, they deceive themselves, but cannot deceive God. They want that ballast and establishment in themselves, that would have kept them tight and steady." *Touchstone of Sincerity*, chap. ii. § 2.

are like a violent motion ; like that of the air that is moved with winds, (Jude 12.) But gracious affections are more a natural motion ; like the stream of a river, which though it has many turns hither and thither, and may meet with obstacles, and run more freely and swiftly in some places than others ; yet in the general, with a steady and constant course, tends the same way, until it gets to the ocean.

And as there is a strange unevenness and disproportion in false affections, at different *times* ; so there often is in different *places*. Some are greatly affected from time to time, when in company ; but have nothing that bears any manner of proportion to it, in secret, in close meditation, secret prayer, and conversing with God, when alone, and separated from all the world.* A true Christian doubtless delights in religious fellowship, and Christian conversation, and finds much to affect his heart in it ; but he also delights at times to retire from all mankind, to converse with God in solitary places. And this also has its peculiar advantages for fixing his heart, and engaging its affections. True religion disposes persons to be much alone, in solitary places, for holy meditation and prayer. So it wrought in Isaac, Gen. xxiv. 63. And which is much more, so it wrought in Jesus Christ. How often do we read of his retiring into mountains and solitary places, for holy converse with his Father ? It is difficult to conceal great affections,

but

* “ The Lord is neglected secretly, yet honoured openly ; because there is no wind in their chambers to blow their sails ; and therefore there they stand still. Hence many men keep their profession, when they lose their affection. They have by the one a name to live, (and that is enough) though their hearts be dead. And hence so long as you love and commend them, so long they love you ; but if not, they will forsake you. They were warm only by another’s fire, and hence having no principle of life within, soon grow dead. This is the water that turns a Pharisee’s mill.” *Shepard’s Parable*, Part I. p. 180.

“ The hypocrite (says Mr. Flavel) is not for the closet, but the synagogue, Matth. vi. 5, 6. It is not his meat and drink to retire from the clamour of the world, to enjoy God in secret.” *Touchstone of Sincerity*, Chap. vii. § 2.

Dr. Ames, in his *Cases of conscience*, Lib. III. Chap. v. speaks of it as a thing by which sincerity may be known, “ That persons be obedient in the absence, as well as in the presence of lookers on ; in secret, as well, yea more than in public ;” alledging Phil. ii. 12. and Matth. vi. 6.

but yet gracious affections are of a much more silent and secret nature, than those that are counterfeit. So it is with the gracious sorrow of the saints. So it is with their sorrow for their own sins.† Thus the future gracious mourning of true penitents, at the beginning of the latter-day glory, is represented as being so secret, as to be hidden from the companions of their bosom; Zech. xii. 12, 13, 14. "And the land shall mourn, every family apart, the family of the house of David apart, and their wives apart: the family of the house of Nathan apart, and their wives apart: the family of the house of Levi apart, and their wives apart: the family of Shimei apart, and their wives apart: all the families that remain, every family apart, and their wives apart." So it is with their sorrow for the sins of others. The saints pains and travailing for the souls of sinners is chiefly in secret places; Jer. xiii. 17. "If ye will not hear it, my soul shall weep in secret places for your pride, and mine eye shall weep sore, and run down with tears, because the Lord's flock is carried away captive." So it is with gracious joys: they are *hidden manna*, in this respect, as well as others, Rev. ii. 17. The Psalmist seems to speak of his sweetest comforts, as those that were to be had in secret; Psal. lxxiii. 5, 6. "My soul shall be satisfied as with marrow and fatness; and my mouth shall praise thee with joyful lips: when I remember thee upon my bed, and meditate on thee in the night-watches." Christ calls forth his spouse, away from the world, into retired places, that he may give her his sweetest love; Cant. vii. 11, 12. "Come, my beloved, let us go forth into the field; let us lodge in the villages:—there will I give thee my loves." The most eminent divine favours that the saints obtained, that we read of in scripture, were in their retirement. The principal manifestations that God made of himself, and his covenant-mercy to Abraham, were when he was alone, apart from his numerous family; as any one will judge that carefully reads his history. Isaac received that special gift of God to him, Rebekah, who was so great a comfort to him, and by whom he obtained the promised seed, walking alone, meditating in the field. Jacob was retired for secret prayer, when Christ came to him, and he wrestled with him, and obtained the blessing.

God

† Mr. Flavel, in reckoning up those things, wherein the sorrow of saints is distinguished from the sorrow of hypocrites, about their sins, says, "Their troubles for sin are more private and silent troubles than others are; their sore runs in the night." *Touchstone of sincerity*, Chap. vi. § 5.

God revealed himself to Moses in the bush, when he was in a solitary place in the desert, in the mount Horeb, Exod. iii. at the beginning. And afterwards, when God shewed him his glory, and he was admitted to the highest degree of communion with God that ever he enjoyed; he was alone, in the same mountain, and continued there forty days and forty nights, and then came down with his face shining. God came to those great prophets, Elijah and Elisha, and conversed freely with them, chiefly in their retirement. Elijah conversed alone with God at mount Sinai, as Moses did. And when Jesus Christ had his greatest prelibation of his future glory, when he was transfigured; it was not when he was with the multitude, or with the twelve disciples, but retired into a solitary place in a mountain, with only three select disciples, charging them that they should tell no man, until he was risen from the dead. When the angel Gabriel came to the blessed virgin, and when the Holy Ghost came upon her, and the power of the Highest overshadowed her, she seems to have been alone, and to be in this matter hid from the world; her nearest and dearest earthly friend Joseph, that had betrothed her, (though a just man,) knew nothing of the matter. And she that first partook of the joy of Christ's resurrection, was alone with Christ at the sepulchre, John xx. And when the beloved disciple was favoured with those wonderful visions of Christ, and his future dispensations towards the church and the world, he was alone in the isle of Patmos. Not but that we have also instances of great privileges that the saints have received when with others; or that there is not much in Christian conversation, and social and public worship, tending greatly to refresh and rejoice the hearts of the saints. But this is all that I aim at by what has been said, to shew that it is the nature of true grace, that however it loves Christian society in its place, yet it in a peculiar manner delights in retirement, and secret converse with God. So that if persons appear greatly engaged in social religion, and but little in the religion of the closet, and are often highly affected when with others, and but little moved when they have none but God and Christ to converse with, it looks very darkly upon their religion.

XI. Another great and very distinguishing difference between gracious affections and others is, that gracious affections the higher they are raised, the more is a spiritual appetite and longing

longing of soul after spiritual attainments increased. On the contrary, false affections rest satisfied in themselves.*

The more a true saint loves God with a gracious love, the more he desires to love him, and the more uneasy is he at his want of love to him: the more he hates sin, the more he desires to hate it, and laments that he has so much remaining love to it: the more he mourns for sin, the more he longs to mourn for sin; the more his heart is broke, the more he desires it should be broke: the more he thirsts and longs after God and holiness, the more he longs to long, and breathe out his very soul in longings after God: the kindling and raising of gracious affections is like kindling a flame; the higher it is raised, the more ardent it is; and the more it burns, the more vehemently does it tend and seek to burn. So that the spiritual appetite after holiness, and an increase of holy affections, is much more lively and keen in those that are eminent in holiness, than others; and more when grace and holy affections are in their most lively exercise, than at other times. It is as much the nature of one that is spiritually new-born, to thirst after growth in holiness, as it is the nature of a new-born babe, to thirst after the mother's breast; who has the sharpest appetite, when best in health; 1 Pet. ii. 2, 3. "As new-born babes desire the sincere milk of the word, that ye may grow thereby; if so be that ye have tasted that the Lord is gracious." The most that the saints have in this world, is but a taste, a prelibation of that future glory which is their proper fulness; it is

F f f

only

* "Truly there is no work of Christ that is right, (says Mr. Shepard,) but it carries the soul to long for more of it." *Parable of the ten Virgins*, Part I. p. 136.

And again, "There is in true grace an infinite circle: a man by thirsting receives, and receiving thirsts for more. But hence the Spirit is not poured out abundantly on churches; because men shut it out, by shutting in, and contenting themselves with their common graces and gifts; Matth. vii. 29. Examine if it be not so." *Ibid.* p. 182.

And in p. 210. he says, "This I say, True grace as it comforts, so it never fills, but puts an edge on the appetite: more of that grace, Lord! Thus Paul, Phil. iii. 13, 14. Thus David, *Out of my poverty I have given*, &c. 1 Chron. xxix. 3, 17, 18. It is a sure way never to be deceived in lighter strokes of the Spirit, to be thankful for any, but to be content with no measure of it. And this cuts the thread of difference, between a superficial lighter stroke of the Spirit, and that which is sound."

only an earnest of their future inheritance in their hearts ; 2 Cor. i. 22. and v. 5. and Eph. i. 14. The most eminent saints in this state are but children, compared with their future, which is their proper state of maturity and perfection ; as the apostle observes, 1 Cor. xiii. 10, 11. The greatest eminency and perfection, that the saints arrive to in this world, has no tendency to satiety, or to abate their desires after more ; but, on the contrary, makes them more eager to press forwards ; as is evident by the apostle's words, Phil. iii. 13, 14, 15. " Getting those things which are behind, and reaching forth
 " unto those things which are before, I press toward the
 " mark.—Let us therefore, as many as be PERFECT, be thus
 " minded."

The reasons of it are, that the more persons have of holy affections, the more they have of that spiritual taste which I have spoken of elsewhere ; whereby they perceive the excellency, and relish the divine sweetness of holiness. And the more grace they have, while in this state of imperfection, the more they see their imperfection and emptiness, and distance from what ought to be ; and so the more do they see their need of grace ; as I shewed at large before, when speaking of the nature of evangelical humiliation. And besides, grace, as long as it is imperfect, is of a growing nature, and in a growing state. And we see it to be so with all living things, that while they are in a state of imperfection, and in their growing state, their nature seeks after growth ; and so much the more, as they are more healthy and prosperous. Therefore the cry of every true grace, is like that cry of true faith, Mark ix. 24. " Lord, I
 " believe, help thou my unbelief." And the greater spiritual discoveries and affections the true Christian has, the more does he become of an earnest beggar for grace, and spiritual food, that he may grow ; and the more earnestly does he pursue after it, in the use of proper means and endeavours ; for true and gracious longings after holiness, are no idle ineffectual desires.

But here some may object and say, How is this consistent with what all allow, that spiritual enjoyments are of a soul-satisfying nature ?

I answer, its being so, will appear to be not at all inconsistent with what has been said, if it be considered in what manner spiritual enjoyments are said to be of a soul-satisfying nature. Certainly they are not so in that sense, that they are of so cloying a nature, that he who has any thing of them,
 though

though but in a very imperfect degree, desires no more. But spiritual enjoyments are of a soul-satisfying nature in the following respects. 1. They in their kind and nature, are fully adapted to the nature, capacity and need of the soul of man. So that those who find them, desire *no other kind* of enjoyments; they sit down fully contented with that kind of happiness which they have, desiring no change, nor inclining to wander about any more, saying, *Who will shew us any good?* the soul is never cloyed, never weary; but perpetually giving up itself, with all its powers, to this happiness. But not that those who have something of this happiness, desire no more of the same. 2. They are satisfying also in this respect, that they answer the expectation of the appetite. When the appetite is high to any thing, the expectation is consequently so. Appetite to a particular object, implies expectation in its nature. This expectation is not satisfied by worldly enjoyments, the man expected to have a great accession of happiness, but he is disappointed. But it is not so with spiritual enjoyments; they fully answer and satisfy the expectation. 3. The gratification and pleasure of spiritual enjoyments is permanent. It is not so with worldly enjoyments. They in a sense satisfy particular appetites: but the appetite in being satisfied, is glutted, and then the pleasure is over: and as soon as that is over, the general appetite of human nature after happiness returns; but is empty, and without any thing to satisfy it. So that the glutting of a particular appetite, does but take away from, and leave empty, the general thirst of nature. 4. Spiritual good is satisfying, as there is enough in it to satisfy the soul, as to degree, if obstacles were but removed, and the enjoying faculty duly applied. There is room enough here for the soul to extend itself; here is an infinite ocean of it. If men be not satisfied here, in degree of happiness, the cause is with themselves; it is because they do not open their mouths wide enough.

But these things do not argue that a soul has no appetite excited after more of the same, that has tasted a little: or that his appetite will not increase, the more he tastes, until he comes to fulness of enjoyment: as bodies that are attracted to the globe of the earth, tend to it more strongly, the nearer they come to the attracting body, and are not at rest out of the centre. Spiritual good is of a satisfying nature; and for that very reason, the soul that tastes, and knows its nature, will thirst after it, and a fulness of it, that it may be satisfied. And

the more he experiences, and the more he knows this excellent, unparalleled, exquisite, and satisfying sweetness, the more earnestly will he hunger and thirst for more, until he comes to perfection. And therefore this is the nature of spiritual affections, that the greater they be, the greater the appetite and longing is after grace and holiness.

But with those joys, and other religious affections, that are false and counterfeit, it is otherwise. If before, there was a great desire, of some sort, after grace; as these affections rise, *that* desire ceases, or is abated. It may be before, while the man was under legal convictions, and much afraid of hell, he earnestly longed that he might obtain spiritual light in his understanding, and faith in Christ, and love to God: but now, when these false affections are risen, that deceive him, and make him confident that he is converted, and his state good, there are no more earnest longings after light and grace; for his end is answered; he is confident that his sins are forgiven him, and that he shall go to heaven; and so he is satisfied. And especially when false affections are raised very high, do they put an end to longings after grace and holiness. The man now is far from appearing to himself a poor empty creature; on the contrary, he is rich, and increased with goods, and hardly conceives of any thing more excellent, than what he has already attained to.

Hence there is an end to many persons earnestness in seeking, after they have once obtained that which they call their conversion; or at least, after they have had those high affections, that make them fully confident of it. Before, while they looked upon themselves as in a state of nature, they were engaged in seeking after God and Christ, and cried earnestly for grace, and strove in the use of means: but now they act though they thought their work was done; they live upon their first work, or some high experiences that are past; and there is an end to their crying, and striving after God and grace.*

Whereas

* "It is usual to see a false heart most diligent in seeking the Lord, when he has been worst, and most careless when it is best. Hence many at first conversion, sought the Lord earnestly: afterwards affections and endeavours die; that now they are as good as the word can make them.—An hypocrite's last end is to satisfy himself: hence he has enough. A saint's is to satisfy Christ: hence he never has enough." *Shepard's Parable*, Part I. p. 157.

"Many

Whereas the holy principles that actuate a true saint, have a far more powerful influence to stir him up to earnestness in seeking God and holiness, than servile fear. Hence seeking God is spoken of as one of the distinguishing characters of the saints; and *those that seek God*, is one of the names by which the godly are called in scripture; Psal. xxiv. 6. "This is the generation of them that seek him, that seek thy face, O Jacob." Psal. lxxix. 6. "Let not those that seek thee, be confounded for my sake." vers. 32. "The humble shall see this, and be glad; and your heart shall live that seek God." And lxx. 4. "Let all those that seek thee, rejoice, and be glad in thee: and let such as love thy salvation say continually, the Lord be magnified." And the scriptures every where represent the seeking, striving and labor of a Christian, as being chiefly after his conversion, and his conversion as being but the beginning of his work. And almost all that is said in the
New

"Many a man, it may be, may say, I have nothing in myself, and all is in Christ; and comfort himself there; and so falls asleep.—Hands off! and touch not this ark, lest the lord slay thee: a Christ of clouds would serve your turn as well." *Ibid.* p. 71.

"An hypocrite's light goes out, and goes not. Hence many ancient scoundrels take all their comfort from their first work, and droop when in old age." *Ibid.* p. 77.

And p. 93, 94. Mr. Shepard, mentioning the characters of those that have a dead hope, says, "They that content themselves with any measure of holiness and grace, they look not for Christ's coming and company. For saints that do look for him, though they have not that holiness and grace they would have, yet they rest not satisfied with any measure; 1 John iii. 3. "He that hath this hope, purifieth himself as he is pure."—The saints content not themselves with any dressings, until made glorious; and so fit for fellowship with that spouse.—When a man leaves not, until he gets such a measure of faith and grace, and now when he has got this, contents himself with this, as a good sign that he shall be saved, he looks not for Christ. Or when men are heavily laden with sin; then close with Christ; and then are comforted, sealed, and have joy that fills them; and now the work is done.—And when men shall not content themselves with any measure; but wish they had more, if grace would grow, while they tell clocks and sit idle; and so God must do all; but do not purge themselves, and make work of it."

Again, p. 109. "There is never a hypocrite living, but closeth with Christ for his own ends: for he cannot work beyond his principle. Now when men have served their own turns out of another man,

New Testament, of mens watching, giving earnest heed to themselves, running the race that is set before them, striving and agonizing, wrestling not with flesh and blood, but principalities and powers, fighting, putting on the whole armour of God, and standing, having done all to stand, pressing forward, reaching forth, continuing instant in prayer, crying to God day and night; I say, almost all that is said in the New Testament of these things, is spoken of, and directed to the saints. Where these things are applied to sinners seeking conversion once, are spoken of the saints prosecution of the great business of their high calling ten times. But many in these days have got into a strange antisciptural way, of having all their striving and wrestling over before they are converted; and so having an easy time of it afterwards, to sit down and enjoy their sloth and indolence; as those that now have a supply of their wants, and are become rich and full. But when the Lord *fills the hungry*

man, away they go, and keep that which they have. An hypocrite closeth with Christ, as a man with a rich shop; he will not be at cost to buy all the shop, but so much as serves his turn. Commonly men in horror, seek so much of Christ as will ease them; and hence profess, and hence seek for so much of Christ as will credit them; and hence their desires after Christ are soon satisfied." *Appetitus finis est infinitus.*"

Wo to thee that canst paint such a Christ in thy head, and receive such a Christ into thy heart, as must be a pander to your sloth. The Lord will revenge this wrong done to his glory, with greater sorrows than ever any felt: to make Christ not only meat and drink to feed, but cloaths to cover your sloth.—Why what can we do? what can we do?—Why as the first Adam conveys not only guilt, but power; so the second conveys both righteousness and strength." *Ibid.* p. 158.

"When the Lord hath given some light and affection, and some comfort and some reformation, now a man grows full here. Saints do for God; and carnal hearts do something too; but a little fills them, and quiets them, and so damns them. And hence men at the first work upon them, are very diligent in the use of means; but after that, they be brought to neglect prayer, sleep out sermons and to be careless, fapless, lifeless." *Ibid.* p. 210.

"It is an argument of want of grace, when a man saith to himself, as the glutton said to his soul, *Take thy rest, for thou hast goods laid up for many years.* So thou hast repentance and grace, and peace enough *for many years*: and hence the soul takes its rest, grows sluggish and negligent. Oh, if you die in this case, this night thy soul shall be taken away to hell." *Ibid.* p. 227.

hungry with good things, these rich are like to be sent away empty, Luke i. 53.

But doubtless there are some hypocrites, that have only false affections, who will think they are able to stand this trial; and will readily say, that they desire not to rest satisfied with past attainments, but to be pressing forward, they do desire more, they long after God and Christ, and desire more holiness, and do seek it. But the truth is, their desires are not properly the desires of appetite after holiness, for its own sake, or for the moral excellency and holy sweetness that is in it; but only for by-ends. They long after clearer discoveries, that they may be better satisfied about the state of their souls; or because in great discoveries, self is gratified, in being made so much of by God, and so exalted above others; they long to taste the love of God, (as they call it) more than to have more love to God. Or, it may be, they have a kind of forced, fancied or made longings; because they think they must long for more grace, otherwise it will be a dark sign upon them. But such things as these are far different from the natural, and as it were necessary appetite and thirsting of the new man, after God and holiness. There is an inward burning desire that a saint has after holiness, as natural to the new creature, as vital heat is to the body. There is a holy breathing and panting after the Spirit of God, to increase holiness, as natural to a holy nature, as breathing is to a living body. And holiness or sanctification is more directly the object of it, than any manifestation of God's love and favour. This is the meat and drink that is the object of the spiritual appetite; John iv. 34. "My meat is to do the will of him that sent me, and to finish his work." Where we read in scripture of the desires, longings, and thirstings of the saints, righteousness and God's laws are much more frequently mentioned, as the object of them, than any thing else. The saints *desire the sincere milk of the word*, not so much to testify God's love to them, as *that they may grow thereby* in holiness. I have shewn before, that holiness is that good which is the immediate object of a spiritual taste. But undoubtedly the same sweetness that is the chief object of a spiritual taste, is also the chief object of a spiritual appetite. Grace is the godly man's treasure; If. xxxiii. 6. "The fear of the Lord is his treasure." Godliness is the gain that he is covetous and greedy of, 1 Tim. vi. 6. Hypocrites long for discoveries, more for the present comfort of the discovery,
and

and the high manifestation of God's love in it, than for any sanctifying influence of it. But neither a longing after great discoveries, or after great tastes of the love of God, nor longing to be in heaven, nor longing to die, are in any measure so distinguishing marks of true saints, as longing after a more holy heart, and living a more holy life.

But I am come now to the last distinguishing mark of holy affections that I shall mention.

XII. Gracious and holy affections have their exercise and fruit in Christian practice.—I mean, they have that influence and power upon him who is the subject of them, that they cause that a practice, which is universally conformed to, and directed by Christian rules, should be the practice and business of his life.

This implies three things: 1. That his behaviour or practice in the world, be universally conformed to, and directed by Christian rules. 2. That he makes a business of such a holy practice above all things; that it be a business which he is chiefly engaged in, and devoted to, and pursues with highest earnestness and diligence: so that he may be said to make this practice of religion eminently *his work and business*. And, 3. That he persists in it to the end of life: so that it may be said, not only to be his business at certain seasons, the business of Sabbath-days, or certain extraordinary times, or the business of a month, or a year, or of seven years, or his business under certain circumstances; but the *business of his life*; it being that business which he perseveres in through all changes, and under all trials, as long as he lives.

The necessity of each of these, in all true Christians, is most clearly and fully taught in the word of God.

1. It is necessary that men should be universally obedient: *
 1 John iii. 3, &c. "Every man that hath this hope in him,
 "purifieth

* "He that pretends to godliness, and turns aside to crooked ways, is an hypocrite: for those that are really godly, do live in a way of obedience; Psal. cxix. 1, 2, 3. "Blessed are the undefiled in
 "the way, that walk in the law of the Lord. They also do no ini-
 "quity." Luke i. 6. "They were both righteous before God,
 "walking in all the commandments of the Lord, blameless." But
 such

"purifieth himself, even as he is pure.—And ye know that he
 "was manifested to take away our sins; and in him is no sin.
 "Whosoever abideth in him, sinneth not: whosoever sinneth,
 "hath not seen him, neither known him.—He that doth righ-
 "teousness, is righteous, even as he is righteous: he that
 "committeth sin, is of the devil." Chap. v. 18. "We know
 "that whosoever is born of God, sinneth not, but he that is
 "begotten of God, keepeth himself, and that wicked one
 "toucheth him not." John xv. 14. Ye are my friends, if ye
 "do whatsoever I command you." James ii. 10. "Whosoever
 G g " shall

such as live in ways of sin, are dissemblers; for all such will be rejec-
 ted in the day of judgment; Matth. vii. 23. "Depart from me, ye
 "that work iniquity." The like we have Luke xiii. 27. If men
 live in a way of disobedience, they do not love God: for love will
 make men keep God's commandments; 1 John v. 3. "Herein is
 "love, that we keep his commandments: and his commandments
 "are not grievous." If men live in a way of disobedience, they
 have not a spirit of faith: for faith sanctifies men; Acts xxvi. 18.
 "Sanctified by faith that is in me." If men live in a way of diso-
 bedience, they are not Christ's sheep; for his sheep hear his voice;
 John x. 27. Men that live in a way of disobedience are not born
 of God; 1 John iii. 9. "He that is born of God, sinneth not." Men
 that live in a way of disobedience are the servants of sin; John
 viii. 34. "He that committeth sin, is the servant of sin."—A course
 of external sin is an evidence of hypocrisy; whether it be a sin of om-
 mission or commission. If men live in the neglect of known duties,
 or in the practice of known evils, that will be their condemnation;
 let the sin be what it will; let it be profaneness, uncleanness, lying,
 or injustice.—If men allow themselves in malice, envy, wanton
 thoughts, profane thoughts, that will condemn them; though those
 corruptions do not break out in any scandalous way. These thoughts
 are an evidence of a rotten heart; Tit. iii. 3. "We ourselves were
 "sometimes foolish, disobedient, deceived, serving divers lusts and
 "pleasures, living in malice and envy, hateful, and hating one an-
 "other." If a man allows himself, though he thinks he doth not,
 in malice and envy, he is an hypocrite: though his conscience disal-
 lows it, yet if his heart allows it, he is no saint.—Some make preten-
 ces to godliness, whereby they do not only deceive others, but (which
 is a great deal worse) deceive themselves also: but this will condemn
 them, that they live in a course of sin, and so must go with ungodly
 men; Psal. cxxv. 5. "As for such as turn aside unto their crooked
 "ways, the Lord will lead them forth with the workers of iniquity."
 If there be a great change in a man's carriage, and he be reformed
 in several particulars, yet if there be one evil way, the man is an
 ungodly

“ shall keep the whole law, and yet offend in one point, he is guilty of all.” 1 Cor. vi. 9. “ Know ye not that the unrighteous shall not inherit the kingdom of God? Be not deceived: neither fornicators, nor idolaters, &c. shall inherit the kingdom of God.” Gal. v. 19, 20. “ Now the works of the flesh are manifest, which are these, Adultery, fornication, uncleanness, lasciviousness, idolatry, witchcraft, hatred, variance, emulations, wrath, strife, envyings, murders, drunkenness, revellings, and such like: of the which I tell you before, as I have also told you in time past, that
“ they

ungodly man: where there is piety there is universal obedience. A man may have great infirmities, yet be a godly man. So it was with Lot, David, and Peter: but if he lives in a way of sin, he does not render his godliness only suspicious, but it is full evidence against him. Men that are godly have respect to all God's commandments, Psal. cxix. 6. There be a great many commands, and if there be one of them that a man has not respect unto, he will be put to shame another day. If a man lives in one evil way, he is not subject to God's authority: but then he lives in rebellion; and that will take off all his pleas, and at once cut off all his pretences; and he will be condemned in the day of judgment.—One way of sin is exception enough against the man's salvation. Though the sin that he lives in be but small: such persons will not be guilty of perjury, stealing, drunkenness, fornication; they look upon them to be heinous things, and they are afraid of them; but they do not much matter it, if they oppress a little in a bargain, if they commend a thing too much when they are about to sell it, if they break a promise, if they spend the Sabbath unprofitably, if they neglect secret prayer, if they talk rudely, and reproach others; they think these are but small things: if they can keep clear of great transgression, they hope that God will not insist upon small things. But indeed all the commands of God are established by divine authority: a small shot may kill a man, as well as a cannon-bullet: a small leak may sink a ship. If a man lives in small sins, that shews he has no love to God, no sincere care to please and honor God. Little sins are of a damning nature, as well as great: if they do not deserve so much punishment as greater, yet they do deserve damnation. There is a contempt of God in all sins; Matth. v. 19. “ He that shall break one of the least of these commands, and shall teach men so, shall be called the least in the kingdom of God.” Prov. xix. 16. “ He that keepeth the commandment, keepeth his own soul; but he that despiseth his way, shall die.” If a man says, this is a great command, and so lays weight on it, and another is a little commandment, and so does not regard it, but will allow himself to break it, he is in a perishing condition.” *Stoddard's Way to know sincerity and hypocrisy.*

“ they which do such things, shall not inherit the kingdom of God.” Which is as much as to say, they that do any sort of wickedness. Job xxxi. 3, 4, 5, 6, 7. “ Is not destruction to the wicked? and a strange punishment to the workers of iniquity? Doth not he see my ways, and count all my steps? Let me be weighed in an even balance, that God may know mine integrity. If my step hath turned out of the way, and mine heart walked after mine eyes, and if any blot hath cleaved to my hands,” &c. Ezek. xxxiii. 15. “ If he walk in the statutes of life, without committing iniquity, he shall surely live.” If one member only be corrupt, and we do not cut it off, it will carry the whole body to hell, Matth. v. 29, 30. Saul was commanded to slay all God’s enemies, the Amalekites; and he slew all but Agag, and the saving him alive proved his ruin. Caleb and Jothua entered into God’s promised rest, because they *wholly* followed the Lord, Numb. xiv. 24. and xxxii. 11, 12. Deut. i. 36. Josh. xiv. 6, 8, 9, 14. Naaman’s hypocrisy appeared in that, however he seemed to be greatly affected with gratitude to God for healing his leprosy, and engaged to serve him, yet in one thing he desired to be excused. And Herod, though he feared John, and observed him, and heard him gladly, and did many things; yet was condemned, in that in one thing he would not hearken to him, even in parting with his beloved Herodias. So that it is necessary that men should part with their dearest iniquities, which are as their right hand and right eyes, sins that most easily beset them, and which they are most exposed to by their natural inclinations, evil customs, or particular circumstances, as well as others. As Joseph would not make known himself to his brethren, who had sold him, until Benjamin the beloved child of the family, that was most hardly parted with, was delivered up; no more will Christ reveal his love to us, until we part with our dearest lusts, and until we are brought to comply with the most difficult duties, and those that we have the greatest aversion to.

And it is of importance, that it should be observed, that in order to a man’s being truly said to be universally obedient, his obedience must not only consist in *negatives*, or in universally avoiding wicked practices, consisting in sins of commission; but he must also be universal in the *positives* of religion. Sins of omission are as much breaches of God’s commands, as sins of commission. Christ, in Matth. xxv. represents those on
the

the left hand, as being condemned and cursed to everlasting fire, for sins of omission, *I was an hungred, and ye gave me no meat, &c.* A man therefore cannot be said to be universally obedient, and of a Christian conversation, only because he is no thief, nor oppressor, nor fraudulent person, nor drunkard, nor tavern-haunter, nor whoremaster, nor rioter, nor night-walker, nor unclean, nor profane in his language, nor slanderer, nor liar, nor furious, nor malicious, nor reviler : he is falsely said to be of a conversation that becomes the gospel, who goes thus far and no farther ; but in order to this, it is necessary that he should also be of a serious, religious, devout, humble, meek, forgiving, peaceful, respectful, condescending, benevolent, merciful, charitable and beneficent walk and conversation. Without such things as these, he does not obey the laws of Christ, and laws that he and his apostles did abundantly insist on, as of greatest importance and necessity.

2. In order to mens being true Christians, it is necessary that they prosecute the business of religion, and the service of God with great earnestness and diligence, as the work which they devote themselves to, and make the main business of their lives. All Christ's *peculiar people*, not only do good works, but are "zealous of good works." Tit. ii. 14. No man can do the service of two masters at once. They that are God's true servants, do give up themselves to his service, and make it as it were their whole work, therein employing their whole hearts, and the chief of their strength ; Phil. iii. 13. "This one thing I do." Christians in their effectual calling, are not called to idleness, but to labour in God's vineyard, and spend their day in doing a great and laborious service. All true Christians comply with this call, (as is implied in its being an effectual call,) and do the work of Christians ; which is every where in the New Testament compared to those exercises, wherein men are wont to exert their strength, with the greatest earnestness, as running, wrestling, fighting. All true Christians are good and faithful soldiers of Jesus Christ, and *fight the good fight of faith* : for none but those who do so, do ever lay hold on eternal life. Those who *fight as those that beat the ear*, never win the crown of victory. *They that run in a race, run all ; but one wins the prize* ; and they that are slack and negligent in their course, do not *so run, as that they may obtain*. The kingdom of heaven is not to be taken but by violence. With-
out

out earnestness there is no getting along, in that narrow way that leads to life ; and so no arriving at that state of glorious life and happiness which it leads to. Without earnest labour, there is no ascending the steep and high hill of Zion ; and so no arriving at the heavenly city on the top of it. Without a constant laboriousness, there is no stemming the swift stream in which we swim, so as ever to come to that fountain of water of life, that is at the head of it. There is need that we should *watch and pray always*, in order to our *escaping those dreadful things*, that are coming on the ungodly, and our *being counted worthy to stand before the Son of man*. There is need of our *putting on the whole armour of God*, and *doing all to stand*, in order to our avoiding a total overthrow, and being utterly destroyed by the *fiery darts of the devil*. There is need that we should *forget the things that are behind*, and *be reaching forth to the things that are before*, and *pressing towards the mark*, for the *prize of the high calling of God in Christ Jesus our Lord*, in order to our obtaining that prize. Slothfulness in the service of God, in his professed servants, is as damning, as open rebellion : for the *slothful servant*, is a *wicked servant*, and shall be cast into outer darkness, among God's open enemies, Matth. xxv. 26, 30. They that are *slothful*, are not *followers of them*, who through *faith and patience inherit the promises* ; Heb. vi. 11, 12. " And we desire that every one of you do shew the same diligence, to the full assurance of hope unto the end : that ye be not slothful, but followers of them, who through faith and patience inherit the promises." And all they who follow " that cloud of witnesses " that are gone before to heaven, do " lay aside every weight, and the sin that easily besets them, and do run with patience the race that is set before them," Heb. xii. 1. That true faith, by which persons rely on the righteousness of Christ, and the work that he hath done for them, and do truly feed and live upon him, is evermore accompanied with such a spirit of earnestness in the Christian work and course. Which was typified of old, by the manner of the children of Israel's feeding on the paschal lamb ; who were directed to eat it, as those that were in haste, with their loins girded, their shoes on their feet, and staff in their hand ; Exod. xii. 11. " And thus shall ye eat it, with your loins girded, your shoes on your feet, and your staff in your hand : and ye shall eat it in haste ; it is the Lord's passover."

3. Every true Christian perseveres in this way of universal obedience,

obedience, and diligent and earnest service of God, through all the various kinds of trials that he meets with, to the end of life. That all true saints, all those that do obtain eternal life, do thus persevere in the practice of religion, and the service of God, is a doctrine so abundantly taught in the scripture, that particularly to rehearse all the texts which imply it would be endless. I shall content myself with referring to some in the margin.*

But *that* in perseverance in obedience, which is chiefly insisted on in the scripture, as a special note of the truth of grace, is the continuance of professors in the practice of their duty, and being stedfast in an holy walk, through the various *trials* that they meet with.

By *trials* here, I mean, those things that occur, and that a professor meets with in his course, that do especially render his continuance in his duty, and faithfulness to God, difficult to nature. These things are from time to time called in scripture by the name of *trials*, or *temptations*, (which are words of the same signification.) These are of various kinds: there are many things that render persons continuance in the way of their duty difficult, by their tendency to cherish and foment, or to stir up and provoke their lusts and corruptions. Many things make it hard to continue in the way of duty, by their being of an alluring nature, and having a tendency to entice persons to sin; or by their tendency to take off restraints, and embolden them in iniquity. Other things are trials of the soundness and stedfastness of professors, by their tendency to make their duty appear terrible to them, and so to affright and drive them from it: such as the sufferings which their duty will expose them to; pain, ill-will, contempt, and reproach, or loss of outward possessions and comforts. If persons, after they have made a profession of religion, live any considerable time in this world, which is so full of changes, and so full of evil, it cannot be otherwise, than that they should meet with many trials of their sincerity and stedfastness. And besides, it is God's manner, in his providence,

* Deut. v. 29. Deut. xxxii. 18, 19, 20. 1 Chron. xxviii. 9. Psal. lxxviii. 7, 8, 10, 11, 35, 36, 37, 41, 42, 56. &c. Psal. cvi. 3. 12—15. Psal. cxxv. 4, 5. Prov. xxvi. 11. Is. lxiv. 5. Jer. xvii. 13. Ezek. iii. 20. and xviii. 24. and xxxiii. 12, 13. Matth. x. 22. and xiii. 4—8. with verses 19.—23. and xxv. 8. and xxiv. 12, 13. Luke ix. 62. and xii. 35. &c. and xxii. 28. and xvii. 32. John viii. 30, 31. and xv. 6, 7, 8, 10, 16. Rom. ii. 7. and xi. 22. Col. i. 22, 23. Heb. iii. 6, 12, 14. and vi. 11, 12. and x. 35. &c. James i. 25. Rev. ii. 13, 26. and ii. 10. 1 Tim. ii. 15. 2 Tim. iv. 4.—8.

providence, to bring trials on his professing friends and servants designedly, that he may manifest them, and may exhibit sufficient matter of conviction of the state which they are in, to their own consciences; and oftentimes, to the world. As appears by innumerable scriptures; some are referred to the margin.*

True saints may be guilty of some kinds and degrees of backsliding, and may be foiled by particular temptations, and may fall into sin, yea great sins: but they can never fall away so, as to grow weary of religion, and the service of God, and habitually to dislike it and neglect it, either on its own account, or on account of the difficulties that attend it; as is evident by Gal. vi. 9. Rom. ii. 7. Heb. x. 36. Is. xliii. 22. Mal. i. 13. They can never backslide, so as to continue no longer in a way of universal obedience: or so, that it shall cease to be their *manner* to observe all the rules of Christianity, and do all duties required, even the most difficult, and in the most difficult circumstances.† This is abundantly manifested by the things that have

* Gen. xxii. 1. Exod. xv. 25. and xvi. 4. Deut. viii. 2, 15, 16. and xiii. 3. Judg. ii. 22. and iii. 1, 4. Job xxiii. 10. Psal. lxxvi. 10, 11. Ezek. iii. 20. Dan. xii. 10. Zech. xiii. 9. Matth. viii. 19, 20. and xviii. 21, 22. Luke i. 35. 1 Cor. xi. 19. 2 Cor. viii. 8. Jam. i. 12. 1 Pet. iv. 12. 1 John ii. 19. Heb. xi. 17. Rev. iii. 10.

† “ One way of sin is exception enough against mens salvation, though their temptations be great. Some persons delight in iniquity; they take pleasure in rudeness, and intemperate practices: but there be others, that do not delight in sin; when they can handsomely avoid it, they do not chuse it; except they be under some great necessity, they will not do it. They are afraid to sin; they think it is dangerous, and have some care to avoid it: but sometimes they force themselves to sin; they are reduced to difficulties, and cannot tell how well to avoid it; it is a dangerous thing not to do it. If Naaman do not bow himself in the house of Rimmon, the king will be in a rage with him, take away his office, it may be take away his life, and so he complies; 2 Kings v. 18.—So Jeroboam forced himself to set up the calves at Dan and Bethel: he thought that if the people went up to Jerusalem to worship, they would return to Rehoboam, and kill him; therefore he must think of some expedient to deliver himself in this strait; 1 Kings xii. 27, 28. He was driven by appearing necessity to take this wicked course.—So the stony-ground hearers were willing to retain the profession of the true religion; but the case was such, that they thought they could not well do it: Matt. xiii. 21. “ When tribulation or persecution ariseth because of the word, by and by he is “ offended.”

have been observed already. Nor can they ever fall away so, as habitually to be more engaged in other things, than in the business of religion; or so that it should become their way and manner to serve something else more than God; or so as flatly to cease to serve God, with such earnestness and diligence, as still to be habitually devoted and given up to the business of religion; unless those words of Christ can fall to the ground, *Ye cannot serve two masters*, and those of the apostle, *He that will be a friend of the world, is the enemy of God*; and unless a saint can change his God, and yet be a true saint. Nor can a true saint ever fall away so, that it shall come to this, that ordinarily there shall be no remarkable difference in his walk and behaviour since his conversion from what was before. They that are truly converted are new men, new creatures; new, not only within, but without; they are sanctified throughout, in spirit, soul and body; old things are passed away, all things are become new; they have new hearts, and new eyes, new ears, new tongues, new hands, new feet; *i. e.* a new conversation and practice; and they walk in newness of life, and continue to do so to the end of life. And they that fall away, and cease visibly to do so, it is a sign they never were risen with Christ.† And especially when mens opinion of their being converted,

“offended.” So Achan and Gehazi had singular opportunities to get an estate; if they live twenty years they are not like to have such an advantage; and they force themselves to borrow a point, and break the law of God. They lay a necessity on estate, and liberty, and life, but not upon obedience. If a man be willing to serve God in ordinary cases, but excuse himself when there be great difficulties, he is not godly. It is a small matter to serve God when men have no temptation; but Lot was holy in Sodom. Noah was righteous in the old world. Temptations try men, but they do not force men to sin: and grace will establish the heart in a day of temptation. They are blessed that do endure temptation, James i. 12. But they are cursed that fall away in a day of temptation.” *Stoddard's Way to know sincerity and hypocrisy.*

† “Hence we learn what verdict to pass and give in, concerning those men that decay and fall off from the Lord. They never had oil in the vessel; never had a dram of grace in their heart. Thus 1 John ii. 19. “If they had been of us, they would no doubt have continued with us.” It seems they were such men, which were so eminent and excellent, as that there were no brands nor marks upon them, to give notice to the churches, that they were marked out for apostasy; but were only discovered to be unsound, by their apostasy; and this was argument good enough.” *Shepard's Parable, Part I, p. 226.*

converted, and so in a safe estate, is the very cause of their coming to this, it is a most evident sign of their hypocrisy. † And that, whether their falling away be into their former sins, or into some new kind of wickedness, having the corruption of nature only turned into a new channel, instead of its being mortified. As when persons that think themselves converted, though they do not return to former profaneness and lewdness; yet from the high opinion they have of their experiences, graces, and privileges, gradually settle more and more in a self-righteous and spiritually proud temper of mind, and in such a manner of behaviour and conversation, as naturally arises therefrom. When it is thus with men, however far they may seem to be from their former evil practices, this alone is enough to condemn them, and may render their last state far worse than the first. For this seems to be the very case of the Jews of that generation that Christ speaks of, Matth. xii. 43, 44, 45. who having been awakened by John the baptist's preaching, and brought to a reformation of their former licentious courses, whereby the unclean spirit was as it were turned out, and the house swept and garnished; yet being *empty* of God and of grace, became full of themselves, and were exalted in an exceeding high opinion of their own righteousness and eminent holiness, and became habituated to an answerably self-exalting behaviour; so changing the sins of publicans and harlots, for those of the Pharisees; and in the issue, had seven devils, worse than the first.

Thus

H h h

† “When a man's rising is the cause of his fall, or seals a man up in his fall, or at least the cause through his corruption. *Ex. Gr.* Time was, a man lived a loose, careless, carnal life; by the ministry of some word, or reading of some book, or speaking with some friend, he comes to be convinced of his misery and woful condition, and sees no good nor grace in himself; he hath been even hitherto deceived: at last he comes to get some light, some taste, some sorrows, some heart to use the means, some comfort, and mercy, and hope of life: and when it is thus with him, now he falls; he grows full and falls; and this rising is the cause of his fall; his light is darkness and death to him; and grows to a form of knowledge; his rising makes him fall to formality, and then to profaneness; and so his tasting satisfies him; his sorrows empty his heart of sorrow for sin; and his sorrows for his falls harden his heart in his falls; and all the means of recovering him harden him.—Look as it is in diseases; if the physic and meat turns to be poison, then there is no hope of recovery; a man is sick to death now. 'The faint's little measure makes him forget what is behind.' *Shepard's Parable*, Part I. p. 226.

Thus I have explained what exercise and fruit I mean, when I say, that gracious affections have their exercise and fruit in Christian practice.

The reason why gracious affections have such a tendency and effect, appears from many things that have already been observed, in the preceding parts of this discourse.

The reason of it appears from this, that *gracious affections do arise from those operations and influences which are spiritual*, and that the inward principle from whence they flow, is something *divine*, a communication of God, a participation of the divine nature, Christ living in the heart, the holy Spirit dwelling there, in union with the faculties of the soul, as an internal vital principle, exerting his own proper nature, in the exercise of those faculties. This is sufficient to shew us why true grace should have such activity, power and efficacy. No wonder that which is divine, is powerful and effectual; for it has omnipotence on its side. If God dwells in the heart, and be vitally united to it, he will shew that he is a God, by the efficacy of his operation. Christ is not in the heart of a saint, as in a sepulchre, or as a dead saviour, that does nothing; but as in his temple, and as one that is alive from the dead. For in the heart where Christ savingly is, there he lives, and exerts himself after the power of that endless life, that he received at his resurrection. Thus every saint that is the subject of the benefit of Christ's sufferings, is made to know and experience the power of his resurrection. The Spirit of Christ, which is the immediate spring of grace in the heart, is all life, all power, all act; 2 Cor. ii. 4.—“In demonstration of the Spirit, and of power.” 1 Theff. i. 5. “Our gospel came not unto you in word only, but also in power, and in the Holy Ghost.” 1 Cor. iv. 20. “The kingdom of God is not in word, but in power.” Hence saving affections, though oftentimes they do not make so great a noise and show as others; yet have in them a secret solidity, life and strength, whereby they take hold of, and carry away the heart, leading it into a kind of captivity, 2 Cor. x. 5. gaining a full and stedfast determination of the will for God and holiness, Psal. cx. 3. “Thy people shall be willing in the day of thy power.” And thus it is that holy affections have a governing power in the course of a man's life. A statue may look very much like a real man, and a beautiful man; yea it may have, in its appearance to the eye, the resemblance of a very lively, strong and active man; but
yet

yet an inward principle of life and strength is wanting; and therefore it does nothing, it brings nothing to pass, there is no action or operation to answer the shew. False discoveries and affections do not go deep enough, to reach and govern the spring of mens actions and practice. The seed in stony ground had not deepness of earth, and the root did not go deep enough to bring forth fruit. But gracious affections go to the very bottom of the heart, and take hold of the very inmost springs of life and activity. Herein chiefly appears the power of true godliness, viz. in its being effectual in practice. And the efficacy of godliness in this respect, is what the apostle has respect to, when he speaks of the power of godliness, 2 Tim. iii. 5. as is very plain; for he there is particularly declaring, how some professors of religion would notoriously fail in the practice of it, and then in the 5th verse observes, that in being thus of an unholy practice, they deny the power of godliness, though they have the form of it. Indeed the power of godliness is exerted in the first place within the soul, in the sensible, lively exercise of gracious affections there. Yet the principal evidence of this power of godliness, is in those exercises of holy affections that are practical, and in their being practical; in conquering the will, and conquering the lusts and corruptions of men, and carrying men on in the way of holiness, through all temptation, difficulty and opposition.

Again, the reason why gracious affections have their exercise and effect in Christian practice, appears from this, (which has also been before observed,) that *the first objective ground of gracious affections, is the transcendently excellent and amiable nature of divine things, as they are in themselves, and not any conceived relation they bear to self, or self-interest.* This shews why holy affections will cause men to be holy in their practice universally. What makes men partial in religion is, that they seek themselves, and not God, in their religion, and close with religion, not for its own excellent nature, but only to serve a turn. He that closes with religion only to serve a turn, will close with no more of it than he imagines serves that turn: but he that closes with religion, for its own excellent and lovely nature, closes with all that has that nature: he that embraces religion for its own sake, embraces the whole of religion. This also shews why gracious affections will cause men to practice religion perseveringly, and at all times. Religion may alter greatly in process of time, as to its consistence with mens

private interest, in many respects ; and therefore he that complies with it only from selfish views, is liable, in change of times, to forsake it : but the excellent nature of religion, as it is in itself, is invariable ; it is always the same, at all times, and through all changes ; it never alters in any respect.

The reason why gracious affections issue in holy practice, also further appears from the kind of excellency of divine things, that it has been observed is the foundation of all holy affections, *viz. their moral excellency, or the beauty of their holiness*. No wonder that a love to holiness, for holiness sake, inclines persons to practise holiness, and to practise every thing that is holy. Seeing holiness is the main thing that excites, draws, and governs all gracious affections, no wonder that all such affections tend to holiness. That which men love, they desire to have and to be united to, and possessed of. That beauty which men delight in, they desire to be adorned with. Those acts which men delight in, they necessarily incline to do.

And what has been observed of that *divine teaching and leading of the Spirit of God*, which there is in gracious affections, shews the reason of this tendency of such affections to an universally holy practice. For as has been observed, the Spirit of God in this his divine teaching and leading, gives the soul a natural relish of the sweetness of that which is holy, and of every thing that is holy, so far as it comes in view, and excites a disrelish and disgust of every thing that is unholy.

The same also appears from what has been observed of the nature of that *spiritual knowlege*, which is the foundation of all holy affection, as consisting in *a sense and view of that excellency in divine things, which is supreme and transcendent*. For hereby these things appear above all others, worthy to be chosen and adhered to. By the sight of the transcendent glory of Christ, true Christians see him worthy to be followed ; and so are powerfully drawn after him ; they see him worthy that they should forsake all for him : by the sight of that superlative amiableness, they are thoroughly disposed to be subject to him, and engaged to labour with earnestness and activity in his service, and made willing to go through all difficulties for his sake. And it is the discovery of this divine excellency of Christ, that makes them constant to him : for it makes a deep impression upon their minds, that they cannot forget him ; and they will follow him whithersoever he goes, and it is in vain for any to endeavor to draw them away from him.

The reason of this practical tendency and issue of gracious affections, further appears, from what has been observed of such affections being *attended with a thorough conviction of the judgment, of the reality and certainty of divine things*. No wonder that they who were never thoroughly convinced that there is any reality in the things of religion, will never be at the labor and trouble of such an earnest, universal and persevering practice of religion, through all difficulties, self-denials and sufferings, in a dependence on that, which they are not convinced of. But on the other hand, they who are thoroughly convinced of the certain truth of those things, must needs be governed by them in their practice; for the things revealed in the word of God are so great, and so infinitely more important than all other things, that it is inconsistent with the human nature, that a man should fully believe the truth of them, and not be influenced by them above all things, in his practice.

Again, the reason of this expression and effect of holy affections in the practice, appears from what has been observed of *a change of nature, accompanying such affections*. Without a change of nature, mens practice will not be thoroughly changed. Until the tree be made good, the fruit will not be good. Men do not gather grapes of thorns, nor figs of thistles. The swine may be washed, and appear clean for a little while, but yet, without a change of nature, he will still wallow in the mire. Nature is a more powerful principle of action, than any thing that opposes it: though it may be violently restrained for a while, it will finally overcome that which restrains it: it is like the stream of a river, it may be stopped a while with a dam, but if nothing be done to dry the fountain, it will not be stopped always; it will have a course, either in its old channel, or a new one. Nature is a thing more constant and permanent, than any of those things that are the foundation of carnal mens reformation and righteousness. When a natural man denies his lust, and lives a strict, religious life, and seems humble, painful and earnest in religion, it is not natural, it is all a force against nature; as when a stone is violently thrown upwards; but that force will be gradually spent; yet nature will remain in its full strength, and so prevails again, and the stone returns downwards. As long as corrupt nature is not mortified, but the principle left whole in a man, it is a vain thing to expect that it should not govern. But if the old nature

ture be indeed mortified, and a new and heavenly nature infused; then may it well be expected, that men will walk in newness of life, and continue to do so to the end of their days.

The reason of this practical exercise and effect of holy affections, may also be partly seen, from what has been said of that *spirit of humility, which attends them*. Humility is that wherein a spirit of obedience does much consist. A proud spirit is a rebellious spirit, but an humble spirit is a yieldable, subject, obediential spirit. We see among men, that the servant who is of a haughty spirit, is not apt in every thing to be submissive and obedient to the will of his master; but it is otherwise with that servant who is of a lowly spirit.

And that *lamb-like, dove-like spirit*, that has been spoken of, which accompanies all gracious affections, fulfils (as the apostle observes, Rom. xiii. 8, 9, 10. and Gal. v. 14.) all the duties of the second table of the law; wherein Christian practice does very much consist, and wherein the external practice of Christianity chiefly consists.

And the reason why gracious affections are attended with that strict, universal and constant obedience which has been spoken of, further appears, from what has been observed of that *tendernefs of spirit*, which accompanies the affections of true saints, causing in them so quick and lively a sense of pain, through the presence of moral evil, and such a dread of the appearance of evil.

And one great reason why the Christian practice which flows from gracious affections, is universal, and constant, and persevering, appears from what has been observed of those affections themselves, from whence this practice flows, being universal and constant, in all kinds of holy exercises, and towards all objects, and in all circumstances, and at all seasons, *in a beautiful symmetry and proportion*.

And much of the reason why holy affections are expressed and manifested in such an earnestness, activity, and engagedness and perseverance in holy practice, as has been spoken of, appears from what has been observed, of the spiritual appetite and longing after further attainments in religion, which evermore attends true affection, and does not decay, but increases as those affections increase.

Thus we see how the tendency of holy affections to such a Christian practice as has been explained, appears from each of those characteristics of holy affection, that have been before spoken of.

And

And this point may be further illustrated and confirmed, if it be considered, that the holy scriptures do abundantly place sincerity and soundness in religion, in making a full choice of God as our only Lord and portion, forsaking all for him, and in a full determination of the will for God and Christ, on counting the cost; in our hearts closing and complying with the religion of Jesus Christ, with all that belongs to it, embracing it with all its difficulties, as it were hating our dearest earthly enjoyments, and even our own lives, for Christ; giving up ourselves, with all that we have, wholly and for ever, unto Christ, without keeping back any thing, or making any reserve; or, in one word, in the great duty of *self-denial* for Christ; or in denying, *i. e.* as it were disowning and renouncing ourselves for him, making ourselves nothing that he may be all. See the texts to this purpose referred to in the margin*. Now surely having an heart to forsake all for Christ, tends to actually forsaking all for him, so far as there is occasion, and we have the trial. An having an heart to deny ourselves for Christ, tends to a denying ourselves in deed, when Christ and self-interest stand in competition. A giving up ourselves, with all that we have, in our hearts, without making any reserve there, tends to our behaving ourselves universally as his, as subject to his will, and devoted to his ends. Our hearts entirely closing with the religion of Jesus, with all that belongs to it, and as attended with all its difficulties, upon a deliberate counting the cost, tends to an universal closing with the same in act and deed, and actually going through all the difficulties that we meet with in the way of religion, and so holding out with patience and perseverance.

The tendency of grace in the heart to holy practice, is very direct, and the connection most natural, close, and necessary.

True

* Matth. v. 29, 30. Chap. vi. 24. Chap. viii. 19—22. Chap. iv. 18, to 22. Chap. x. 37, 38, 39. Chap. xiii. 44, 45, 46. Chap. xvi. 24, 25, 26. Chap. xviii. 8, 9. Chap. xix. 21, 27, 28, 29. Luke v. 27, 28. Chap. x. 42. Chap. xii. 33, 34. Chap. xiv. 16—20, 25, —33. Chap. xvi. 13. Acts iv. 34, 35. with Chap. v. 1—11. Rom. vi. 3—8. Gal. ii. 20. Chap. vi. 14. Phillip. iii. 7—10. Jam. i. 8, 9, 10. Chap. iv. 4. 1 John ii. 15. Rev. xiv. 4. Gen. xii. 1—4. with Heb. xi. 8, 9, 10. Gen. xxii. 12. and Heb. xi. 17. Chap. x. 24—27. Deut. xiii. 6. and Chap. xxxiii. 9. Ruth i. 6—16. with Psal. xlv. 10, 11. and 2 Sam. xv. 19—22. Psal. lxxiii. 25. Psal. xvi. 5, 6. Lam. iii. 24. Jer. x. 16.

True grace is not an unactive thing; there is nothing in heaven or earth of a more active nature; for it is life itself, and the most active kind of life, even spiritual and divine life. It is no barren thing; there is nothing in the universe that in its nature has a greater tendency to fruit. Godliness in the heart has as direct a relation to practice, as a fountain has to a stream, or as the luminous nature of the sun has to beams sent forth, or as life has to breathing, or the beating of the pulse, or any other vital act; or as a habit or principle of action has to action: for it is the very nature and notion of grace, that it is a principle of holy action or practice. Regeneration, which is that work of God in which grace is infused, has a direct relation to practice; for it is the very end of it, with a view to which the whole work is wrought: all is calculated and framed, in this mighty and manifold change wrought in the soul, so as directly to tend to this end; Eph. ii. 10. "For we are his workmanship, created in Christ Jesus unto good works." Yea it is the very end of the redemption of Christ; Tit. ii. 14. "Who gave himself for us, that he might redeem us from all iniquity, and purify unto himself a peculiar people, zealous of good works." 2 Cor. v. 15. "He died for all, that they which live, should not henceforth live unto themselves, but unto him who died for them, and rose again." Heb. ix. 14. "How much more shall the blood of Christ, who through the eternal Spirit, offered himself without spot to God, purge your conscience from dead works to serve the living God?" Col. i. 21, 22. "And you that were sometimes alienated, and enemies in your mind by wicked works, yet now hath he reconciled, in the body of his flesh through death, to present you holy and unblamable, and unreprouvable in his sight." 1 Pet. i. 18. "For as much as ye know that ye were not redeemed with corruptible things, as silver and gold, from your vain conversation."—Luke i. 74, 75. "That he would grant unto us, that we being delivered out of the hands of our enemies, might serve him without fear, in holiness and righteousness before him, all the days of our life." God often speaks of holy practice, as the end of that great typical redemption, the redemption from Egyptian bondage; as Exod. iv. 23. "Let my son go, that he may serve me." So chap. iv. 23. and vii. 16. and viii. 1, 20. and ix. 1, 13. and x. 3. And this is also declared to be the end of election; John xv. 16. "Ye have not chosen me, but I have chosen you, and ordained you, that you should go
" and

“ and bring forth fruit, and that your fruit should remain.” Eph. i. 4. “ According as he hath chosen us in him, before the foundation of the world, that we should be holy, and without blame before him in love.” Chap. ii. 10. “ Created unto good works, which God hath foreordained that we should walk in them.” Holy practice is as much the end of all that God does about his saints, as fruit is the end of all the husbandman does about the growth of his field or vineyard: as the matter is often represented in scripture; Matth. iii. 10. chap. xiii. 8, 23—30, 38. chap. xxi. 19, 33, 34. Luke xiii. 6. John xv. 1, 2, 4, 5, 6, 8. 1 Cor. iii. 9. Heb. vi. 7, 8. If. v. 1—8. Cant. viii. 11, 12. If. xxvii. 2, 3. † And therefore every thing in a true Christian is calculated to reach this end. This fruit of holy practice, is what every grace, and every discovery, and every individual thing, which belongs to Christian experience, has a direct tendency to. *

I i i

The

† “ To profess to know much is easy; but to bring your affections into subjection, to wrestle with lusts, to cross your wills and yourselves, upon every occasion, this is hard. The Lord looketh, that in our lives we should be serviceable to him, and useful to men. That which is within, the Lord and our brethren are never the better for it: but the outward obedience, flowing thence, glorifieth God, and does good to men. The Lord will have this done. What else is the end of our planting and watering, but that the trees may be filled with sap? And what is the end of that sap, but that the trees may bring forth fruit? What careth the husbandman for leaves, and barren trees?” *Dr. Preston of the Church's Carriage.*

* “ What is the end of every grace, but to mollify the heart, and make it pliable to some command or other? Look, how many commandments, so many graces there are in virtue and efficacy, although not so many several names are given them. The end of every such grace is to make us obedient: as the end of temperance is chastity, to bow the heart to these commands, *Be ye sober, &c. not in chambering and wantonness, &c.* When the Lord commandeth us not to be angry with our brother, the end of meekness, and why the Lord infuseth it, is to keep us from unadvised rash anger. So faith, the end of it is to take Jesus Christ, to make us obedient to the command of the gospel, which commands us to believe in him. So as all graces do join together, but to frame and fashion the soul to obedience; then so much obedience as is in your lives, so much grace in your hearts, and no more. Therefore ask your hearts, how subject you are to the Lord in your lives? It was the counsel that Francis Spira gave to them about him, faith he, Learn all of me to take heed of severing faith
and

The constant and indissoluble connection that there is between a Christian principle and profession in the true saints, and the fruit of holy practice in their lives, was typified of old in the frame of the golden candlestick in the temple. It is beyond doubt that that golden candlestick, with its seven branches and seven lamps, was a type of the church of Christ. The Holy Ghost himself, has been pleased to put that matter out of doubt, by representing his church by such a golden candlestick, with seven lamps, in the fourth chapter of Zechariah, and representing the seven churches of Asia by seven golden candlesticks, in the chapter of the Revelation. That golden candlestick in the temple was every where, throughout its whole frame, made with *knops and flowers*, Exod. xxv. 31. to the end, and chap. xxxvii. 17—24. The word translated *knop*, in the original signifies apple or pomegranate. There was a *knop and a flower, a knop and a flower*: where-ever there was a flower, there was an apple or pomegranate with it: the flower and the fruit were constantly connected, without fail. The flower contained the principles of the fruit, and a beautiful promising appearance of it; and it never was a deceitful appearance; the principle or shew of fruit had evermore real fruit attending it, or succeeding it. So it is in the church of Christ: there is the principle of fruit in grace in the heart; and there is an amiable profession, signified by the open flowers of the candlestick; and there is answerable fruit, in holy practice, constantly attending this principle and profession. Every branch of the golden candlestick, thus composed of golden apples and flowers, was crowned with a burning, shining lamp on the top of it. For it is by this means that the saints shine as lights in the world, by making a fair and good profession of religion, and having their profession evermore joined with answerable fruit in practice; agreeable to that of our Saviour, Matt. v. 15, 16. “Neither do men light a candle, and put it under a
“ bushel,

and obedience; I taught justification by faith, but neglected obedience; and therefore is this befallen me. I have known some godly men, whose comfort on their death-beds hath been not from the inward acts of their minds, which apart considered, might be subject to misapprehensions, but from the course of obedience in their lives, issuing thence. Let Christians look to it, that in all their conversation, as they stand in every relation, as scholars, tradesmen, husbands, wives, look to this, that when they come to die, they have been subject in all things. This will yield comfort.” *Dr. Preston's Church's Carriage.*

“ bushel, but on a candlestick, and it giveth light unto all that
 “ are in the house. Let your light so shine before men, that
 “ they may SEE YOUR GOOD WORKS, and glorify your Fa-
 “ ther which is in heaven.” A fair and beautiful profession,
 and golden fruits accompanying one another, are the amiable
 ornaments of the true church of Christ. Therefore we find
 that apples and flowers were not only the ornaments of the can-
 dlestick in the temple, but of the temple itself, which is a type
 of the church; which the apostle tells us, *is the temple of the*
living God. See 1 Kings vi. 18. “ And the cedar of the house
 “ within was carved with knops, and open flowers.” The or-
 naments and crown of the pillars, at the entrance of the tem-
 ple, were of the same sort: they were lilies and pomegranates,
 or flowers and fruits mixed together, 1 Kings vii. 18, 19. So
 it is with all those that are *as pillars in the temple of God, who*
shall go no more out, or never be ejected as intruders; as it is
 with all true saints; Rev. iii. 12. “ Him that overcometh,
 “ will I make a pillar in the temple of my God, and he shall
 “ go no more out.”

Much the same thing seems to be signified by the ornaments
 on the skirt of the ephod, the garment of Aaron the high priest;
 which were golden bells and pomegranates. That these skirts
 of Aaron’s garment represent the church, or the saints, (that
 are as it were the garment of Christ), is manifest, for they are
 evidently so spoken of, Psal. cxxxiii. 1, 2. “ Behold, how good
 “ and how pleasant it is, for brethren, to dwell together in unity!
 “ It is like the precious ointment upon the head, that ran down
 “ upon the beard, even Aaron’s beard, that went down to the
 “ skirts of his garments.” That ephod of Aaron signified the
 same with the seamless coat of Christ our great High Priest.
 As Christ’s coat had no seam, but was woven from the top
 throughout, so it was with the ephod, Exod. xxxix. 22. As
 God took care in his providence, that Christ’s coat should not
 be rent; so God took special care that the ephod should not be
 rent; Exod. xxviii. 32. and chap. xxxix. 23. The golden
 bells on this ephod, by their precious matter and pleasant sound,
 do well represent the good profession that the saints make; and
 the pomegranates, the fruit they bring forth. And as in the
 hem of the ephod, bells and pomegranates were constantly con-
 nected, as is once and again observed, there was *a golden bell*
and a pomegranate, a golden bell and a pomegranate, Exod.
 xxviii. 34. and chap. xxxix. 26: so it is in the true saints;
 their

their good profession and their good fruit, do constantly accompany one another: the fruit they bring forth in life, evermore answers the pleasant sound of their profession.

Again, the very same thing is represented by Christ, in his description of his spouse, Cant. vii. 2. "Thy belly is like an heap of wheat, set about with lilies." Here again are beautiful flowers, and good fruit, accompanying one another.—The lilies were fair and beautiful flowers, and the wheat was good fruit.

As this fruit of Christian practice is evermore found in true saints, according as they have opportunity and trial, so it is found in them only; none but true Christians do live such an obedient life, so universally devoted to their duty, and given up to the business of a Christian, as has been explained. All un sanctified men are *workers of iniquity*: they are of their father the devil, and the lusts of their father they will do. There is no hypocrite that will go through with the business of religion, and both begin and finish the tour: they will not endure the trials God is wont to bring on the professors of religion, but will turn aside to their crooked ways: they will not be thoroughly faithful to Christ in their practice, and follow him whithersoever he goes. Whatever lengths they may go in religion in some instances, and though they may appear exceeding strict, and mightily engaged in the service of God for a season; yet they are servants to sin; the chains of their old task-masters are not broken: their lusts yet have a reigning power in their hearts; and therefore to these masters they will bow down again.* Dan. xii. 10. "Many shall be purified, and
" made

* "No unregenerate man, though he go never so far, let him do never so much, but he lives in some one sin or other, secret or open, little or great. Judas went far, but he was covetous: Herod went far, but he loved his Herodias. Every dog hath his kennel; every swine hath his swill; and every wicked man his lust." *Shepard's Sincere convert*, 1st edition, p. 96.

"There is never an unbound heart in the world, but as they say of witches, they have some familiar that sucks them, so they have some lust that is beloved of them, some beloved there is they have given a promise to, never to forsake." *Shepard's Parable*, Part I. p. 15.

"No man that is married to the law, but his fig-leaves cover some nakedness. All his duties ever brood some lust. There is some one sin or other the man lives in; which either the Lord discovers, and he will

“made white, and tried: but the wicked will do wickedly: and none of the wicked shall understand.” If. xxvi. 10. “Let favor be shewed to the wicked, yet will he not learn righteousness: in the land of uprightness will he deal unjustly.” If. xxxv. 8. “And an high-way shall be there, and a way, and it shall be called the way of holiness; the unclean shall not pass over it.” Hof. xiv. 9. “The ways of the Lord are right, and the just shall walk in them: but the transgressors shall fall therein.” Job xxvii. 8, 9, 10. “What is the hope of the hypocrite?—Will he delight himself in the Almighty? will he always call upon God?” An un-sanctified.

will not part with, as the young man; or else is so spiritual, he cannot see all his life-time. Read through the strictest of all, and see this, Matt. xxii. “Painted sepulchres.” Paul that was blameless, yet (Eph. ii. 3. Tit. iii. 3.) *served divers lusts and pleasures*. And the reason is, the law is not the ministration of the spirit, 2 Cor. iii. 8, 9. which breaks off from every sin. There is no law that can give life, Gal. iii. 21. and hence many men have strong resolutions, and break all again. Hence men sin and sorrow, and pray again, and then go with more ease in their sin. Examine thyself; is there any living lust with thy righteousness? It is sure, it is a righteousness thou art married to, and never wert yet matched to Christ.” *Shepherd's Parable*, Part I. p. 19, 20.

“No hypocrite, though he closeth with Christ, and for a time grow up in knowledge of, and communion with Christ, but he hath at that time hidden lusts and thorns that overgrow his growings, and choke all at last, and in conclusion mediates a league between Christ and his lusts, and seeks to reconcile them together.” *Shepherd's Parable*, Part I. p. 109.

“—Their faith is in such a party, as never was yet thoroughly rent from sin. And here is the great wound of the most cunning hypocrites living.—Let a man be cast down as low as hell with sorrow, and lie under chains, quaking in apprehension of terror to come; let a man then be raised up to heaven in joy, not able to live; let a man reform and shine like an earthly angel; yet if not rent from lust, that either you did never see it, or if so, you have not followed the Lord to remove it, but proud, dogged, worldly, sluggish still, false in your dealings, cunning in your tradings, devils in your families, images in your churches; you are objects of pity now, and shall be of terror at the great day. For where sin remains in power, it will bring faith, and Christ, and joy into bondage and service of itself.” *Shepherd's Parable*, Part I. p. 125.

“Me thinks it is with the best hypocrites, as it is with divers old merchants: they prize and desire the gain of merchandize; but to
be

sanctified man may hide his sin, and may in many things and for a season refrain from sin ; but he will not be brought finally to renounce his sin, and give it a bill of divorce : sin is too dear to him, for him to be willing for that : “ Wickedness is sweet in his mouth ;” and therefore “ he hides it under his tongue ; he spares it, and forsakes it not ; but keeps it still within his mouth,” Job xx. 12, 13. Herein chiefly consists the straitness of the gate, and the narrowness of the way that leads to life ; upon the account of which, carnal men will not go in thereat, *viz.* that it is a way of utterly denying and finally renouncing all ungodliness, and so a way of *self-denial* or *self-renunciation*.
Many

be at the trouble to prepare the ship, to put themselves upon the hazards and dangers of the ship, to go and fetch the treasure that they prize, this they will never do. So many prize and desire earnestly the treasures of heaven ; but to be at the trouble of a heaven voyage to fetch this treasure, to pass through the valley of Baca, tears, temptations, the powers of darkness, the breaches, opposition and contradictions of a sinful unbelieving heart, good and evil report, to pass from one depth and wave to another, this the best hypocrite fails in : and hence loses all at last. And this I conceive to be one of the great differences between the strong desires and esteems of hypocrites and saints.—Look, as it is with men that have two trades, or two shops ; one is as much as ever they can follow or tend ; they are forced at last to put off one, and they must neglect one ; so here.—That spirit of sloth and slumber, which the Lord ever leaves the best hypocrite to, so mightily oppresses all their senses, that they cannot use effectually all means to accomplish their ends. And hence a man desires the end, but has it not ; Prov. xiii. 4.” *Shepard’s Parable*, Part I. p. 150, 151.

“ Read through all the scripture ; constantly, never any hypocrites but they had this brand, Matth. vii. 22. “ You workers of iniquity.” *Shepard’s Parable*, Part I. p. 195.

“ A carnal man may hit upon some good duty that God commands, and refrain some sin that God forbids ; but to go through, he cannot : to take up reproach and disgrace, to lose his credit, to forsake his friends, to lose honor, and riches, and pleasures ; this he will not do, until he be humbled.” *Dr. Preston on Paul’s conversion*.

“ So it is with men, because they want humiliation. Therefore their *profession* and *they* do not continue, but part willingly one from another. They will do some things, but not all things : and they will forego some things, but not all things. And therefore our Saviour saith, Luke xiv. “ He that will not forsake all for my sake, is not worthy of me.” He is not worth the saving, that prizes not me above all things whatsoever. And a man will not prize Christ, nor forsake all things for Christ, until he be humbled.” *ibid.*

Many natural men, under the means that are used with them, and God's strivings with them to bring them to forsake their sins, do by their sins, as Pharaoh did by his pride and covetousness, which he gratified by keeping the children of Israel in bondage, when God strove with him to bring him to let the people go. When God's hand pressed Pharaoh sore, and he was exercised with fears of God's future wrath, he entertained some thoughts of letting the people go, and promised he would do it; but from time to time he broke his promises, when he saw there was respite. When God filled Egypt with thunder and lightning, and the fire ran along the ground, then Pharaoh is brought to confess his sin with seeming humility, and to have a great resolution to let the people go, *Exod. ix. 27, 28.* "And Pharaoh sent, and called for Moses and Aaron, and said unto them, I have sinned this time: the Lord is righteous, and I and my people are wicked: intreat the Lord (for it is enough) that there be no more mighty thunderings and hail; and I will let you go, and ye shall stay no longer." So sinners are sometimes by thunders and lightnings, and great terrors of the law, brought to a seeming work of humiliation, and to appearance to part with their sins; but are no more thoroughly brought to a disposition to dismiss them, than Pharaoh was to let the people go. Pharaoh in the struggle that was between his conscience and his lusts, was for contriving that God might be served, and he enjoy his lusts that were gratified by the slavery of the people, too. Moses insisted that Israel's God should be served and sacrificed to: Pharaoh was willing to consent to that; but would have it done without his parting with the people; *Go sacrifice to your God in the land,* says he, *Exod. viii. 25.* So, many sinners are for contriving to serve God, and enjoy their lusts too. Moses objected against complying with Pharaoh's proposal, that serving God, and yet continuing in Egypt under their task-masters, did not agree together, and were inconsistent one with another; (there is no serving God, and continuing slaves to such enemies of God at the same time.) After this Pharaoh consented to let the people go, provided they would not go far away: he was not willing to part with them finally, and therefore would have them within reach. So do many hypocrites with respect to their sins. Afterwards Pharaoh consented to let the *men* go, if they would leave the *women* and *children*, *Exod. x. 8, 9, 10.* And then after that, when God's hand was yet harder upon him, he consented that they

they should go, even *women* and *children*, as well as *men*, provided they would leave their *cattle* behind : but he was not willing to let them go, and all that they had, Exod. x. 24. So it oftentimes is with sinners ; they are willing to part with some of their sins, but not all ; they are brought to part with the more gross acts of sin, but not to part with their lusts, in lesser indulgencies of them. Whereas we must part with all our sins, little and great ; and all that belongs to them, *men women, children, and cattle* : they must all be let go, with *their young, and with their old, with their sons, and with their daughters, with their flocks, and with their herds, there must not be an hoof left behind* ; as Moses told Pharaoh, with respect to the children of Israel. At last, when it came to extremity, Pharaoh consented to let the people all go, and all that they had ; but he was not stedfastly of that mind ; he soon repented, and pursued after them again : and the reason was, that those lusts of pride and covetousness, that were gratified by Pharaoh's dominion over the people, and the gains of their service, were never really mortified in him, but only violently restrained. And thus, he being guilty of backsliding, after his seeming compliance with God's commands, was destroyed without remedy. Thus there may be a forced parting with ways of disobedience to the commands of God, that may seem to be universal, as to what appears, for a little season : but because it is a mere force, without the mortification of the inward principle of sin, they will not persevere in it ; but will return as the dog to his vomit ; and so bring on themselves dreadful and remediless destruction. There were many false disciples in Christ's time, that followed him for a while ; but none of them followed him to the end ; but some on one occasion, and some on another, went back and walked no more with him.*

From

* “ The counterfeit and common grace of foolish virgins, after some time of glorious profession, will certainly go out and be quite spent. It consumes in the using, and shining, and burning.—Men that have been most forward, decay ; their gifts decay, life decays.—It is so, after some time of profession : for at first, it rather grows than decays and withers : but afterward they have enough of it, it withers and dies.—The Spirit of God comes upon many hypocrites, in abundant and plentiful measure of awakening grace ; it comes upon them, as it did upon Balaam, and as it is in overflowing waters, which spread far, and grow very deep, and fill many empty places,
—Though

From what has been said, it is manifest, that Christian practice, or a holy life, is a *great and distinguishing sign* of true and saving grace. But I may go further, and assert, that it is the *chief* of all the signs of grace, both as an evidence of the sincerity of professors unto others, and also to their own consciences.

But then it is necessary that this be rightly taken, and that it be well understood and observed, in what sense and manner Christian practice is the *greatest sign* of grace. Therefore, to set this matter in a clear light, I will endeavour particularly and distinctly to prove, that Christian practice is the *principal sign* by which Christians are to judge, both of their own and others sincerity of godliness; withal observing some things that are needful to be particularly noted, in order to a right understanding of this matter.

K k k

1. I

—Though it doth come upon them so, yet it doth never rest within, so as to dwell there, to take up an eternal mansion for himself.—Hence it doth decay by little and little; until at last it is quite gone. As ponds filled with rain-water, which comes upon them; not spring-water, that riseth up within them; it dries up by little and little, until quite dry.” *Shepard’s Parable*, Part II. p. 58, 59.

“Some men may apprehend Christ, neither out of fear of misery, nor only to preserve some sin; but God lets in light and heat of the blessed beams of the glorious gospel of the Son of God: and therefore there is mercy, rich, free, sweet, for damned, great, vile sinners: Good Lord, saith the soul, what a sweet ministry, word, God, and gospel is this! and there rests. This was the frame of the stony-ground; which heard the word, and received it with joy, and for a time believed. And this is the case of thousands, that are much affected with the promise and mercy of Christ, and hang upon free grace for a time: but as it is with sweet smells in a room, they continue not long; or as flowers, they grow old and withered, and then fall. In time of temptation, lust, and world, and sloth is more sweet than Christ, and all his gospel is.” *Shepard’s Parable*, Part II. p. 168.

“Never any carnal heart, but some root of bitterness did grow up at last in this soil. *Shepard’s Parable*, Part I. p. 195.

“We shall see in experience: take the best professors living; though they may come, as they and others judged, to the Lord, and follow the Lord; yet they will in time depart.—The Spirit never was given effectually to draw them; nor yet to keep them,” *Shepard’s Parable*, Part I. p. 205.

1. I shall consider Christian practice and an holy life, as a manifestation and sign of the sincerity of a professing Christian, *to the eye of his neighbours* and brethren.

And that this is the *chief sign* of grace in this respect, is very evident from the word of God. Christ, who knew best how to give us rules to judge of others, has repeated it and inculcated it, that we should know them by their fruits : Matth. vii. 16. "Ye shall know them by their fruits." And then after arguing the point, and giving clear reasons why it must needs be, that mens fruits must be the chief evidence of what sort they are, in the following verses, he closes by repeating the assertion ; vers. 20. "Wherefore by their fruits ye shall know them." Again chap. xii. 33. "Either make the tree good, and his fruit good ; or else make the tree corrupt, and his fruit corrupt." As much as to say, it is a very absurd thing, for any to suppose that the tree is good, and yet the fruit bad, that the tree is of one sort, and the fruit of another ; for the proper evidence of the nature of the tree is its fruit. Nothing else can be intended by that last clause in the verse, *For the tree is known by its fruit*, than that the tree is chiefly known by its fruit, that this is the main and most proper diagnostic by which one tree is distinguished from another. So Luke vi. 44. "Every tree is known by his own fruit." Christ no where says, Ye shall know the tree by its leaves or flowers, or ye shall know men by their talk, or ye shall know them by the good story they tell of their experiences, or ye shall know them by the manner and air of their speaking, and emphasis and pathos of expression, or by their speaking feelingly, or by making a very great show by abundance of talk, or by many tears and affectionate expressions, or by the affections ye feel in your hearts towards them : but by *their fruits shall ye know them ; the tree is known by its fruit ; every tree is known by its own fruit*. And as this is the evidence that Christ has directed us mainly to look at in others, in judging of them, so it is the evidence that Christ has mainly directed us to give to others, whereby they may judge of us ; Matth. v. 16. "Let your light so shine before men, that others seeing your good works, may glorify your Father which is in heaven." Here Christ directs us to manifest our godliness to others. Godliness is as it were a light that shines in the soul : Christ directs that this light should not only shine within, but that it should *shine out before men*, that they may see it. But which way shall this be ? It is by your good works.

works. Christ doth not say, that others hearing your good words, your good story, or your patheticall expressions; but *that others seeing your good works, may glorify your Father which is in heaven.* Doubtless when Christ gives us a rule how to make our light shine, that others may have evidence of it, his rule is the best that is to be found. And the apostles do mention a Christian practice, as the principal ground of their esteem of persons as true Christians. As the apostle Paul, in the 6th chapter of Hebrews. There the apostle, in the beginning of the chapter, speaks of them that have great common illuminations, that have *been enlightened, and have tasted of the heavenly gift, and were made partakers of the Holy Ghost, and have tasted the good word of God, and the powers of the world to come, that afterwards fall away, and are like barren ground, that is nigh unto cursing, whose end is to be burned;* and then immediately adds in the 9th verse, (expressing his charity for the Christian Hebrews, as having that saving grace, which is better than all these common illuminations,) *But, beloved, we are persuaded better things of you, and things that accompany salvation; though we thus speak.* And then in the next verse, he tells them what was the reason he had such good thoughts of them: he does not say, that it was because they had given him a good account of a work of God upon their souls, and talked very experimentally; but it was their work, and labour of love; *for God is not unrighteous, to forget your work, and labour of love, which ye have shewed towards his name, in that ye have ministered to the saints, and do minister.* And the same apostle speaks of a faithful serving God in practice, as the proper proof to others of mens loving Christ above all, and preferring his honor to their private interest, Phil. ii. 21, 22. “all seek their own, not the things which are Jesus Christ’s: but ye know the proof of him, that as a son with the father, he hath served with me in the gospel.” So the apostle John expresses the same, as the ground of his good opinion of Gaius, 3 John 3—6. “For I rejoiced greatly when the brethren came and testified of the truth that is in thee.” But how did the brethren testify of the truth that was in Gaius? and how did the apostle judge of the truth that was in him? it was not because they testified that he had given them a good account of the steps of his experiences, and talked like one that felt what he said, and had the very language of a Christian: but they testified, *that he walked in the truth:* as it follows, *even as thou walkest*

walkest in the truth. I have no greater joy than to hear that my children walk in the truth. Beloved, thou dost faithfully whatsoever thou dost to the brethren, and to strangers; which have borne witness of thy charity before the church. Thus the apostle explains what the brethren had borne witness of, when they came and testified of his walking in the truth. And the apostle seems in this same place, to give it as a rule to Gaius how he should judge of others: in verse 10. he mentions one Diotrophes, that did not carry himself well, and led away others after him; and then in the 11th verse, he directs Gaius to beware of such, and not to follow them; and gives him a rule whereby he may know them, exactly agreeable to that rule Christ had given before, *by their fruits ye shall know them*; says the apostle, *Beloved, follow not that which is evil, but that which is good. He that doth good, is of God: but he that doth evil, hath not seen God.* And I would further observe, that the apostle James, expressly comparing that way of shewing others our faith and Christianity by our practice or works, with other ways of shewing our faith without works, or not by works, does plainly and abundantly prefer the former; James ii. 18. "Yea, a man may say, Thou hast faith, and I have works: shew me thy faith without thy works, and I will shew thee my faith by my works." A manifestation of our faith *without works*, or in a way diverse from works, is a manifestation of it in *words*, whereby a man professes faith. As the apostle says, verse 14. "What doth it profit, my brethren, though a man say he hath faith?"—Therefore here are two ways of manifesting to our neighbour what is in our hearts; one by what we *say*, and the other by what we *do*. But the apostle abundantly prefers the latter as the best evidence. Now certainly all accounts we give of ourselves in words, our saying that we have faith, and that we are converted, and telling the manner how we came to have faith, and the steps by which it was wrought, and the discoveries and experiences that accompanied it, are still but manifesting our faith by what we *say*; it is but shewing our faith by our *words*; which the apostle speaks of as falling vastly short of manifesting of it by what we *do*, and shewing our faith by our *works*.

And as the scripture plainly teaches, that practice is the best evidence of the sincerity of professing Christians; so reason teaches the same thing. Reason shews, that mens deeds are better and more faithful interpreters of their minds, than their words.

words. The common sense of all mankind, through all ages and nations, teaches them to judge of mens hearts chiefly by their practice, in other matters: as, whether a man be a loyal subject, a true lover, a dutiful child, or a faithful servant. If a man professes a great deal of love and friendship to another, reason teaches all men, that such a profession is not so great an evidence of his being a real and hearty friend, as his appearing a friend in deeds; being faithful and constant to his friend, in prosperity and adversity, ready to lay out himself, and deny himself, and suffer in his personal interest, to do him a kindness. A wise man will trust to such evidences of the sincerity of friendship, further than a thousand earnest professions and solemn declarations, and most affectionate expressions of friendship in words. And there is equal reason, why practice should also be looked upon as the best evidence of friendship towards Christ. Reason says the same that Christ said, in John xiv. 21. "He that hath my commandments, and keepeth them, he it is that loveth me." Thus if we see a man, who in the course of his life, seems to follow and imitate Christ, and greatly to exert and deny himself for the honor of Christ, and to promote his kingdom and interest in the world: reason teaches, that this is an evidence of love to Christ, more to be depended on, than if a man only says he has love to Christ, and tells of the inward experiences he has had of love to him, what strong love he felt, and how his heart was drawn out in love at such and such a time, when it may be there appears but little imitation of Christ in his behaviour, and he seems backward to do any great matter for him, or to put himself out of his way for the promoting of his kingdom, but seems to be apt to excuse himself, whenever he is called to deny himself for Christ. So if a man in declaring his experiences, tells how he found his heart weaned from the world, and saw the vanity of it, so that all looked as nothing to him, at such and such times, and professes that he gives up all to God, and calls heaven and earth to witness to it; but yet in his practice is violent in pursuing the world, and what he gets he keeps close, is exceeding loth to part with much of it to charitable and pious uses, it comes from him almost like his heart's blood. But there is another professing Christian that says not a great deal, yet in his behaviour appears ready at all times to forsake the world, whenever it stands in the way of his duty, and is free to part with it at any time, to promote religion and the good of his fellow creatures. Reason teaches,

teaches, that the latter gives far the most credible manifestation of an heart weaned from the world. And if a man appears to walk humbly before God and men, and to be of a conversation that favours of a broken heart, appearing patient and resigned to God under affliction, and meek in his behaviour amongst men; this is a better evidence of humiliation, than if a person only tells how great a sense he had of his own unworthiness, how he was brought to lie in the dust, and was quite emptied of himself, and see himself nothing and all over filthy and abominable, &c. &c. but yet acts as if he looked upon himself one of the first and best of saints, and by just right the head of all the Christians in the town, and is assuming, self-willed, and impatient of the least contradiction or opposition; we may be assured in such a case, that a man's practice comes from a lower place in his heart, than his profession. So (to mention no more instances) if a professor of Christianity manifests in his behaviour a pitiful tender spirit towards others in calamity, ready to bear their burdens with them, willing to spend his substance for them, and to suffer many inconveniencies in his worldly interest to promote the good of others souls and bodies; is not this a more credible manifestation of a spirit of love to men, than only a man's telling what love he felt to others at certain times, how he pitied their souls, how his soul was in travail for them, and how he felt a hearty love and pity to his enemies; when in his behaviour he seems to be of a very selfish spirit, close and niggardly, all for himself, and none for his neighbours, and perhaps envious and contentious? Persons in a pang of affection may think they have a willingness of heart for great things, to do much and to suffer much, and so may profess it very earnestly and confidently, when really their hearts are far from it. Thus many in their affectionate pangs, have thought themselves willing to be damned eternally for the glory of God. Passing affections easily produce words; and words are cheap; and godliness is more easily feigned in words than in actions. Christian practice is a costly laborious thing. The self-denial that is required of Christians, and the narrowness of the way that leads to life, does not consist in words, but in practice. Hypocrites may much more easily be brought to talk like saints, than to act like saints.

Thus it is plain, that Christian practice is the best sign or manifestation of the true godliness of a professing Christian, to the eye of his neighbours.

But

But then the following things should be well observed, that this matter may be rightly understood.

First, It must be observed, that when the scripture speaks of Christian practice, as the best evidence to others, of sincerity and truth of grace, a *profession of Christianity* is not excluded, but supposed. The rules mentioned, were rules given to the followers of Christ, to guide them in their thoughts of *professing Christians*, and those that offered themselves as some of their society, whereby they might judge of the truth of their *pretences*, and the sincerity of the *profession* they made; and not for the trial of heathens, or those that made no pretence to Christianity, and that Christians had nothing to do with. This is as plain as is possible in that great rule which Christ gives in the 7th of Matthew, "By their fruits ye shall know them." He there gives a rule how to judge of those that professed to be Christians, yea that made a very high profession, *false prophets who come in sheeps cloathing*, as ver. 15. So it is also with that of the apostle James, chap. ii. 18. "Shew me thy faith without thy works, and I will shew thee my faith by my works." It is evident, that both these sorts of persons, offering to give these diverse evidences of their faith, are professors of faith: this is implied in their offering each of them to give evidences of the faith they professed. And it is evident by the preceding verses, that the apostle is speaking of professors of faith in Jesus Christ. So it is very plain, that the apostle John, in those passages that have been observed in his third epistle, is speaking of professing Christians, though in these rules, the Christian practice of professors be spoken of as the greatest and most distinguishing sign of their sincerity in their profession, much more evidential than their profession itself; yet a profession of Christianity is plainly presupposed: it is not the main thing in the evidence, nor any thing distinguishing in it; yet it is a thing requisite and necessary in it. As the having an animal body, is not any thing distinguishing of a man, from other creatures, and is not the main thing in the evidence of human nature; yet it is a thing requisite and necessary in the evidence. So that if any man should say plainly that he was not a Christian, and did not believe that Jesus was the Son of God, or a person sent of God; these rules of Christ and his apostle do not at all oblige us to look upon him as a sincere Christian, let his visible practice and

virtues be what they will. And not only do these rules take no place with respect to a man that explicitly denies Christianity, and is a professed Deist, Jew, Heathen, or open infidel; but also with respect to a man that only forbears to make a profession of Christianity: because these rules were given us only to judge of professing Christians: fruits must be joined with open flowers; bells and pomegranates go together.

But here will naturally arise this inquiry, *viz.* When a man may be said to profess Christianity, or what profession may properly be called a profession of Christianity?

I answer in two things.

1. In order to a man's being properly said to make a profession of Christianity, there must undoubtedly be a profession of all that is necessary to his being a Christian, or of so much as belongs to the essence of Christianity. Whatsoever is essential in Christianity itself, the profession of that is essential in the profession of Christianity. The profession must be of the thing professed. For a man to profess Christianity, is for him to declare that he has it. And therefore so much as belongs to a thing, so as to be necessary in order to its being truly denominated *that* thing; so much is essential to the declaration of *that* thing, in order to its being truly denominated a declaration of *that* thing. If we take only a part of Christianity, and leave out a part that is essential to it, what we take is not Christianity; because something that is of the essence of it is wanting. So if we profess only a part, and leave out a part that is essential, that which we profess is not Christianity. Thus in order to a profession of Christianity, we must profess that we believe that Jesus is the Messiah; for this reason, because such a belief is essential to Christianity. And so we must profess, either expressly or implicitly, that Jesus satisfied for our sins, and other essential doctrines of the gospel, because a belief of these things also are essential to Christianity. But there are other things as essential to religion, as an orthodox belief; which it is therefore as necessary that we should profess, in order to our being truly said to profess Christianity. Thus it is essential to Christianity that we repent of our sins, that we be convinced of our own sinfulness, and that we are sensible we have justly exposed ourselves to God's wrath, and that our hearts do renounce all sin, and that we do with our whole hearts embrace Christ as our only Saviour, and that we love him above all, and are willing for his sake to forsake all, and

that

that we do give up ourselves to be entirely and for ever his; &c. Such things as these do as much belong to the essence of Christianity, as the belief of any of the doctrines of the gospel: and therefore the profession of them does as much belong to a Christian profession. Not that in order to a being professing Christians, it is necessary that there should be an explicit profession of every individual thing that belongs to Christian grace or virtue; but certainly, there must be a profession; either express or implicit, of what is of the essence of religion. And as to those things that Christians should *express* in their profession, we ought to be guided by the precepts of God's word, or by scripture-examples of public professions of religion, God's people have made from time to time. Thus they ought to profess their repentance of sin: as of old, when persons were initiated as professors, they came confessing their sins, manifesting their humiliation for sin, Matth. iii. 6. And the baptism they were baptized with, was called *the baptism of repentance*, Mark i. 3. And John, when he had baptized them; exhorted them to *bring forth fruits meet for repentance*, Matth. iii. 8. *i. e.* agreeable to that repentance which they had professed; encouraging them, that if they did so, they should escape the wrath to come, and be gathered as wheat into God's garner, Matth. iii. 7, 8, 9, 10, 12. So the apostle Peter says to the Jews, Acts ii. 38. "Repent and be baptized:" which shews, that repentance is a qualification that must be visible in order to baptism; and therefore ought to be publicly professed. So when the Jews that returned from captivity, entered publicly into covenant, it was with confession, or public profession of repentance of their sins, Neh. ix. 2. This profession of repentance should include or imply a profession of conviction; that God would be just in our damnation: see Neh. ix. 33. together with verse 35. and the beginning of the next chapter. They should profess their faith in Jesus Christ, and that they embrace Christ, and rely upon him as their Saviour; with their whole hearts, and that they do joyfully entertain the gospel of Christ. Thus Philip, in order to baptizing the eunuch; required that he should profess that he *believed with all his heart*: and they that were received as visible Christians, at that great outpouring of the Spirit, which began at the day of Pentecost, appeared *gladly to receive the gospel*; Acts ii. 41. "Then they that gladly received the word, were baptized: and the same day there were added unto them about three thousand

“souls.” They should profess that they rely only on Christ’s righteousness and strength, and that they are devoted to him, as their only Lord and Saviour, and that they rejoice in him as their only righteousness and portion. It is foretold, that all nations should be brought publicly to make this profession, *Is.* xlv. 22. to the end; “Look unto me, and be ye saved, all the ends of the earth; for I am God, and there is none else. I have sworn by myself, the word is gone out of my mouth in righteousness, and shall not return, that unto me every knee shall bow, every tongue shall swear. Surely, shall one say, In the Lord have I righteousness and strength: even to him shall men come, and all that are incensed against him shall be ashamed. In the Lord shall all the seed of Israel be justified, and shall glory.” They should profess to give up themselves entirely to Christ, and to God through him; as the children of Israel, when they publicly recognized their covenant with God; *Deut.* xxvi. 17. “Thou hast avouched the Lord this day to be thy God, and to walk in his ways, and to keep his statutes, and his commandments, and his judgments, and to hearken unto his voice.” They ought to profess a willingness of heart to embrace religion with all its difficulties, and to walk in a way of obedience to God universally and perseveringly; *Exod.* xix. 8, and xxiv. 3, 7. *Deut.* xxvi. 16, 17, 18. *2 Kings* xxiii. 3. *Neh.* x. 28, 29. *Psal.* cxix. 57, 106. They ought to profess, that all their hearts and souls are in these engagements to be the Lord’s, and forever to serve him; *2 Chron.* xv. 12, 13, 14. God’s people’s swearing to God, and swearing *by* his name, or *to* his name, as it might be rendered, (by which seems to be signified their solemnly giving up themselves to him in covenant, and vowing to receive him as their God, and to be entirely his, to obey and serve him,) is spoken of as a duty to be performed by all God’s visible Israel; *Deut.* vi. 13. and x. 20. *Psal.* lxiii. 11. *Is.* xix. 18. chap. xlv. 23, 24. compared with *Rom.* xiv. 11. and *Phil.* ii. 10, 11. *Is.* xlvi. 1, 2. and lxv. 15, 16. *Jer.* iv. 2. and v. 7. and xii. 16. *Hos.* iv. 15. and x. 4. Therefore, in order to persons being intitled to full esteem and charity, with their neighbours, as being sincere professors of Christianity; by those forementioned rules of Christ and his apostles, there must be a visibly holy life, with a profession, either expressing, or plainly implying such things as those which have been now mentioned. We are to *know them by their fruits*; that is, we are by their
fruits

fruits to know whether they be what they profess to be; not that we are to know by their fruits, that they have something in them, which they do not so much as pretend to.

And moreover,

2. That profession of these things, which is properly called a Christian profession, and which must be joined with Christian practice, in order to persons being intitled to the benefit of those rules, must be made (as to what appears) understandingly: that is, they must be persons that appear to have been so far instructed in the principles of religion, as to be in an ordinary capacity to understand the proper import of what is expressed in their profession. For sounds are no significations or declarations of any thing, any further than men understand the meaning of their own sounds.

But in order to persons making a proper profession of Christianity, such as the scripture directs to, and such as the followers of Christ should require, in order to the acceptance of the professors with full charity, as of their society; it is not necessary they should give an account of the particular steps and method, by which the Holy Spirit, sensibly to them, wrought and brought about those great essential things of Christianity in their hearts. There is no footsteps in the scripture of any such way of the apostles, or primitive ministers and Christians, requiring any such relation, in order to their receiving and treating others, as their Christian brethren, to all intents and purposes, or of their first examining them, concerning the particular method and order of their experiences. They required of them a profession of the things wrought; but no account of the manner of working was required of them. Nor is there the least shadow in the scripture of any such custom in the church of God, from Adam to the death of the apostle John.

I am far from saying, that it is not requisite that persons should give any sort of account of their experiences to their brethren. For persons to profess those things wherein the essence of Christianity lies, is the same thing as to profess that they *experience* those things. Thus for persons solemnly to profess, that, in a sense and full conviction of their own utter sinfulness, misery, and impotence, and totally undone state as in themselves, and their just desert of God's utter rejection and eternal wrath, without mercy, and the utter insufficiency of their own righteousness, or any thing in them, to satisfy divine
justice,

justice, or recommend them to God's favour, they do only and entirely depend on the Lord Jesus Christ, and his satisfaction and righteousness; that they do with all their hearts believe the truth of the gospel of Christ; and that in a full conviction and sense of his sufficiency and perfect excellency as a Saviour, as exhibited in the gospel, they do with their whole souls cleave to him, and acquiesce in him, as the refuge and rest of their souls, and fountain of their comfort; that they repent of their sins, and utterly renounce all sin, and give up themselves wholly to Christ, willingly subjecting themselves to him as their King; that they give him their hearts and their whole man; and are willing and resolved to have God for their whole and everlasting portion; and in a dependence on his promises of a future eternal enjoyment of him in heaven, to renounce all the enjoyments of this vain world, selling all for this great treasure and future inheritance, and to comply with every command of God, even the most difficult and self-denying, and devote their whole lives to God's service; and that in forgiveness of those that have injured them, and a general benevolence to mankind, their hearts are united to the people of Jesus Christ as their people, to cleave to them and love them as their brethren, and worship and serve God, and follow Christ in union and fellowship with them, being willing and resolved to perform all those duties that belong to them, as members of the same family of God and mystical body of Christ; I say, for persons solemnly to profess such things as these, as in the presence of God, is the same thing, as to profess that they are conscious to, or do *experience* such things in their hearts.

Nor is it what I suppose, that persons giving an account of their experience of particular exercises of grace, with the times and circumstances, gives no advantage to others in forming a judgment of their state; or that persons may not fitly be inquired of concerning these in some cases, especially cases of great importance, where all possible satisfaction concerning persons piety is especially to be desired and sought after, as in the case of ordination or approbation of a minister. It may give advantage in forming a judgment, in several respects; and among others, in this, that hereby we may be better satisfied, that the professor speaks honestly and understandingly, in what he professes; and that he does not make the profession in mere formality. In order to a profession of Christianity being accepted to any purpose, there ought to be good reason, from
the

the circumstances of the profession, to think, that the professor does not make such a profession out of a mere customary compliance with a prescribed form, using words without any distinct meaning, or in a very lax and ambiguous manner, as confessions of faith are often subscribed; but that the professor understandingly and honestly signifies what he is conscious of in his own heart; otherwise his profession can be of no significance, and no more to be regarded than the sound of things without life. But indeed (whatever advantage an account of particular exercises may give in judging of this) it must be owned, that the professor having been previously thoroughly instructed by his teachers, and giving good proof of his sufficient knowledge, together with a practice agreeable to his profession, is the best evidence of this.

Nor do I suppose, but that, if a person that is inquired of about particular passages, times and circumstances of his Christian experience, among other things, seems to be able to give a distinct account of the manner of his first conversion, in such a method as has been frequently observable in true conversion, so that things seem sensibly and distinctly to follow one another, in the order of time, according to the order of nature; it is an illustrating circumstance, that among other things, adds lustre to the evidence he gives his brethren of the truth of his experiences.

But the thing that I speak of as unscriptural, is the insisting on a particular account of the distinct method and steps, wherein the Spirit of God did sensibly proceed, in first bringing the soul into a state of salvation, as a thing requisite in order to receiving a professor into full charity as a real Christian; or so, as for the want of such relation, to disregard other things in the evidence persons give to their neighbours of their Christianity, that are vastly more important and essential.

Secondly, That we may rightly understand how Christian practice is the greatest evidence that others can have of the sincerity of a professing Christian, it is needful that what was said before, shewing what Christian practice is, should be borne in mind; and that it should be considered how far this may be visible to others. Merely that a professor of Christianity is what is commonly called an honest man, and a moral man, (*i. e.* we have no special transgression or iniquity to charge him with, that might bring a blot on his character,) is no great evidence

evidence of the sincerity of his profession. This is not *making his light shine before men*. This is not that *work and labour of love shewed towards Christ's name*, which gave the apostle such persuasion of the sincerity of the professing Hebrews, Heb. vi. 9, 10. It may be so, that we may see nothing in a man, *but that he may be a good man*, there may appear nothing in his life and conversation inconsistent with his being godly, and yet neither may there be any great positive evidence *that he is so*. But there may be great positive appearances of holiness in mens visible behaviour: their life may appear to be a life of the service of God: they may appear to follow the example of Jesus Christ, and come up in a great measure to those excellent rules in the 5th, 6th, and 7th chapters of Matthew, and 12th of Romans, and many other parts of the New Testament: there may be a great appearance of their being universal in their obedience to Christ's commands and the rules of the gospel. They may appear to be universal in the performance of the duties of the first table, manifesting the fear and love of God: and also universal in fulfilling rules of love to men, love to saints, and love to enemies; rules of meekness and forgiveness, rules of mercy and charity, and looking not only at our own things, but also at the things of others; rules of doing good to mens souls and bodies, to particular persons and to the public; rules of temperance and mortification, and of an humble conversation; rules of bridling the tongue, and improving it to glorify God and bless men, shewing that in their tongues is the law of kindness. They may appear to walk as Christians, in all places, and at all seasons, in the house of God, and in their families, and among their neighbours, on Sabbath-days, and every day, in business and in conversation, towards friends and enemies, towards superiors, inferiors, and equals. Persons in their visible walk may appear to be very earnestly engaged in the service of God and mankind, much to labour and lay out themselves in this work of a Christian, and to be very constant and steadfast in it, under all circumstances and temptations. There may be great manifestations of a spirit to deny themselves, and suffer for God and Christ, and the interest of religion, and the benefit of their brethren. There may be great appearances in a man's walk, of a disposition to forsake any thing, rather than to forsake Christ, and to make every thing give place to his honor. There may be great manifestations in a man's behaviour of such religion as this being his element, and of his plac-

cing the delight and happiness of his life in it; and his conversation may be such, that he may carry with him a sweet odour of Christian graces and heavenly dispositions, where-ever he goes. And when it is thus in the professors of Christianity, here is an evidence to others of their sincerity in their profession, to which all other manifestations are not worthy to be compared.

There is doubtless a great variety in the degrees of evidence that professors do exhibit of their sincerity, in their life and practice; as there is a variety in the fairness and clearness of accounts persons give of the manner and method of their experiences: but undoubtedly such a manifestation as has been described, of a Christian spirit in practice, is vastly beyond the fairest and brightest story of particular steps and passages of experience, that ever was told. And in general, a manifestation of the sincerity of a Christian profession in practice, is far better than a relation of experiences.

But yet,

Thirdly, It must be noted, agreeable to what was formerly observed, that no external manifestations and outward appearances whatsoever, that are visible to the world, are infallible evidences of grace. These manifestations that have been mentioned, are the best that mankind can have; and they are such as do oblige Christians entirely to embrace professors as saints, and love them and rejoice in them as the children of God, and are sufficient to give them as great satisfaction concerning them, as ever is needful to guide them in their conduct, or for any intent and purpose that needs to be answered in this world. But nothing that appears to them in their neighbour, can be sufficient to beget an absolute certainty concerning the state of his soul: for they see not his heart, nor can they see all his external behaviour; for much of it is in secret, and hid from the eye of the world: and it is impossible certainly to determine, how far a man may go in many external appearances and imitations of grace, from other principles. Though undoubtedly, if others could see so much of what belongs to mens practice, as their own consciences may see of it, it might be an infallible evidence of their state, as will appear from what follows.

Having thus considered Christian practice as the *best evidence* of the sincerity of professors *to others*, I now proceed,

2. To observe, that the scripture also speaks of Christian practice as a distinguishing and sure evidence of grace to *persons own consciences*. This is very plain in 1 John ii. 3. "Hereby we do know that we know him, if we keep his commandments." And the testimony of our consciences, with respect to our good deeds, is spoken of as that which may give us assurance of our own godliness; 1 John iii. 18, 19. "My little children, let us not love in word, neither in tongue, but in deed, (in the original it is ΕΡΓΩ *in work*,) and in truth. And hereby we know that we are of the truth, and shall assure our hearts before him." And the apostle Paul, in Heb. vi. speaks of *the work and labor of love*, of the Christian Hebrews, as that which both gave him a persuasion that they had something above the highest common illuminations, and also as that evidence which tended to give them the highest assurance of hope concerning themselves; vers. 9, &c. "But, beloved, we are persuaded better things of you, and things that accompany salvation, though we thus speak. For God is not unrighteous, to forget your work and labor of love, which ye have shewed toward his name, in that ye have ministered to his saints, and do minister. And we desire that every one of you do shew the same diligence, to the full assurance of hope unto the end." So the apostle directs the Galatians to examine their behaviour or practice, that they might have rejoicing in themselves in their own happy state; Gal. vi. 4. "Let every man prove his own work, so shall he have rejoicing in himself, and not in another." And the Psalmist says, cxix. 6. "Then shall I not be ashamed, when I have respect unto all thy commandments;" *i. e.* then shall I be bold, and assured, and stedfast in my hope. And in that of our Saviour, Matt. vii. 19, 20. "Every tree that bringeth not forth good fruit, is hewn down and cast into the fire. Wherefore by their fruits ye shall know them." Though Christ gives this firstly, as a rule by which we should judge of others, yet in the words that next follow he plainly shews, that he intends it also as a rule by which we should judge ourselves; *Not every one that saith unto me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdom of heaven: but he that DOETH THE WILL of my Father which is in heaven. Many will say to me in that day, Lord, Lord, &c.—And then will I profess unto them, I never knew you: depart from me, YE THAT WORK INIQUITY. Therefore, whosoever heareth these sayings of mine, and DOETH them, I will*

I will liken him unto a wise man which built his house upon a rock.—And every one that heareth these sayings of mine, and BOTH THEM NOT, *shall be likened unto a foolish man which built his house upon the sand.* I shall have occasion to mention other texts that shew the same thing, hereafter.

But for the greater clearness in this matter, I would *first*, shew how Christian practice, doing good works, or keeping Christ's commandments, is to be taken, when the scripture represents it as a sure sign to our own consciences, that we are real Christians. And, *secondly*, will prove, that this is the chief of all evidences that men can have of their own sincere godliness.

First, I would shew how Christian practice, or keeping Christ's commandments, is to be taken, when the scripture represents it as a sure evidence to our own consciences, that we are sincere Christians.

And here I would observe, that we cannot reasonably suppose, that when the scripture in this case speaks of good works, good fruit, and keeping Christ's commandments, that it has respect merely to what is external, or the motion and action of the body, without including any thing else, having no respect to any aim or intention of the agent, or any act of his understanding or will. For consider mens actions so, and they are no more good works or acts of obedience, than the regular motions of a clock; nor are they considered as the actions of the men, or any human actions at all. The actions of the body, taken thus, are neither acts of obedience, nor disobedience; any more than the motions of the body in a convulsion. But the obedience and fruit that is spoken of, is the obedience and fruit of the man; and therefore not only the acts of the body, but the obedience of the soul, consisting in the acts and practice of the soul. Not that I suppose, that when the scripture speaks, in this case, of gracious works, and fruit, and practice, that in these expressions is included all inward piety and holiness of heart, both principle and exercise, both spirit and practice: because then, in these things being given as signs of a gracious principle in the heart, the same thing would be given as a sign of itself, and there would be no distinction between root and fruit. But only the gracious exercise, and holy act of the soul is meant, and given as the sign of the holy principle, and good estate. Neither is every kind of inward

exercise of grace meant ; but the practical exercise, that exercise of the soul, and exertion of inward holiness, which there is in an obediential act ; or that exertion of the mind, and act of grace, which issues and terminates in what they call the imperate acts of the will ; in which something is directed and commanded by the soul to be done, and brought to pass in practice.

Here, for a clearer understanding, I would observe, that there are two kinds of exercises of grace. 1. There are those that some call *immanent* acts ; that is, those exercises of grace that remain within the soul, that begin and are terminated there, without any immediate relation to any thing to be done outwardly, or to be brought to pass in practice. Such are the exercises of grace, which the saints often have in *contemplation*: when the exercise that is in the heart, does not directly proceed to, or terminate in any thing beyond the thoughts of the mind ; however they may tend to practice (as all exercises of grace do) more remotely. 2. There is another kind of acts of grace, that are more strictly called *practical*, or effective exercises ; because they immediately respect something to be done. They are the exertions of grace in the commanding acts of the will, directing the outward actions. As when a saint gives a cup of cold water to a disciple, in and from the exercise of the grace of charity ; or voluntarily endures persecution, in the way of his duty, immediately from the exercise of a supreme love to Christ. Here is the exertion of grace producing its effect in outward actions. These exercises of grace are practical and productive of good works, not only in this sense, that they are of a *productive nature*, (for so are all exercises of true grace,) but they are the *producing* acts. This is properly the exercise of grace in the act of the will ; and this is properly the practice of the soul. And the soul is the immediate actor of no other practice but this : the motions of the body follow from the laws of union between the soul and body, which God, and not the soul has fixed, and does maintain. The act of the soul, and the exercise of grace, that is exerted in the performance of a good work, is the good work itself, so far as the soul is concerned in it, or so far as it is the soul's good work. The determinations of the will, are indeed our very actions, so far as they are properly ours, as Dr. Doddridge observes.* In this practice of the soul, is included the aim
and

* Scripture doctrine of salvation, Sermon I. p. 11.

and intention of the soul which is the agent. For not only should we not look on the motions of a statue, doing justice or distributing alms by clock-work, as any acts of obedience to Christ in that statue; but neither would any body call the voluntary actions of a man, externally and materially agreeable to a command of Christ, by the name of obedience to Christ, if he had never heard of Christ, or any of his commands, or had no thought of his commands in what he did.— If the acts of obedience and good fruits spoken of, be looked upon, not as mere motions of the body, but as acts of the soul; the whole exercise of the spirit of the mind, in the action, must be taken in, with the end acted for, and the respect the soul then has to God, &c. otherwise they are no acts of denial of ourselves, or obedience to God, or service done to him, but something else. Such effective exercises of grace as these that I have now described, many of the martyrs have experienced in a high degree. And all true saints live a life of such acts of grace as these; as they all live a life of gracious works, of which these operative exertions of grace are the life and soul. And this is the obedience and fruit that God mainly looks at, as he looks at the soul, more than the body; as much as the soul, in the constitution of the human nature, is the superior part. As God looks at the obedience and practice of the man, he looks at the practice of the soul; for the soul is the man in God's sight, *For the Lord seeth not as man seeth, for he looketh on the heart.*

And thus it is, that obedience, good works, good fruit, are to be taken, when given in scripture as a sure evidence to our own consciences of a true principle of grace; even as including the obedience and practice of the soul, as preceding and governing the actions of the body. When practice is given in scripture as the main evidence of our true Christianity to others, then is meant that in our practice which is visible to them, even our outward actions: but when practice is given as a sure evidence of our real Christianity to our own consciences, then is meant that in our practice which is visible to our own consciences; which is not only the motion of our bodies, but the exertion and exercise of the soul, which directs and commands that motion; which is more directly and immediately under the view of our own consciences, than the act of the body. And that this is the intent of the scripture, not only does the nature and reason of the thing shew, but it is plain by the
 scripture

scripture itself. Thus it is evident, that when Christ, at the conclusion of his sermon on the mount, speaks of *doing* or practising those sayings of his, as the grand sign of professors being true disciples, without which he likens them to a man that built his house upon the sand, and with which, to a man that built his house upon a rock; he has a respect, not only to the outward behaviour, but to the inward exercise of the mind in that behaviour: as is evident by observing what those preceding sayings of his are, that he refers to, when he speaks of our doing or practising them; and we shall find they are such as these; *Blessed are the poor in spirit; blessed are they that mourn; blessed are the meek; blessed are they that do hunger and thirst after righteousness; blessed are the merciful; blessed are the pure in heart; whosoever is angry with his brother without a cause, &c. whosoever looketh on a woman to lust after her, &c. love your enemies; take no thought for your life,* and others of the like nature, which imply inward exercises: and when Christ says, John xiv. 21. "He that hath my commandments, and keepeth them, he it is that loveth me;" he has evidently a special respect to that command several times repeated in the same discourse, (which he calls, by way of eminence, *his commandment*,) *that they should love one another, as he had loved them:* (See chap. xiii. 34, 35. and chap. xv. 10, 12, 13, 14.) But this command respects chiefly an exercise of the mind or heart, though exerted in practice. So when the apostle John says, 1 John ii. 3. "Hereby we do know that we know him, if we keep his commandments;" he has plainly a principal respect to the same command, as appears by what follows, verse 7—11. and 2d Epist. verse 5, 6. and when we are told in scripture that men shall at the last day be judged *according to their works*, and *all shall receive according to the things done in the body*; it is not to be understood only of outward acts; for if so, why is God so often spoken of as searching the hearts and trying the reins, *that he may render to every one according to his works?* as Rev. ii. 23. "And all the churches shall know that I am he which searcheth the reins and hearts: and I will give unto every one according to his works." Jer. xvii. 9, 10. "I the Lord search the heart, I try the reins, even to give every man according to his ways, and according to the fruit of his doings." But if by *his ways, and the fruit of his doings*, is meant only the actions of his body, what need of *searching the heart and reins*, in order to know them? Hezekiah in his sickness

sicknefs pleads his practice as an evidence of his title to God's favour, as including, not only his outward actions, but what was in his heart, If. xxxviii. 3. "Remember now, O Lord, I beseech thee, how I have walked before thee in truth, and with a perfect heart."

Though in this great evidence of sincerity that the scripture gives us, what is inward is of greatest importance; yet what is outward is included and intended, as connected with the practice exertion of grace in the will, directing and commanding the actions of the body. And hereby are effectually cut off all pretensions that any man can have to evidences of godliness, who externally lives wickedly; because the great evidence lies in that inward exercise and practice of the soul, which consists in the act of the will, commanding outward acts. But it is known, that these commanding acts of the will are not one way, and the actions of the bodily organs another: for the unalterable law of nature is, that they should be united, as long as soul and body are united, and the organs are not so destroyed as to be incapable of those motions that the soul commands. Thus it would be ridiculous for a man to plead, that the commanding act of his will was to go to the public worship, while his feet carry him to a tavern or brothel-house; or that the commanding act of his will was to give such a piece of money he had in his hand to a poor beggar, while his hand at the same instant kept it back, and held it fast.

Secondly, I proceed to shew, that Christian practice, taken in the sense that has been explained, is *the chief* of all the evidences of a saving sincerity in religion, to the consciences of the professors of it, much to be preferred to the method of the first convictions, enlightenings, and comforts in conversion, or any immanent discoveries or exercises of grace whatsoever, that begin and end in contemplation. * The evidence of this appears by the following arguments.

Argument

* "Look upon John, Christ's beloved disciple and bosom companion; he had received the anointing to know him that is true, "and he knew that he knew him," 1 John ii. 3. But how did he know that? He might be deceived; (as it is strange to see what a melancholy fancy will do, and the effects of it; as honest men are reputed to have weak brains, and never saw the depths of the secrets of God;) what is his *last* proof? *Because we keep his commandments.*" *Shepard's Parable*, Part I. p. 131.

"A

Argument I. Reason plainly shews, that those things which put it to the proof what men will actually cleave to and prefer in their practice, when left to follow their own choice and inclinations, are the proper trial what they do really prefer in their hearts. Sincerity in religion, as has been observed already, consists in setting God highest in the heart, in chusing him before other things, in having a heart to sell all for Christ, &c.—But a man's actions are the proper trial what a man's heart prefers. As for instance, when it is so that God and other things come to stand in competition, God is as it were set before a man on one hand, and his worldly interest or pleasure on the other, (as it often is so in the course of a man's life), his behaviour in such case, in actually cleaving to the one and forsaking the other, is the proper trial which he prefers. Sincerity consists in forsaking all for Christ in heart; but to forsake all for Christ in heart, is the very same thing as to have an heart to forsake all for Christ; but certainly the proper trial whether a man has an heart to forsake all for Christ, is his being actually put to it, the having Christ and other things coming in competition, that he must actually or practically cleave

to

“ A man may know his present union to the Lord Jesus, by a work; 1 John ii. 4. “ He that saith I know him, and keeps not his commandments, is a liar.”—Yes, that is true negatively; but may a man, ought a man, to see or know his union positively by this? *Ans.* *vers.* 5. Many said they did know and love the Lord, but *he that keeps his words.*—O they are sweet! It is heaven to cleave to him in every command; it is death to depart from any command: *hereby know we that we are in him.* If it were possible to ask of angels, how they know they are not devils, they would answer, the Lord's will is ours.” *Shepard's Parable, Part I. p. 134.*

“ If the question be, Whom doth the Lord Jesus love? you need not go to heaven for it, the word is nigh thee, *Those that love Christ.* Who are those? *Those that keep his commandments.*” *Shepard's Parable, Part I. p. 138.*

“ Will you have Christ sit in heaven, and not look that he subdue your lusts by the work of his grace, and so sway your hearts? You despise his kingdom then. Do you seek for pardon in the blood of Christ, and never look for the virtue and end of that blood to wash you and make you without spot, &c.? You despise his priesthood and blood then. Do you look for Christ to do work for you, and you not do Christ's work, and bring forth fruit to him? You despise his honor then, John xv. 8. If I were to discover a hypocrite, or a false heart, this I would say, It is he that shall set up Christ, but loath his work.” *Shepard's Parable, Part I. p. 140.*

to one and forsake the other. To forsake all for Christ in heart, is the same thing as to have a heart to forsake all for Christ when called to it: but the highest proof to ourselves and others, that we have an heart to forsake all for Christ when called to it, is actually doing it when called to it, or so far as called to it. To follow Christ in heart, is to have an heart to follow him. To deny ourselves in heart for Christ, is the same thing as to have an heart to deny ourselves for him in fact. The main and most proper proof of a man's having an heart to any thing, concerning which he is at liberty to follow his own inclinations, and either to do or not to do as he pleases, is his doing of it. When a man is at liberty whether to speak or keep silence, the most proper evidence of his having an heart to speak, is his speaking. When a man is at liberty whether to walk or sit still, the proper proof of his having an heart to walk, is his walking. Godliness consists not in an heart to intend to do the will of God, but in an heart to do it. The children of Israel in the wilderness had the former, of whom we read, Deut. v. 27, 28, 29. "Go thou near, and
 "hear all that the Lord our God shall say; and speak thou
 "unto us all that the Lord our God shall speak unto thee, and
 "we will hear it, and do it. And the Lord heard the voice
 "of your words, when ye spake unto me; and the Lord said
 "unto me, I have heard the voice of the words of this people,
 "which they have spoken unto thee: they have well said all
 "that they have spoken. O that there were such an HEART
 "in them, that they would fear me, and keep all my command-
 "ments always, that it might be well with them, and with
 "their children for ever!" The people manifested that they had *a heart to intend to keep God's commandments*, and to be very forward in those intentions; but God manifests, that this was far from being the thing that he desired, wherein true godliness consists, even *an heart actually to keep them*.

It is therefore exceeding absurd, and even ridiculous, for any to pretend that they have a good heart, while they live a wicked life, or do not bring forth the fruit of universal holiness in their practice. For it is proved in fact, that such men do not love God above all. It is foolish to dispute against plain fact and experience. Men that live in ways of sin, and yet flatter themselves that they shall go to heaven, or expect to be received hereafter as holy persons, without a holy life and practice, act as though they expected to make a fool of their
 Judge.

Judge. Which is implied in what the apostle says, (speaking of mens doing good works, and living an holy life, thereby exhibiting evidence of their title to everlasting life), Gal. vi. 7. "Be not deceived; God is not mocked: for whatsoever a man soweth, that shall he also reap." As much as to say, "Do not deceive yourselves with an expectation of reaping life everlasting hereafter, if you do not sow to the Spirit here; it is in vain to think that God will be made a fool of by you, that he will be shammed and baffled with shadows instead of substance, and with vain pretences, instead of that good fruit which he expects, when the contrary to what you pretend, appears plainly in your life, before his face." In this manner the word *mock* is sometimes used in scripture. Thus Delilah says to Sampson, *Behold, thou hast mocked me, and told me lies*, Judges xvi. 10, 13. *i. e.* "Thou hast baffled me, as though you would make a fool of me, as if I might be easily turned off with any vain pretence, instead of the truth." So it is said that Lot, when he told his sons-in-law that God would destroy that place, *he seemed as one that mocked to his sons-in-law*, Gen. xix. 14, *i. e.* he seemed as one that would make a game of them, as though they were such credulous fools as to regard such bugbears. But the great Judge, whose eyes are as a flame of fire, will not be mocked or baffled with any pretences, without a holy life. If in his name men have prophesied and wrought miracles, and have had faith, so that they could remove mountains, and cast out devils, and however high their religious affections have been, however great resemblances they have had of grace, and though their hiding place has been so dark, and deep, that no human skill nor search could find them out; yet if they are *workers* or *practisers of iniquity*, they cannot hide their hypocrisy from their Judge; Job xxxiv. 22. "There is no darkness, nor shadow of death, where the **WORKERS OF INIQUITY** may hide themselves." Would a wise prince suffer himself to be fooled and baffled by a subject, who should pretend that he was a loyal subject, and should tell his prince that he had an entire affection to him, and that at such and such a time he had experience of it, and felt his affections strongly working towards him, and should come expecting to be accepted and rewarded by his prince, as one of his best friends on that account, though he lived in rebellion against him, following some pretender to his crown, and from time to time stirring up sedition against him? or would a master suffer himself

himself to be shammed and gulled by a servant, that should pretend to great experiences of love and honour towards him in his heart, and a great sense of his worthiness and kindness to him, when at the same time he refused to obey him, and he could get no service done by him?

Argument II. As reason shews, that those things which occur in the course of life, that put it to the proof whether men will prefer God to other things in practice, are the proper trial of the uprightness and sincerity of their hearts; so the same are represented as the proper trial of the sincerity of professors, in the scripture. There we find that such things are called by that very name, *trials or temptations*, (which I before observed are both words of the same signification.) The things that put it to the proof, whether men will prefer God to other things in practice, are the difficulties of religion, or those things which occur that make the practice of duty difficult and cross to other principles besides the love of God; because in them, God and other things are both set before men together, for their actual and practical choice; and it comes to this, that we cannot hold to both, but one or the other must be forsaken. And these things are all over the scripture called by the name of *trials or proofs*. * And they are called by this name, because hereby professors are tried and proved of what sort they be, whether they be really what they profess and appear to be; and because in them, the reality of a supreme love to God is brought to the test of experiment and fact; they are the proper proofs, in which it is truly determined by experience, whether men have a thorough disposition of heart to cleave to God or no; Deut. viii. 2. "And thou shalt remember all the way which the Lord thy God led thee these forty years in the wilderness, to humble thee, and to prove thee, whether thou wouldst keep his commandments, or no," Judg. ii. 21, 22. "I also will not henceforth drive out any from before them, of the nations which Joshua left when he died: that through them I may prove Israel, whether they will keep the way of the Lord." So chap. iii. 1, 4. and Exod. xvi. 4. And the scripture, when it calls these difficulties of religion by the name

N u u

of

* 2 Cor. viii. 2. Heb. xi. 36. 1 Pet. i. 7. Chap. iv. 12. Gen. xxii. 1. Deut. viii. 2, 16. Chap. xiii. 3. Exod. xv. 25. Chap. xvi. 4. Judges ii. 22. Chap. iii. 1, 4. Psal. lxxvi. 10, 11. Dan. xii. 10. Rev. iii. 10. Job xxiii. 10. Zech. xiii. 9. Jam. i. 12. Rev. ii. 10. Luke viii. 13. Acts xx. 19. Jam. i. 2, 3. 1 Pet. i. 6.

of temptations or trials, explains itself to mean thereby, the trial or experiment of their faith, Jam. i. 2, 3. "My brethren, count it all joy when ye fall into divers temptations; knowing this, that the trying of your faith worketh patience." 1 Pet. i. 6, 7. "Now for a season ye are in heaviness, through manifold temptations; that the trial of your faith being much more precious than of gold," &c. So the apostle Paul speaks of that expensive duty of parting with our substance to the poor, as the proof of the sincerity of the love of Christians, 2 Cor. viii. 8. And the difficulties of religion are often represented in scripture as being the trial of professors, in the same manner that the furnace is the proper trial of gold and silver; Psal. lxxvi. 10, 11. "Thou, O God, hast proved us: thou hast tried us, as silver is tried: thou broughtest us into the net; thou laidst affliction upon our loins." Zech. xiii. 9. "And I will bring the third part of them through the fire; and I will refine them as silver is refined; and I will try them as gold is tried." That which has the colour and appearance of gold, is put into the furnace to try whether it be what it seems to be, real gold or no. So the difficulties of religion are called trials, because they try those that have the profession and appearance of saints, whether they are what they appear to be, real saints. If we put true gold into the furnace, we shall find its great value and preciousness; so the truth and inestimable value of the virtues of a true Christian appear, when under these trials; 1 Pet. i. 7. "That the trial of your faith being much more precious than of gold that perisheth, might be found unto praise, and honour, and glory." True and pure gold will come out of the furnace in full weight: so true saints when tried come forth as gold, Job xxiii. 10. Christ distinguishes true grace from counterfeit by this, that it is *gold tried in the fire*, Rev. iii. 17, 18. So that it is evident that these things are called *trials* in scripture, principally as they try or prove the sincerity of professors. And from what has been now observed, it is evident that they are the most proper trial or proof of their sincerity; inasmuch as the very meaning of the word *trial*, as it is ordinarily used in scripture, is the difficulty occurring in the way of a professor's duty, as the trial or experiment of his sincerity. If *trial of sincerity* be the proper name of these difficulties of religion, then doubtless these difficulties of religion are *properly and eminently* the trial of sincerity; for they are doubtless eminently what

what they are called by the Holy Ghost: God gives things their name from that which is eminently their nature. And if it be so, that these things are the proper and eminent trial, proof or experiment of the sincerity of professors; then certainly the result of the trial or experiment, (that is, persons behaviour or practice under such trials,) is the proper and eminent evidence of their sincerity. For they are called trials or proofs, only with regard to the result, and because the effect is eminently the *proof, or evidence*. And this is the most proper proof and evidence to the conscience of those that are the subjects of these trials. For when God is said by these things *to try men, and prove them, to see what is in their hearts, and whether they will keep his commandments or no*; we are not to understand, that it is for his own information, or that he may obtain evidence himself of their sincerity; (for he needs no trials for his information:) but chiefly for their conviction, and to exhibit evidence to their consciences.† Thus when God is said to prove Israel by the difficulties they met with in the wilderness, and by the difficulties they met with from their enemies in Canaan, to know what was in their hearts, whether they would keep his commandments, or no; it must be understood, that it was to discover them to themselves, that they might know what was in their own hearts. So when God tempted or tried Abraham with that difficult command of offering up his son, it was not for his satisfaction, whether he feared God or no, but for Abraham's own greater satisfaction and comfort, and the more clear manifestation and comfort, and the more clear manifestation of the favour of God to him. When Abraham had proved faithful under this trial, God says to him, *Now I know that thou fearest God, seeing thou hast not withheld thy son, thine only son from me*. Which plainly implies, that in this practical exercise of Abraham's grace under this trial, was a clearer evidence of the truth of his grace, than ever was before; and the greatest evidence to Abraham's conscience; because God himself gives it to Abraham as such, for his comfort and rejoicing: and speaks of it to him, as what might be the greatest evidence to his conscience

† "I am persuaded, as Calvin is, that all the several trials of men, are to shew them to themselves, and to the world, that they be but counterfeits; and to make saints known to themselves, the better.—Rom. v. 5. *Tribulation works trial, and that hope*. Prov. xvii. 3. *If you will know whether it will hold weight, the trial will tell you.*" *Shepard's Parable*, Part I. p. 191.

science of his being upright in the sight of his Judge. Which proves what I say, that holy practice under trials is the highest evidence of the sincerity of professors to their own consciences. And we find that Christ from time to time took the same method to convince the consciences of those that pretended friendship to him, and to shew them what they were. This was the method he took with the rich young man, Matth. xix. 16, &c. He seemed to shew a great respect to Christ; he came kneeling to him, and called him *good master*, and made a great profession of obedience to the commandments; but Christ tried him by bidding him *go and sell all that he had, and give to the poor, and come and take up his cross, and follow him; telling him, that then he should have treasure in heaven.* So he tried another that we read of Matth. viii. 20. He made a great profession of respect to Christ: says he, *Lord, I will follow thee whithersoever thou goest.* Christ immediately put his friendship to the proof, by telling him that *the foxes had holes, and the birds of the air had nests, but that the Son of man had not where to lay his head.* And thus Christ is wont still to try professed disciples in general, in his providence. So the seed sown in every kind of ground, stony ground, thorny ground, and good ground, which in all appears alike, when it first springs up; yet is tried, and the difference made to appear, by the burning heat of the sun.

Seeing therefore that these are the things that God makes use of to try us, it is undoubtedly the surest way for us to pass a right judgment on ourselves, to try ourselves, by the same things. These trials of his are not for his information, but for ours; therefore we ought to receive our information from thence. The surest way to know our gold, is to look upon it and examine it in God's furnace, where he tries it for that end, that we may see what it is. If we have a mind to know whether a building stands strong or no, we must look upon it when the wind blows. If we would know whether that which appears in the form of wheat, has the real substance of wheat, or be only chaff, we must observe it when it is winnowed. If we would know whether a staff be strong, or a rotten broken reed, we must observe it when it is leaned on, and weight is borne upon it. If we would weigh ourselves justly, we must weigh ourselves in God's scales, that he makes use of to weigh us. * These trials

* Dr. Sibbs, in his *Bruised Reed*, says, "When Christ's will cometh in competition with any worldly loss or gain, yet if then, in that particular

trials in the course of our practice, are as it were the balances in which our hearts are weighed, or in which Christ and the world, or Christ and his competitors, as to the esteem and regard they have in our hearts, are weighed, or are put into opposite scales, by which there is opportunity to see which preponderates. When a man is brought to the dividing of paths, the one of which leads to Christ, and the other to the objects of his lusts, to see which way he will go, or is brought, and as it were set between Christ and the world, Christ on the right hand, and the world on the left, so that if he goes to one he must leave the other, to see which his heart inclines most to, or which preponderates in his heart; this is just the same thing as laying Christ and the world in two opposite scales: and his going to the one, and leaving the other, is just the same thing,

as

particular case, the heart will stoop to Christ, it is a true sign. For the truest trial of the power of grace, is in such particular cases as touch us nearest; for there our corruption maketh the greatest head. When Christ came home to the young man in the gospel, he lost a disciple of him."

Mr. Flavel speaks of a holy practice under trials, as the greatest evidence of grace. "No man (says he) can say what he is, whether his graces be true or false, until they be tried and examined by those things, which are to them as fire is to gold." *Touchstone of Sincerity*, Chap. 4. sect. 1. Again, speaking of great difficulties and sufferings in the way of duty, wherein a person must actually part with what is dearest of a worldly nature, or with his duty; he says, "That such sufferings as these will discover the falseness and rottenness of mens hearts, cannot be doubted; if you consider, that this is the fire designed by God for this very use and purpose, to separate the gold from the dross. So you will find it, 1 Pet. iv. 12. "Beloved, think "it not strange concerning the fiery trial that is to try you," *i. e.* The very design and aim of providence in permitting and ordering them, is to try you. Upon this account you find the hour of persecution (in a suitable notion) called the hour of temptation or probation, Rev. iii. 10. For then professors are sifted to the very bran, searched to the very bottom principles. This is "the day that burns "as an oven; all that do wickedly shall be as stubble," Mal. iv. 1. For in that day the predominant interest must appear and be discovered, it can be concealed no longer. "No man can serve two masters," saith Christ, Luke xvi. 13. A man may serve many masters, if they all command the same thing, or things subordinate to each other: but he cannot serve two masters, if their commands clash and interfere with each other; and such are the commands of Christ and the

flesh

as the sinking of one scale, and rising of the other. A man's practice therefore, under the trials of God's providence, are as much the proper experiment and evidence of the superior inclination of his heart, as the motion of the balance, with different weights, in opposite scales, is the proper experiment of the superior weight.

Argument III. Another argument, that holy practice, in the sense which has been explained, is the highest kind of evidence of the truth of grace to the consciences of Christians, is, that in practice, grace, in scripture style, is said to be *made perfect*, or to be *finished*. So the apostle James says, Jam. ii. 22. "Seest thou how faith wrought with his works, and by works was faith made perfect," or "finished?" (as the word in the original properly signifies.) So the love of God is said to be made perfect, or finished, in keeping his commandments; 1 John ii. 4,

flesh in a suffering hour:—thus the two interests come in full opposition. And now have but patience and wait a little, and you will discern which is predominant. A dog follows two men, while they both walk one way, and you know not which of the two is his master: stay but a little, until their path parts, and then you shall quickly see who is his master: so it is in this case." *Ibid.* Chap. viii. § 3. And in another chapter he says, "Great numbers of persons are deceived and destroyed by trusting to seeming untried grace. This was the miserable condition of the Laodicean professors: they reckoned themselves rich, but were really poor. all is not gold that glisters: their gold (as they accounted it) was never tried in the fire. If a man's whole estate lay in some precious stone, suppose a rich diamond, how is he concerned to have it thoroughly tried, to see whether it will bear a smart stroke with the hammer, or fly like a Bristol diamond!" *Ibid.* Chap. x. § 3. Again in the same place, "The promises of salvation are made over to tried grace, and that only as will endure the trial."

"The Lord will try you. God hath his trying times: and they were never sent, but to discover who were dross, who were gold. And the main end of all God's trials, is to discover this truth that I now am pressing upon you. Some have a thorough work; and now the trial discovers the truth, as in Abraham, Heb. xi. 17. Some have a superficial work, and they fall in trial, as in Saul; and it doth discover it was but an overly work. For this is the question God makes, Is it thorough or no? Ay, saith the carnal heart; Yes, saith a gracious heart. Hence it is strange to see what men will do when a trial comes." *Shepard's Parable*, Part I. p. 219.

"There is an hour of temptation which tries men, which will discover men indeed." *Shepard's Parable*, Part II. p. 60.

ii. 4, 5. "He that saith, I know him, and keepeth not his commandments, is a liar, and the truth is not in him: but whofo keepeth his word, in him verily is the love of God perfected." The commandment of Christ which the apostle has especial respect to, when he here speaks of our keeping his commandments, is (as I observed before) that great commandment of his, which respects deeds of love to our brethren; as appears by the following verses. Again, the love of God is said to be perfected, in the same sense, chap. iv. 12. "If we love one another, God dwelleth in us, and his love is perfected in us." Here doubtless the apostle has still respect to loving one another, in the same manner that he had explained in the preceding chapter, speaking of loving one another, as a sign of the love of God, vers. 17, 18. "Whofo hath this world's goods, and shutteth up his bowels, &c. how dwelleth the love of God in him? My little children, let us not love in word, neither in tongue, but in deed, (or in work,) and in truth." By thus *loving in work*, the apostle says *the love of God is perfected in us.*" Grace is said to be perfected or finished in holy practice, as therein it is brought to its proper effect, and to that exercise which is the end of the principle; the tendency and design of grace herein is reached, and its operation completed and crowned. As the tree is made perfect in the fruit: it is not perfected in the seed's being planted in the ground; it is not perfected in the first quickening of the seed, and in its putting forth root and sprout; nor is it perfected when it comes up out of the ground; nor is it perfected in bringing forth leaves; nor yet in putting forth blossoms: but when it has brought forth good ripe fruit, then it is perfected, therein it reaches its end, the design of the tree is finished: all that belongs to the tree is completed and brought to its proper effect in the fruit. So is grace in its practical exercises. Grace is said to be made perfect or finished in its work or fruit, in the same manner as it is said of sin, Jam. i. 15. "When lust hath conceived, it bringeth forth sin; and sin when it is finished, bringeth forth death." Here are three steps; *first*, sin in its principle or habit, in the being of lust in the heart; and *nextly*, here is its conceiving, consisting in the immanent exercises of it in the mind; and *lastly*, here is the fruit that was conceived actually brought forth, in the wicked work and practice. And this the apostle calls the *finishing* or *perfecting* of sin: for the word in the original is the same that is translated *perfected* in those forementioned places.

Now

Now certainly if it be so, if grace be in this manner made perfect, in its fruit, if these practical exercises of grace are those exercises wherein grace is brought to its proper effect and end, and the exercises wherein whatsoever belongs to its design, tendency and operation, is completed and crowned; then these exercises must be the highest evidences of grace, above all other exercises. Certainly the proper nature and tendency of every principle, must appear best and most fully, in its most perfect exercises, or in those exercises wherein its nature is most completely exerted, and its tendency most fully answered and crowned, in its proper effect and end. If we would see the proper nature of any thing whatsoever, and see it in its full distinction from other things; let us look upon it in the finishing of it. The apostle James says, *by works is faith made perfect*; and introduces this as an argument to prove that works are the chief evidence of faith, whereby the sincerity of the professors of faith is justified, James ii. And the apostle John, after he had once and again told us, that love was made perfect in keeping Christ's commandments, observes, 1 John iv. 18. "That perfect love casteth out fear;" meaning (at least in part) love made perfect in this sense; agreeable to what he had said in the foregoing chapter, "That by loving in deed, or work, we know that we are of the truth, and shall assure our hearts," vers. 18, 19.

Argument IV. Another thing which makes it evident that holy practice is the principal evidence that we ought to make use of in judging both of our own and others sincerity, is, that this evidence is above all others insisted on in scripture. A common acquaintance with the scripture, together with a little attention and observation, will be sufficient to shew to any one, that this is ten times more insisted on as a note of true piety, throughout the scripture, from the beginning of Genesis to the end of Revelations, than any thing else. And in the New Testament, where Christ and his apostles do expressly, and of declared purpose, lay down signs of true godliness, this is almost wholly insisted on. It may be observed, that Christ and his apostles do not only often say those things, in their discoursing on the great doctrines of religion, which do shew what the nature of true godliness must be, or from whence the nature and signs of it may be inferred by just consequence, and often occasionally mention many things which do appertain to godliness; but they do also often, of set purpose, give signs and marks

marks for the trial of professors, putting them upon trying themselves by the signs they give, introducing what they say with such like expressions as these; *By this you shall know that you know God: By this are manifest the children of God, and the children of the devil: He that hath this, builds on a good foundation; he that hath it not, builds on the sand: Hereby we shall assure our hearts: He is the man that loveth Christ, &c.* But I can find no place, where either Christ or his apostles do in this manner give signs of godliness, (though the places are many,) but where Christian practice is almost the only thing insisted on. Indeed in many of these places, *love to the brethren* is spoken of as a sign of godliness; and (as I have observed before) there is no one virtuous affection or disposition so often expressly spoken of as a sign of true grace, as our having love one to another: but then the scriptures explain themselves to intend chiefly this love as exercised and expressed in practice, or in deeds of love. So does the apostle John (who above all others insists on love to the brethren as a sign of godliness) most expressly explain himself, in that 1 John iii. 14, &c. “ We “ know that we have passed from death unto life, because we “ love the brethren: he that loveth not his brother, abideth “ in death—Whofo hath this world’s good, and seeth his brother have need, and shutteth up his bowels of compassion “ from him, how dwelleth the love of God in him? My little “ children, let us love, not in word, neither in tongue, but in “ deed, (*i. e.* in deeds of love,) and in truth. And hereby we “ know that we are of the truth, and shall assure our hearts “ before him.” So that when the scripture so much insists on our loving one another, as a great sign of godliness, we are not thereby to understand the immanent workings of affection which men feel one to another, so much as the soul’s practising all the duties of the second table of the law; all which the New Testament tells us again and again, a true love one to another comprehends; Rom. xiii. 8. and 10. Gal. v. 14. Matth. xxii. 39, 40. So that really, there is no place in the New Testament, where the declared design is to give signs of godliness, but that holy practice, and keeping Christ’s commandments, is the mark chosen out from all others to be insisted on. Which is an invincible argument, that it is the chief of all the evidences of godliness: unless we suppose, that when Christ and his apostles on design set themselves about this business of giving signs, by which professing Christians

in all ages might determine their state, they did not know how to choose signs so well as we could have chosen for them. But if we make the word of Christ our rule, then undoubtedly those marks which Christ and his apostles did chiefly lay down, and give to us, that we might try ourselves by them, those same marks we ought especially to receive, and chiefly to make use of, in the trial of ourselves. * And surely those things which Christ and his apostles chiefly insisted on in the rules they gave, ministers ought chiefly to insist on in the rules they give. To insist much on those things that the scripture insists little on, and to insist very little on those things on which the scripture insists much, is a dangerous thing; because it is going out of God's way, and is to judge ourselves, and guide others, in an unscriptural manner. God knew which way of leading and guiding souls was safest and best for them: he insisted so much on some things, because he knew it to be needful that they should be insisted on; and let other things more alone, as a wise God, because he knew it was not best for us, so much to lay the weight of the trial there. As the Sabbath was made for man, so the scriptures were made for man; and they are by infinite wisdom fitted for our use and benefit. We should therefore make them our guide in all things, in our thoughts of religion and of ourselves. And for us to make that great which the scripture makes little, and that little which the scripture makes great, tends to give us a monstrous idea of religion; and (at least indirectly and gradually) to lead us wholly away from the right rule, and from a right opinion of ourselves, and to establish delusion and hypocrisy.

Argument V. Christian practice is plainly spoken of in the word of God, as the main evidence of the truth of grace, not only to others, but to mens own consciences. It is not only more spoken of and insisted on than other signs, but in many places where it is spoken of, it is represented as the chief of all evidences. This is plain in the manner of expression from time to time. If God were now to speak from heaven to resolve our doubts concerning signs of godliness, and should give some particular

* "It is a sure rule, (says Dr. Preston,) that what the scriptures bestow much words on, we should have much thoughts on; and what the Holy Ghost urgeth most, we should prize most." *Church's Carriage.*

particular sign, that by it all might know whether they were sincerely godly or not, with such emphatical expressions as these, The man that has such a qualification or mark, *that is the man that is a true saint, that is the very man, by this you may know, this is the thing by which it is manifest who are saints and who are sinners, such men as these are saints indeed*; should not we look upon it as a thing beyond doubt, that this was given as a special, and eminently distinguishing note of true godliness? But this is the very case with respect to the sign of grace I am speaking of; God has again and again uttered himself in his word in this very manner, concerning Christian practice, as John xiv. "He that hath my commandments, and keepeth them, HE IT IS THAT LOVETH ME." This Christ in this place gives to the disciples, not so much to guide them in judging of others, but to apply to themselves for their own comfort after his departure, as appears by every word of the context. And by the way I would observe, that not only the emphasis with which Christ utters himself is remarkable, but also his so much insisting on, and repeating the matter, as he does in the context; vers. 15. "If ye love me, keep my commandments." Vers. 23. "If a man love me, he will keep my words." And vers. 24. "He that loveth me not, keepeth not my sayings." And in the next chapter over and over; vers. 2. "Every branch in me that beareth not fruit, he taketh away; and every branch that beareth fruit, he purgeth it." Vers. 8. "Herein is my Father glorified, that ye bear much fruit, so shall ye be my disciples." Vers. 14. "Ye are my friends, if ye do whatsoever I command you." We have this mark laid down with the same emphasis again, John viii. 31. "If ye continue in my word, THEN are ye my disciples INDEED." And again, 1 John ii. 3. "HEREBY we do know that we know him, if we keep his commandments." And vers. 5. "Whofo keepeth his word, IN HIM VERILY is the love of God perfected: HEREBY know we that we are in him." And chap. iii. 18, 19. "Let us love in deed, and in truth: HEREBY we know that we are of the truth." What is translated *hereby*, would have been a little more emphatical, if it had been rendered more literally from the original, BY THIS *we do know*.—And how evidently is holy practice spoken of as the grand note of distinction between the children of God and the children of the devil, in vers. 10. of the same chapter? "IN THIS the children of God are manifest,

“ manifest, and the children of the devil.” Speaking of a holy, and a wicked practice, as may be seen in all the context : as vers. 3. “ Every man that hath this hope in him, purifieth himself, even as he is pure.” Vers. 6—10. “ Whosoever abideth in him, sinneth not : whosoever sinneth, hath not seen him, neither known him. Little children, let no man deceive you : he that doth righteousness, is righteous, even as he is righteous : he that committeth sin, is of the devil.— Whosoever is born of God, sinneth not.—Whosoever doth not righteousness, is not of God.” So we have the like emphasis, 2 John 6. “ THIS IS LOVE, that we walk after his commandments :” that is, (as we must understand it,) *This is the proper evidence of love.* So 1 John v. 3. “ THIS IS THE LOVE OF GOD, that we keep his commandments.” So the apostle James speaking of the proper evidences of true and pure religion, says, Jam. i. 27. “ Pure religion and undefiled before God and the Father, IS THIS, To visit the fatherless and widows in their affliction, and to keep himself unspotted from the world.” We have the like emphatical expression used about the same thing in the Old Testament ; Job xxviii. 28. “ And unto man he said, Behold, the fear of the Lord, that is wisdom, and to depart from evil is understanding.” Jer. xxii. 15, 16. “ Did not thy father eat and drink, and do judgment and justice?—He judged the cause of the poor and needy : was not this to know me ? saith the Lord.” Psal. xxxiv. 11. &c. “ Come, ye children, unto me, and I will teach you the fear of the Lord.—Keep thy tongue from evil, and thy lips from speaking guile : depart from evil, and do good : seek peace and pursue it.” Psal. xv. at the beginning. “ Who shall abide in thy tabernacle ? who shall dwell in thy holy hill ? He that walketh uprightly, &c.” Psal. xxiv. 3, 4. “ Who shall ascend into the hill of the Lord ? and who shall stand in his holy place ? He that hath clean hands, and a pure heart, &c.” Psal. cxix. 1. “ Blessed are the undefiled in the way, who walk in the law of the Lord.” Vers. 6. “ Then shall I not be ashamed, when I have respect to all thy commandments.” Prov. viii. 13. “ The fear of the Lord is to hate evil.”

So the scripture never uses such emphatical expressions concerning any other signs of hypocrisy, and unsoundness of heart, as concerning an unholy practice. So Gal. vi. 7. “ Be not deceived ; God is not mocked : for whatsoever a man soweth,

“ eth,

"eth, that shall he also reap." 1 Cor. vi. 9, 10. "Be not
 "deceived: neither fornicators, nor idolaters, &c. shall in-
 "herit the kingdom of God." Eph. v. 5, 6. "For this ye
 "know, that no whoremonger, nor unclean person, &c. hath
 "any inheritance in the kingdom of Christ, and of God. Let
 "no man deceive you with vain words." 1 John iii. 7, 8.
 "Little children, let no man deceive you: he that doth righ-
 "teousness, is righteous, even as he is righteous: he that com-
 "mitteth sin, is of the devil." Chap. ii. 4. "He that saith,
 "I know him, and keepeth not his commandments, is a liar,
 "and the truth is not in him." And Chap. i. 6. "If we
 "say that we have fellowship with him, and walk in darkness,
 "we lie, and do not the truth." James i. 26. "If any man
 "among you seem to be religious, and bridleth not his tongue,
 "but deceiveth his own heart, this man's religion is vain."
 Chap. iii. 14, 15. "If ye have bitter envying and strife in
 "your hearts, glory not, and lie not against the truth. This
 "wisdom descendeth not from above, but is earthly, sensual,
 "devilish." Psal. cxxv. 5. "As for such as turn aside un-
 "to their crooked ways, the Lord shall lead them forth with
 "the workers of iniquity." Is. xxxv. 8. "An high way
 "shall be there, and it shall be called the way of holiness; the
 "unclean shall not pass over it." Rev. xxi. 27. "And there
 "shall in no wise enter into it, whatsoever worketh abomina-
 "tion, or maketh a lie." And in many places, *Depart from*
me, I know you not, ye that work iniquity.

Argument VI. Another thing which makes it evident, that
 holy practice is the chief of all the signs of the sincerity of pro-
 fessors, not only to the world, but to their own consciences, is,
 that this is the grand evidence which will hereafter be made
 use of, before the judgment-seat of God; according to which
 his judgment will be regulated, and the state of every professor
 of religion unalterably determined. In the future judgment,
 there will be an open trial of professors; and evidences will be
 made use of in the judgment. For God's future judging of
 men, in order to their eternal retribution, will not be his try-
 ing, and finding out, and passing a judgment upon the state of
 mens hearts, in his own mind; but it will be a declarative judg-
 ment: and the end of it will be, not God's forming a judgment
 within himself, but the manifestation of his judgment, and the
 righteousness of it, to mens own consciences, and to the world.
 And therefore the day of judgment is called *the day of the re-*
velation

revelation of the righteous judgment of God, Rom. ii. 5. And the end of God's future trial and judgment of men, as to the part that each one in particular is to have in the judgment, will be especially the clear manifestation of God's righteous judgment, with respect to him, to his conscience: as is manifest by Matth. xviii. 31. to the end. Chap. xx. 8—15. Chap. xxii. 11, 12, 13. Chap. xxv. 19—30. and ver. 35. to the end. Luke xix. 15—23. And therefore though God needs no medium, whereby to make the truth evident to himself, yet evidences will be made use of in his future judging of men. And doubtless the evidences that will be made use of in their trial, will be such as will be best fitted to serve the ends of the judgment; *viz.* the manifestation of the righteous judgment of God, not only to the world, but to mens own consciences. But the scriptures do abundantly teach us, that the grand evidences which the Judge will make use of in the trial, for these ends, according to which the judgment of every one shall be regulated, and the irreversible sentence passed, will be mens works, or practice, here in this world: Rev. xx. 12. "And I saw
 " the dead, small and great, stand before God; and the books
 " were opened:—and the dead were judged out of those things
 " which were written in the books, according to their works." So vers. 13. "And the sea gave up the dead which were in
 " it; and death and hell gave up the dead which were in them:
 " and they were judged every man according to their works." 2 Cor. v. 10. "For we must all appear before the judgment-
 " seat of Christ; that every one may receive the things done
 " in his body, whether it be good or bad." So mens practice is the only evidence that Christ represents the future judgment as regulated by, in that most particular description of the day of judgment, which we have in the holy bible, Matth. xxv. at the latter end. See also Rom. ii. 6—13. Jer. xvii. 10. Job xxxiv. 11. Prov. xxiv. 12. Jer. xxxii. 19. Rev. xxii. 12. Matth. xvi. 27. Rev. ii. 23. Ezek. xxxiii. 20. 1 Pet. i. 17. The Judge at the day of judgment, will not (for the conviction of mens own consciences, and to manifest them to the world,) go about to examine men, as to the method of their experiences, or set every man to tell his story of the manner of his conversion; but his works will be brought forth, as evidences of what he is, what he has done in darkness and in light: Eccl. xii. 14. "For God will bring every work into judgment,
 " with every secret thing, whether it be good, or whether it
 " be

“ be evil.” In the trial that professors shall be the subjects of, in the future judgment, God will make use of the same evidences, to manifest them to themselves and to the world, which he makes use of to manifest them, in the temptations or trials of his providence here, *viz.* their practice, in cases wherein Christ and other things come into actual and immediate competition. At the day of judgment, God, for the manifestation of his righteous judgment, will weigh professors in a balance that is visible. And the balance will be the same that he weighs men in now; which has been already described.

Hence we may undoubtedly infer, that mens works (taken in the sense that has been explained) are the highest evidences by which they ought to try themselves. Certainly that which our supreme Judge will chiefly make use of to judge us by, when we come to stand before him, we should chiefly make use of, to judge ourselves by.* If it had not been revealed in what manner, and by what evidence the Judge would proceed with us hereafter, how natural would it be for one to say, “ O that I knew what token God will chiefly look for and insist upon in the last and decisive judgment, and which he expects that all should be able to produce, who would then be accepted of him, and according to which sentence shall be passed; that I might know what token or evidence especially to look at and seek after now, as I would be sure not to fail then.” And seeing God has so plainly and abundantly revealed what this token or evidence is, surely if we act wisely, we shall regard it as of the greatest importance.

Now from all that has been said, I think it to be abundantly manifest, that Christian practice is the most proper evidence of the gracious sincerity of professors, to themselves and others; and the chief of all the marks of grace, the sign of signs, and evidence of evidences, that which seals and crowns all other signs.—I had rather have the testimony of my conscience, that I have such a saying of my supreme Judge on my side, as that, John xiv. 21. “ He that hath my commandments, and keepeth them, he it is that loveth me;” than the judgment
and

* “ That which God maketh a rule of his own judgment, as that by which he judgeth of every man, that is a sure rule for every man to judge himself by. That which we shall be judged by at the last day, is a sure rule to apply to ourselves for the present. Now by our obedience and works he judgeth us. “ He will give to every man according to his works.” *Dr. Preston’s Church’s Carriage.*

and fullest approbation of all the wise, sound, and experienced divines, that have lived this thousand years, on the most exact and critical examination of my experiences, as to the manner of my conversion. Not that there are no other good evidences of a state of grace but this. There may be other exercises of grace, besides these efficient exercises, which the saints may have in contemplation, that may be very satisfying to them: but yet this is the chief and most proper evidence. There may be several good evidences that a tree is a fig-tree; but the highest and most proper evidence of it is, that it actually bears figs. It is possible, that a man may have a good assurance of a state of grace, at his first conversion, before he has had opportunity to gain assurance, by this great evidence I am speaking of.—If a man hears that a great treasure is offered him, in a distant place, on condition that he will prize it so much, as to be willing to leave what he possesses at home, and go a journey for it, over the rocks and mountains that are in the way, to the place where it is; it is possible the man may be well assured, that he values the treasures to the degree spoken of, as soon as the offer is made him: he may feel a willingness to go for the treasure, within him, beyond all doubt: but yet, this does not hinder but that his actual going for it, is the highest and most proper evidence of his being willing, not only to others, but to himself. But then as an evidence to himself, his outward actions, and the motions of his body in his journey, are not considered alone, exclusive of the action of his mind, and a consciousness within himself, of the thing that moves him, and the end he goes for; otherwise his bodily motion is no evidence to him, of his prizing the treasure. In such a manner is Christian practice the most proper evidence of a saving value of *the pearl of great price, and treasure hid in the field.*

Christian practice is the sign of signs, in this sense, that it is the great evidence, which confirms and crowns all other signs of godliness. There is no one grace of the Spirit of God, but that Christian practice is the most proper evidence of the truth of it. As it is with the members of our bodies, and all our utensils, the proper proof of the soundness and goodness of them, is in the use of them; so it is with our graces, (which are given to be used in practice, as much as our hands and feet, or the tools with which we work, or the arms with which we fight,) the proper trial and proof of them is in their exercise in practice. Most of the things we use are serviceable to us,
and

and so have their serviceableness proved, in some pressure, straining, agitation, or collision. So it is with a bow, a sword, an ax, a saw, a cord, a chain, a staff, a foot, a tooth, &c. And they that are so weak, as not to bear the strain or pressure we need to put them to, are good for nothing. So it is with all the virtues of the mind. The proper trial and proof of them, is in being exercised under those temptations and trials that God brings us under, in the course of his providence, and in being put to such service as strains hard upon the principles of nature.

Practice is the proper proof of the true and saving *knowledge of God*: as appears by that of the apostle already mentioned, *Hereby do we know that we know him, that we keep his commandments.* It is in vain for us to *profess that we know God, if in works we deny him*, Tit. i. 16. And if we *know God, but glorify him not as God*; our knowledge will only condemn us, and not save us, Rom. i. 21. The great note of that knowledge which saves and makes happy, is, that it is practical; John xiii. 17. "If ye know these things, happy are ye if ye do them." Job. xxviii. 28. "To depart from evil is understanding."

Holy practice is the proper evidence of *repentance*. When the Jews professed repentance, when they came confessing their sins, to John, preaching the baptism of repentance for the remission of sins; he directed them to the right way of getting and exhibiting proper evidences of the truth of their repentance, when he said to them, "Bring forth fruits meet for repentance," Matth. iii. 8. Which was agreeable to the practice of the apostle Paul; see Acts xxvi. 20. Pardon and mercy are from time to time promised to him who has this evidence of true repentance, that he forsakes his sin; Prov. xxviii. 13. and Is. lv. 7. and many other places.

Holy practice is the proper evidence of a *saving faith*. It is evident that the apostle James speaks of works, as what does eminently justify faith, or (which is the same thing) justify the professors of faith, and vindicate and manifest the sincerity of their profession, not only to the world, but to their own consciences: as is evident by the instance he gives of Abraham, Jam. ii. 21—24. And in vers. 20. and 26. he speaks of the practical and working nature of faith, as the very life and soul of it; in the same manner, that the active nature and substance, which is in the body of a man, is the life and soul of that.

And if so, doubtless practice is the proper evidence of the life and soul of true faith, by which it is distinguished from a dead faith. For doubtless practice is the most proper evidence of a practical nature, and operation the most proper evidence of an operative nature.

Practice is the best evidence of a saving *belief of the truth*. That is spoken of as the proper evidence of the *truth's being in* a professing Christian, that *he walks in the truth*, 3 John 3. "I rejoiced greatly when the brethren came and testified of "the truth that is in thee, even as thou walkest in the truth."

Practice is the most proper evidence of a true *coming to Christ*, and *accepting of*, and *cloſing* with him. A true and saving coming to Christ, is (as Christ often teaches) a coming so, as to forsake all for him. And as was observed before, to forsake all for Christ in heart, is the same thing as to have a heart actually to forsake all; but the proper evidence of having a heart actually to forsake all, is indeed actually to forsake all, so far as called to it. If a prince make suit to a woman in a far country, that she would forsake her own people, and father's house, and come to him, to be his bride; the proper evidence of the compliance of her heart with the king's suit, is her actually forsaking her own people, and father's house, and coming to him. By this, her compliance with the king's suit is made perfect, in the same sense that the apostle James says, *by works is faith made perfect*.* Christ promises us eternal life, on condition of our coming to him: but it is such a coming as he directed the young man to, who came to enquire, *what he shall do, that he might have eternal life*; Christ bid him *go and sell all that he had, and come to him, and follow him*. If he had consented in his heart to the proposal, (and had therein come to Christ in his heart,) the proper evidence of it would have been

* "Our real taking of Christ, appears in our actions and works; If. i. 19. "If ye consent and obey, ye shall eat the good things of "the land." That is, If ye will consent to take JEHOVAH for your Lord and King: *if ye give consent*; there is the first thing: but that is not enough; *but if ye also obey*. The consent that standeth in the inward act of the mind, the truth of it will be seen in your obedience, in the acts of your lives. *If ye consent and obey, ye shall eat the good things of the land*; that is, you shall take of all that he hath that is convenient for you: for then you are married to him in truth, and have an interest in all his goods." *Dr. Preston's Church's Catechism*.

been his doing of it: and therein his coming to Christ would have been made perfect. When Christ called Levi the publican, when sitting at the receipt of custom, and in the midst of his worldly gains; the closing of Levi's heart with this invitation of his Saviour, to come to him, was manifested, and made perfect, by his actually rising up, leaving all, and following him, Luke v. 27, 28. Christ and other things, are set before us together, for us practically to cleave to one, and forsake the other: in such a case, a practical cleaving to Christ, is a practical *acceptance* of Christ; as much as a beggar's reaching out his hand, and taking a gift that is offered, is his practical acceptance of the gift. Yea, that act of the soul that is in cleaving to Christ for practice, is itself the most perfect coming of the soul to Christ.

Practice is the most proper evidence of *trusting in Christ for salvation*. The proper signification of the word *trust*, according to the more ordinary use of it, both in common speech, and in the holy scriptures, is the emboldening and encouragement of a person's mind, to run some venture in practice, or in something that he does, on the credit of another's sufficiency and faithfulness. And therefore the proper evidence of his trusting, is *the venture he runs in what he does*. He is not properly said to run any venture, in a dependence on any thing, that does nothing on that dependence, or whose practice is no otherwise than if he had no dependence. For a man to run a venture, on a dependence on another, is for him to do something from that dependence, by which he seems to expose himself, and which he would not do, were it not for that dependence. And therefore it is in complying with the difficulties, and seeming dangers of Christian practice, in a dependence on Christ's sufficiency and faithfulness to bestow eternal life, that persons are said to venture themselves upon Christ, and trust in him for happiness and life. They depend on such promises as that, Matth. x. 39. "He that loseth his life for my sake, shall find it." And so they part with all, and venture their all, in a dependence on Christ's sufficiency and truth. And this is the scripture notion of trusting in Christ, in the exercise of a saving faith in him. Thus Abraham, the father of believers, trusted in Christ, and by faith forsook his own country, in a reliance on the covenant of grace God established with him, Heb. xi. 8, 9. Thus also "Moses, by faith refused to be called the son of Pharaoh's daughter, choosing rather to suf-

“fer affliction with the people of God, than to enjoy the pleasures of sin for a season,” Heb. xi. 23, &c. So by *faith*, others exposed themselves to be *stoned and sawn in sunder, or slain with the sword: endured the trial of cruel mockings and scourgings, bonds and imprisonments, and wandered about in sheep-skins and goat-skins, being destitute, afflicted, tormented.* And in this sense the apostle Paul, by *faith*, trusted in Christ, and committed himself to him, venturing himself, and his whole interest, in a dependence on the ability and faithfulness of his Redeemer, under great persecutions, and in suffering the loss of all things; 2 Tim. i. 12, “For the which cause I also suffer these things; nevertheless I am not ashamed: for I know whom I have believed, and I am persuaded that he is able to keep that which I have committed unto him against that day.”

If a man should have word brought him from the king of a distant land, that he intended to make him his heir, if upon receiving the tidings, he immediately leaves his native land, and friends, and all that he has in the world, to go to that country, in a dependence on what he hears; then he may be said to venture himself, and all he has in the world upon it. But if he only sits still, and hopes for the promised benefit, inwardly pleasing himself with the thoughts of it; he cannot properly be said to venture himself upon it; he runs no venture in the case; he does nothing, otherwise than he would do, if he had received no such tidings, by which he would be exposed to any suffering, in case all should fail. So he that on the credit of what he hears of a future world, and in a dependence on the report of the gospel, concerning life and immortality, forsakes all, or does so at least so far as there is occasion, making every thing entirely give place to his eternal interest; he, and he only, may properly be said to venture himself on the report of the gospel. And this is the proper evidence of a true trust in Christ for salvation.

Practice is the proper evidence of a *gracious love*, both to God and men. The texts that plainly teach this, have been so often mentioned already, that it is needless to repeat them.

Practice is the proper evidence of *humility*. That expression and manifestation of humility of heart, which God speaks of, as the great expression of it, that he insists on; that we should look upon as the proper expression and manifestation of it: but this is *walking humbly*; Micah vi. 8. “He hath shewed
“ thee,

“ thee, O man, what is good, and what doth the Lord require of thee, but to do justly, to love mercy, and to walk humbly with thy God?”

This is also the proper evidence of the true *fear of God*. Prov. viii. 13. “The fear of the Lord is to hate evil.” Pſal. xxxiv. 11, &c. “Come ye children, hearken unto me, and I will teach you the fear of the Lord.—Keep thy tongue from evil, and thy lips from ſpeaking guile: depart from evil, and do good; ſeek peace and purſue it.” Prov. iii. 7. “Fear the Lord, and depart from evil.” Prov. xvi. 6. “By the fear of the Lord, men depart from evil.” Job i. 8. “Haſt thou conſidered my ſervant Job—a perfect and an upright man, one that feareth God, and eſcheweth evil?” Chap. ii. 3. “Haſt thou conſidered my ſervant Job—a perfect and an upright man, one that feareth God, and eſcheweth evil? and ſtill he holdeth faſt his integrity, although thou movedſt me againſt him.” Pſal. xxxvi. 1. “The tranſgreſſion of the wicked ſaith within my heart, there is no fear of God before his eyes.”

So practice, in rendering again according to benefits received, is the proper evidence of true *thankfulneſs*. Pſal. cxvi. 12. “What ſhall I render to the Lord, for all his benefits towards me?” 2 Chron. xxxii. 25. “But Hezekiah rendered not again, according to the benefit done unto him.” Paying our vows unto God, and ordering our converſation aright, ſeem to be ſpoken of, as the proper expreſſion and evidence of true thankfulneſs, in the 50th Pſalm, verſ. 14. “Offer unto God thankſgiving, and pay thy vows unto the Moſt High.” verſ. 23. “Whoſo offereth praiſe, glorifieth me: and to him that ordereth his converſation aright, will I ſhew the ſalvation of God.”

So the proper evidence of *gracious deſires and longings*, and that which diſtinguiſhes them from thoſe that are falſe and vain, is, that they are not idle wiſhes and wouldings, like Balaam’s; but effectual in practice, to ſtir up perſons earneſtly and thoroughly to ſeek the things they long for. Pſal. xxvii. 4. “One thing have I deſired of the Lord, that will I ſeek after.” Pſal. lxxiii. 1, 2. “O God, thou art my God, early will I ſeek thee: my ſoul thiſteth for thee, my fleſh longeth for thee in a dry and thirſty land, where no water is, to ſee thy power and thy glory.” verſ. 8. “My ſoul followeth hard after thee.” Cant. i. 4. “Draw me, we will run after thee.”

Practice is the proper evidence of gracious *hope*. 1 John iii. 3. "Every man that hath this hope in him, purifieth himself, even as he is pure." Patient continuance in well-doing, through the difficulties and trials of the Christian course, is often mentioned as the proper expression and fruit of a Christian hope; 1 Theff. i. 3. "Remembering without ceasing your work of faith, and labour of love, and patience of hope." 1 Pet. i. 13, 14. "Wherefore gird up the loins of your mind, be sober, and hope to the end, for the grace that is to be brought unto you, at the revelation of Jesus Christ; as obedient children, &c." Psal. cxix. 166. "Lord, I have hoped in thy salvation, and done thy commandments." Psal. lxxviii. 7. "That they might set their hope in God, and not forget the works of the Lord; but keep his commandments."

A chearful practice of our duty and doing the will of God, is the proper evidence of a truly *holy joy*. If. lxiv. 5. "Thou meetest him that rejoiceth, and worketh righteousness." Psal. cxix. 111, 112. "Thy testimonies have I taken for my heritage for ever; for they are the rejoicing of my heart. I have inclined mine heart to perform thy statutes alway, even unto the end." Vers. 14. "I have rejoiced in the way of thy testimonies, as much as in all riches." 1 Cor. xiii. 6. "Charity rejoiceth not in iniquity, but rejoiceth in the truth." 2 Cor. viii. 2. "The abundance of their joy, abounded unto the riches of their liberality."

Practice also is the proper evidence of Christian *fortitude*. The trial of a good soldier, is not in his chimney corner, but in the field of battle; 1 Cor. ix. 25, 26. 2 Tim. ii. 3, 4, 5.

And as the fruit of holy practice is the chief evidence of the truth of grace; so the degree in which experiences have influence on a person's practice, is the surest evidence of the degree of that which is spiritual and divine in his experiences. Whatever pretences persons may make to great discoveries, great love and joys, they are no further to be regarded, than they have influence on their practice. Not but that allowances must be made for the natural temper. But that does not hinder, but that the degree of grace is justly measured, by the degree of the effect in practice. For the effect of grace is as great, and the alteration as remarkable, in a person of a very ill natural temper, as another. Although a person of such a temper, will not behave himself so well, with the same degree of grace, as another; the diversity from what was before conversion,

may

may be as great; because a person of a good natural temper did not behave himself so ill, before conversion.

Thus I have endeavoured to represent the evidence there is that Christian practice is *the chief* of all the signs of saving grace, And before I conclude this discourse, I would say something briefly, in answer to two objections, that may possibly be made by some, against what has been said upon this head.

Object. 1. Some may be ready to say, this seems to be contrary to that opinion, so much received among good people; that professors should judge of their state, chiefly by their inward experience, and that spiritual experiences are the main evidences of true grace.

I answer, It is doubtless a true opinion, and justly much received among good people, that professors should chiefly judge of their state by their experience. But it is a great mistake, that what has been said is at all contrary to that opinion. The chief sign of grace to the consciences of Christians, being Christian practice, in the sense that has been explained, and according to what has been shewn to be the true notion of Christian practice, is not at all inconsistent with Christian experience being the chief evidence of grace. Christian or holy practice is spiritual practice; and that is not the motion of a body, that knows not how, nor when, nor wherefore it moves: but spiritual practice in man, is the practice of a spirit and body jointly, or the practice of a spirit, animating, commanding and actuating a body, to which it is united, and over which it has power given it by the Creator. And therefore the main thing in this holy practice, is the holy acts of the mind, directing and governing the motions of the body. And the motions of the body are to be looked upon as belonging to Christian practice, only secondarily, and as they are dependent and consequent on the acts of the soul. The exercises of grace that Christians find, or are conscious to, within themselves, are what they *experience* within themselves; and herein therefore lies Christian experience: and this Christian experience, consists as much in those operative exercises of grace in the will, that are immediately concerned in the management of the behaviour of the body, as in other exercises. These inward exercises, are not the less a part of Christian experience, because they have outward behaviour immediately connected with them. A strong act of love to God, is not the less a part of spiritual experience, because it is the act that immediately produces

produces and effects some self denying and expensive outward action, which is much to the honor and glory of God.

To speak of Christian experience and practice, as if they were two things, properly and entirely distinct, is to make a distinction without consideration or reason. Indeed all Christian experience, is not properly called practice; but all Christian practice is properly experience. And the distinction that is made between them, is not only an unreasonable, but an unscriptural distinction. Holy practice is one kind or part of Christian experience; and both reason and scripture represent it as the chief, and most important, and most distinguishing part of it. So it is represented in Jer. xxii. 15, 16. "Did not thy father eat and drink, and do justice and judgment?—He judged the cause of the poor and needy:—was not this to know me? saith the Lord." Our inward acquaintance with God, surely belongs to the head of experimental religion; but this God represents, as consisting chiefly in that experience which there is in holy practice. So the exercises of those graces of the love of God, and the fear of God, are a part of experimental religion; but these the scripture represents as consisting chiefly in practice, in those forementioned texts. 1 John v. 3. "This is the love of God, that we keep his commandments." 2 John 6. "This is love, that we walk after his commandments." Psal. xxxiv. 11, &c. "Come, ye children, and I will teach you the fear of the Lord:—Depart from evil, and do good." Such experiences as these Hezekiah took comfort in chiefly, on his sick-bed; when he said, *Remember, O Lord, I beseech thee, how I have walked before thee in truth, and with a perfect heart.* And such experiences as these, the Psalmist chiefly insists upon, in the 119th Psalm, and elsewhere. Such experiences as these, the apostle Paul mainly insists upon, when he speaks of his experiences in his epistles; as Rom. i. 9. "God is my witness, whom I serve with my spirit in the gospel of his Son."—2 Cor. i. 12. "For our rejoicing is this, the testimony of our conscience, that—by the grace of God, we have had our conversation in the world." Chap. iv. 13. "We having the same spirit of faith, according as it is written, I have believed, and therefore have I spoken: we also believe, and therefore speak." Chap. v. 7. "We walk by faith, not by sight." Vers. 14. "The love of Christ constraineth us." Chap. vi. 4—7. "In all things approving ourselves as the ministers of God, in
" much

" much patience, in afflictions, in necessities, in distresses,—
 " in labours, in watchings, in fastings. By pureness, by know-
 " lege, by kindness, by the Holy Ghost, by love unfeigned,—
 " by the power of God." Gal. ii. 20. " I am crucified with
 " Christ: Nevertheless I live; yet not I, but Christ liveth in
 " me: and the life which I now live in the flesh, I live by the
 " faith of the Son of God." Phil. iii. 7, 8. " But what things
 " were gain to me, those I counted loss for Christ. Yea doubt-
 " less, and I count all things but loss, for the excellency of
 " the knowlege of Christ Jesus my Lord, and do count them
 " but dung that I may win Christ." Col. i. 29. " Whereunto
 " I also labour, striving according to his working, which
 " worketh in me mightily." 1 Theff. ii. 2. " We were bold
 " in our God, to speak unto you the gospel of God with much
 " contention." Vers. 8, 9, 10. " Being affectionately desir-
 " ous of you, we were willing to have imparted unto you, not
 " the gospel of God only, but also our own souls, because ye
 " were dear unto us. For ye remember, brethren, our labour
 " and travail, labouring night and day.—Ye are witnessles, and
 " God also, how holily, and justly, and unblameably we be-
 " haved ourselves among you." And such experiences as
 these they were, that this blessed apostle chiefly comforted him-
 self in the consideration of, when he was going to martyrdom,
 2 Tim. iv. 6, 7. " For I am now ready to be offered, and the
 " time of my departure is at hand. I have fought a good
 " fight, I have finished my course, I have kept the faith."

And not only does the most important and distinguishing
 part of Christian experience, lie in spiritual practice; but such
 is the nature of that sort of exercises of grace, wherein spiritual
 practice consists, that nothing is so properly called by the name
 of *experimental religion*. For that experience which is in these
 exercises of grace, that are found, and prove effectual, at the
 very point of trial, wherein God proves which we will actually
 cleave to, whether Christ or our lusts, are, as has been shown
 already, the proper *experiment* of the truth and power of our
 godliness; wherein its victorious power and efficacy, in produ-
 cing its proper effect, and reaching its end, is found by *expe-*
rience. This is properly Christian experience, wherein the
 saints have opportunity to see, by actual *experience and trial*,
 whether they have a heart to do the will of God, and to forsake
 other things for Christ, or no. As that is called experimental
 philosophy, which brings opinions and notions to the test of

fact; so is that properly called experimental religion, which brings religious affections and intentions to the like test.

There is a sort of external religious practice, wherein is no inward experience; which no account is made of in the sight of God; but it is esteemed good for nothing. And there is what is called experience, that is without practice, being neither accompanied, nor followed with a Christian behaviour; and this is worse than nothing. Many persons seem to have very wrong notions of Christian experience, and spiritual light and discoveries. Whenever a person finds within him, an heart to treat God as God, at the time that he has the trial, and finds his disposition effectual in the experiment, that is the most proper, and most distinguishing experience. And to have at such a time that sense of divine things, that apprehension of the truth, importance and excellency of the things of religion, which then sways and prevails, and governs his heart and hands; this is the most excellent spiritual light, and these are the most distinguishing discoveries. Religion consists much in holy affection; but those exercises of affection which are most distinguishing of true religion, are these practical exercises. Friendship between earthly friends consists much in affection; but yet those strong exercises of affection, that actually carry them through fire and water for each other, are the highest evidences of true friendship.

There is nothing in what has been said, contrary to what is asserted by some sound divines; when they say, that there are no sure evidences of grace, but the acts of grace. For that doth not hinder but that these operative, productive acts, those exercises of grace that are effectual in practice, may be the highest evidences, above all other kinds of acts of grace. Nor does it hinder but that, when there are many of these acts and exercises, following one another in a course, under various trials, of every kind, the evidence is still heightened; as one act confirms another. A man by once seeing his neighbour, may have good evidence of his presence: but by seeing him from day to day, and conversing with him in a course, in various circumstances, the evidence is established. The disciples, when they first saw Christ, after his resurrection, had good evidence that he was alive: but by conversing with him for forty days, and his *showing himself to them alive, by many infallible proofs*, they had yet higher evidence.* The

* "The more these visible exercises of grace are renewed, the more

The witness or seal of the Spirit that we read of, doubtless consists in the effect of the Spirit of God in the heart, in the implantation and exercises of grace there, and so consists in experience. And it is also beyond doubt, that this seal of the Spirit, is the highest kind of evidence of the saints adoption, that ever they obtain. But in these exercises of grace in practice, that have been spoken of, God gives witness, and sets to his seal, in the most conspicuous, eminent, and evident manner. It has been abundantly found to be true in fact, by the experience of the Christian church, that Christ commonly gives, by his Spirit, the greatest and most joyful evidences to his saints of their sonship, in those effectual exercises of grace under trials, which have been spoken of; as is manifest in the full assurance, and unspeakable joys of many of the martyrs. Agreeable to that, 1 Pet. iv. 14. "If ye are reproached for the name of Christ, happy are ye; for the Spirit of glory, and of God resteth upon you." And that in Rom. v. 2, 3. "We rejoice in hope of the glory of God, and glory in tribulations." And agreeable to what the apostle Paul often declares of what he experienced in his trials. And when the apostle Peter, in my text, speaks of the *joy unspeakable, and full of glory*, which the Christians to whom he wrote, experienced; he has respect to what they found under persecution, as appears by the context. Christ's thus manifesting himself, as the friend and saviour of his saints, cleaving to him under trials, seems to have been represented of old, by his coming and manifesting himself, to Shadrach, Meshach, and Abednego, in the furnace. And when

more certain you will be. The more frequently these actings are renewed, the more abiding and confirmed your assurance will be. A man that has been assured of such visible exercises of grace, may quickly after be in doubt, whether he was not mistaken. But when such actings are renewed again and again, he grows more settled and established about his good estate. If a man see a thing once, that makes him sure; but if afterwards he fear he was deceived, when he comes to see it again, he is more sure he was not mistaken. If a man read such passages in a book, he is sure it is so. Some months after, some may bear him down, that he was mistaken, so as to make him question it himself: but when he looks, and reads it again, he is abundantly confirmed. The more mens grace is multiplied, the more their peace is multiplied; 2 Pet. i. 2. "Grace and peace be multiplied unto you, through the knowlege of God and Jesus our Lord." *Stoddard's Way to know sincerity and hypocrisy.*

when the apostle speaks of the witness of the Spirit, in Rom. viii. 15, 16, 17. he has a more immediate respect to what the Christians experienced, in their exercises of love to God, in suffering persecution; as is plain by the context. He is, in the foregoing verses, encouraging the Christian Romans under their sufferings, that though their bodies be dead, because of sin, yet they should be raised to life again. But it is more especially plain by the verse immediately following, vers. 18. "For I reckon, that the sufferings of this present time, are not worthy to be compared with the glory that shall be revealed in us." So the apostle has evidently respect to their persecutions, in all that he says to the end of the chapter. So when the apostle speaks of the *earnest of the Spirit*, which God had given to him, in 2 Cor. v. 5. the context shews plainly that he has respect to what was given him in his great trials and sufferings. And in that promise of *the white stone, and new name, to him that overcomes*, Rev. ii. 17. it is evident Christ has a special respect to a benefit that Christians should obtain, by overcoming, in the trial they had, in that day of persecution. This appears by vers. 13. and many other passages in this epistle to the seven churches of Asia.

Objeſt. 2. Some also may be ready to object against what has been said of Christian practice being the chief evidence of the truth of grace, that this is a *legal* doctrine; and that this making practice a thing of such great importance in religion, magnifies *works*, and tends to lead men to make too much of their *own doings*, to the diminution of the glory of free grace, and does not seem well to consist with that great gospel-doctrine of *justification by faith alone*.

But this objection is altogether without reason. Which way is it inconsistent with the freeness of God's grace, that holy practice should be a sign of God's grace? It is our works being the *price* of God's favour, and not their being the *sign* of it, that is the thing which is inconsistent with the freeness of that favour. Surely the beggar's looking on the money he has in his hands, as a *sign* of the kindness of him who gave it to him, is in no respect inconsistent with the freeness of that kindness. It is his having money in his hand as the price of a benefit, that is the thing which is inconsistent with the free kindness of the giver. The notion of the freeness of the grace of God to sinners, as that is revealed and taught in the gospel, is not that no holy and amiable qualifications or actions in us shall

shall be a fruit, and so a sign of that grace; but that it is not the worthiness or loveliness of any qualification or action of ours which recommends us to that grace; that kindness is shown to the unworthy and unlovely; that there is great excellency in the benefit bestowed, and no excellency in the subject as the price of it; that goodness goes forth and flows out, from the fulness of God's nature, the fulness of the fountain of good, without any amiableness in the object to draw it. And this is the notion of justification without works, (as this doctrine is taught in the scripture,) that it is not the worthiness or loveliness of our works, or any thing in us, which is in any wise accepted with God, as a *balance* for the guilt of sin, or a recommendation of sinners to his acceptance as heirs of life. Thus we are justified only by the righteousness of Christ, and not by our righteousness. And when works are opposed to faith in this affair, and it is said that we are justified by faith and not by works; thereby is meant, that it is not the worthiness or amiableness of our works, or any thing in us, which recommends us to an interest in Christ and his benefits; but that we have this interest only by faith, or by our souls receiving Christ, or adhering to, and closing with him. But that the worthiness or amiableness of nothing in us recommends and brings us to an interest in Christ, is no argument that nothing in us is a sign of an interest in Christ.

If the doctrines of free grace, and justification by faith alone, be inconsistent with the importance of holy practice as a sign of grace; then they are equally inconsistent with the importance of any thing whatsoever in us as a sign of grace, any holiness, or any grace that is in us, or any of our experiences or religion: for it is as contrary to the doctrines of free grace and justification by faith alone, that any of these should be the righteousness which we are justified by, as that holy practice should be so. It is with holy works, as it is with holy qualifications: it is inconsistent with the freeness of gospel-grace, that a title to salvation should be given to men for the loveliness of any of their holy qualifications, as much as that it should be given for the holiness of their works. It is inconsistent with the gospel-doctrine of free grace, that an interest in Christ and his benefits should be given for the loveliness of a man's true holiness, for the amiableness of his renewed, sanctified, heavenly heart, his love to God, and being like God, or his experience of joy in the Holy Ghost, self-emptiness, a spirit to exalt Christ
above

above all, and to give all glory to him, and a heart devoted unto him: I say, it is inconsistent with the gospel-doctrine of free grace, that a title to Christ's benefits should be given out of regard to the loveliness of any of these, or that any of these should be our righteousness in the affair of justification. And yet this does not hinder the importance of these things as evidences of an interest in Christ. Just so it is with respect to holy actions and works. To make light of works, because we be not justified by works, is the same thing in effect, as to make light of all religion, all grace and holiness, yea, true evangelical holiness, and all gracious experience: for all is included, when the scripture says, we are not justified by works: for by works in this case, is meant all our own righteousness, religion, or holiness, and every thing that *is in us*, all the good we do, and all the good which we are conscious of, all external acts, and all internal acts and exercise of grace, and all experiences, and all those holy and heavenly things wherein the life and power, and the very essence of religion do consist, all those great things which Christ and his apostles mainly insisted on in their preaching, and endeavoured to promote, as of the greatest consequence in the hearts and lives of men, and all good dispositions, exercises and qualifications of every kind whatsoever; and even faith itself, considered as a part of our holiness. For we are justified by none of these things: and if we were, we should, in a scripture-sense, be justified by works. And therefore if it be not legal, and contrary to the evangelical doctrine of justification without works, to insist on any of these, as of great importance, as evidences of an interest in Christ; then no more is it thus, to insist on the importance of holy practice. It would be legal to suppose, that holy practice justifies by bringing us to a title to Christ's benefits, as the price of it, or as recommending to it by its preciousness or excellence; but it is not legal to suppose, that holy practice justifies the sincerity of a believer, as the proper evidence of it. The apostle James did not think it legal to say, that *Abraham our father was justified by works*, in this sense. The Spirit that indited the scripture, did not think the great importance and absolute necessity of holy practice, in this respect, to be inconsistent with the freeness of grace; for it commonly teaches them both together; as in Rev. xxi. 6, 7. God says, "I will give unto him that is athirst, of the fountain of the water of life freely;" and then adds, in the very next words, "He that overcometh shall inherit all things."

“ things.” As though behaving well in the Christian race and warfare, were the condition of the promise. So in the next chapter, in the 14th and 15th verses, Christ says, “ Blessed are they that do his commandments, that they may have right to the tree of life, and enter in through the gates into the city:” and then declares in the 15th verse, “ how they that are of a wicked practice” shall be excluded; and yet in the two verses next following, does with very great solemnity, give forth an invitation to all to come and take of the water of life freely; “ I am the root and the offspring of David, the bright and morning-star. And the Spirit and the bride say, come. And let him that heareth, say, come. And let him that is athirst, come: and whosoever will, let him come and take of the water of life freely.” So chap. iii. 20, 21. “ Behold, I stand at the door and knock: If any man hear my voice and open the door, I will come in to him, and sup with him and he with me.” But then it is added in the next words, “ To him that overcometh will I grant to sit with me in my throne.” And in that great invitation of Christ, Matth. xi. latter end, “ Come unto me all ye that labour, and are heavy laden, and I will give you rest;” Christ adds in the next words, “ Take my yoke upon you, and learn of me, for I am meek and lowly in heart: and ye shall find rest unto your souls: for my yoke is easy, and my burden is light:” as though taking the burden of Christ’s service, and imitating his example, were necessary in order to the promised rest. So in that great invitation to sinners to accept of free grace; If. iv. “ Ho, every one that thirsteth, come ye to the waters, and he that hath no money; come ye, buy and eat, yea, come, buy wine and milk without money, and without price:” even there, in the continuation of the same invitation, the sinner’s forsaking his wicked practice is spoken of as necessary to the obtaining mercy; vers. 7. “ Let the wicked forsake his way, and the unrighteous man his thoughts: and let him return unto the Lord, and he will have mercy upon him, and to our God, for he will abundantly pardon.” So the riches of divine grace, in the justification of sinners, is set forth, with the necessity of holy practice, If. i. 16, &c. “ Wash ye, make you clean, put away the evil of your doings from before mine eyes, cease to do evil, learn to do well, seek judgment, relieve the oppressed, judge the fatherless, plead for the widow. Come now, let us reason together, saith the Lord: though

“ though your sins be as scarlet, they shall be as white as snow ;
 “ though they be red like crimson, they shall be as wool.” And
 in that most solemn invitation of Wisdom, Prov. ix. after it is
 represented what great provision is made, and how that all
 things were ready, the house built, the beasts killed, the wine
 mingled, and the table furnished, and the messengers sent forth
 to invite the guests ; then we have the free invitation, vers. 4,
 5, 6. “ Who so is simple, let him turn in hither : as for him that
 “ wanteth understanding, (*i. e.* has no righteousness) the faith
 “ to him, Come, eat of my bread, and drink of the wine which
 “ I have mingled.” But then in the next breath it follows,
 “ Forsake the foolish, and live ; and go in the way of under-
 “ standing :” as though forsaking sin, and going in the way of
 holiness, were necessary in order to life. So that the freeness
 of grace, and the necessity of holy practice, which are thus
 from time to time joined together in scripture, are not inconsis-
 tent one with another. Nor does it at all diminish the honor
 and importance of faith, that the exercises and effects of faith
 in practice, should be esteemed the chief signs of it ; any more
 than it lessens the importance of life, that action and motion
 are esteemed the chief signs of that.

So that in what has been said of the importance of holy prac-
 tice as the main sign of sincerity ; there is nothing legal, nothing
 derogatory to the freedom and sovereignty of gospel-grace, no-
 thing in the least clashing with the gospel-doctrine of justifica-
 tion by faith alone, without the works of the law, nothing in
 the least tending to lessen the glory of the Mediator, and our
 dependence on his righteousness, nothing infringing on the
 special prerogatives of faith in the affair of our salvation, no-
 thing in any wise detracting from the glory of God and his
 mercy, or exalting man, or diminishing his dependence and
 obligation. So that if any are against such an importance of
 holy practice as has been spoken of, it must be only from a
 senseless aversion to the letters and sound of the word *works* ;
 when there is no reason in the world to be given for it, but
 what may be given with equal force, why they should have an
 aversion to the words *holiness, godliness, grace, religion, ex-
 perience*, and even *faith* itself : for to make a righteousness of
 any of these, is as legal, and as inconsistent with the way of
 the new covenant, as to make a righteousness of holy prac-
 tice.*

It

* “ You say you know Christ, and the love and good-will of
 Christ

It is greatly to the hurt of religion, for persons to make light of, and insist little on, those things which the scripture insist most upon, as of most importance in the evidence of our interest in Christ, (under a notion that to lay weight on these things is legal, and an old covenant-way;) and so to neglect the exercises, and effectual operations of grace in practice, and insist almost wholly on discoveries, and the method and manner of the immanent exercises of conscience and grace in contemplation; depending on an ability to make nice distinctions in these matters, and a faculty of accurate discerning in them, from philosophy or experience. It is in vain to seek for any better, or any further signs, than those that the scriptures have most expressly mentioned, and most frequently insisted on, as signs of godliness. They who pretend to a greater accuracy in giving signs, or by their extraordinary experience, or insight into the nature of things, to give more distinguishing marks, which shall more thoroughly search out, and detect the hypocrite, are but subtil to darken their own minds, and the minds of others; their refinings, and nice discerning, are in God's sight, but refined foolishness, and sagacious delusion. Here are applicable those words of Agur, Prov. xxx. 5, 6. "Every word of God is pure; he is a shield to them that put their trust in him: add thou not unto his words, lest he reprove

R r r

" thee,

Christ towards you, and that he is the propitiation for your sins. How do you know this? "He that saith I know him, and keepeth not his commandments, is a liar," 1 John ii. 4. True, might some reply, he that keeps not the commands of Christ, hath thereby a sure evidence that he knows him not, and that he is not united to him; but is this any evidence that we do know him, and that we are united to him, if we do keep his commandments? Yes verily, saith the apostle, "Hereby we do know that we know him, if we keep his commandments." And again, vers. 5. "Hereby know we that we are in him." What can be more plain? What a vanity is it to say, that this is running upon a covenant of works?—O beloved, it is a sad thing to hear such questions, and such cold answers also, that sanctification possibly may be an evidence. May be? Is it not certain? Assuredly to deny it, is as bad as to affirm that God's own promises of favour are not sure evidences thereof, and consequently that they are lies and untruths.—Our Saviour, who was no legal preacher, pronounceth, and consequently evidenceth blessedness, by eight or nine promises, expressly made to such persons, as had inherent graces, Matth. v. 3, 4, &c." *Shepard's Sound B. li. over,* p. 221, 222, 223.

“ thee, and thou be found a liar.” Our wisdom and discerning, with regard to the hearts of men, is not much to be trusted. We can see but a little way into the nature of the soul, and the depths of man’s heart. The ways are so many whereby persons’ affections may be moved without any supernatural influence, the natural springs of the affections are so various and so secret, so many things have oftentimes a joint influence on the affections, the imagination, (and that in ways innumerable and unsearchable,) natural temper, education, the common influences of the Spirit of God, a surprising concurrence of affecting circumstances, an extraordinary coincidence of things in the course of mens thoughts, together with the subtil management of invisible malicious spirits; that no philosophy or experience will ever be sufficient to guide us safely through this labyrinth and maze, without our closely following the clue which God has given us in his word. God knows his own reasons why he insists on some things, and plainly sets them forth as the things that we should try ourselves by, rather than others. It may be it is because he knows that these things are attended with less perplexity, and that we are less liable to be deceived by them than others. He best knows our nature; and he knows the nature and manner of his own operations; and he best knows the way of our safety: he knows what allowances to make for different states of his church, and different tempers of particular persons, and varieties in the manner of his own operations, how far nature may resemble grace, and how far nature may be mixed with grace, what affections may rise from imagination, and how far imagination may be mixed with spiritual illumination. And therefore it is our wisdom not to take his work out of his hands; but to follow him, and lay the stress of the judgment of ourselves there, where he has directed us. If we do otherwise, no wonder if we are bewildered, confounded, and fatally deluded. But if we had got into the way of looking chiefly at those things, which Christ and his apostles and prophets chiefly insisted on, and so in judging of ourselves and others, chiefly regarding practical exercises and effects of grace, not neglecting other things; it would be of manifold happy consequence; it would above all things tend to the conviction of deluded hypocrites, and to prevent the delusion of those whose hearts were never brought to a thorough compliance with the strait and narrow way which leads to life; it would tend to deliver us from innumerable perplexities, arising from the various incon-

sistent

sistent schemes there are about methods and steps of experience; it would greatly tend to prevent professors neglecting strictness of life, and tend to promote their engagedness and earnestness in their Christian walk; and it would become fashionable for men to shew their Christianity, more by an amiable distinguished behaviour, than by an abundant and excessive declaring their experiences; and we should get into the way of appearing lively in religion, more by being lively in the service of God and our generation, than by the liveliness and forwardness of our tongues, and making a business of proclaiming on the housetops, with our mouths, the holy and eminent acts and exercises of our own hearts; and Christians that are intimate friends, would talk together of their experiences and comforts, in a manner better becoming Christian humility and modesty, and more to each others profit; their tongues not running before, but rather going behind their hands and feet, after the prudent example of the blessed apostle, 2 Cor. xii. 6. and many occasions of spiritual pride would be cut off; and so a great door shut against the devil; and a great many of the main stumbling-blocks against experimental and powerful religion would be removed; and religion would be declared and manifested in such a way, that instead of hardening spectators, and exceedingly promoting infidelity and atheism, would above all things tend to convince men that there is a reality in religion, and greatly awaken them, and win them, by convincing their consciences of the importance and excellency of religion. Thus the light of professors would so shine before men, that others seeing their good works, would glorify their Father which is in heaven.

T H E E N D.

A TABLE of the CONTENTS of the foregoing TREATISE.

A.

AFFECTIONS, what they are, page 122, 123. Religion consists much in them, 119, &c. This appears from their nature, 125, 126. from their being very much the spring of mens actions, 127. from fact and experience, 129. from the holy scriptures, 129—133. from religion's being summarily comprehended in love, 133, 134. from instances of the most eminent saints in scripture, 135, &c. from the example of Christ, 138, &c. from the religion of heaven, 140. from the design of ordinances, 141. from the nature of hardness of heart, 143, &c.

Affections religious, very high sometimes from impressions on the imagination, 182, &c. Such means to be desired as tend to excite them, 149. We have reason to be ashamed that we have no more of them, 150. Prejudices against them, 148. How in the saints in heaven, 140. *False*, their pernicious tendency, 149.

It is no sign that *religious affections* are gracions or otherwise, that they are great, 153, &c. that they have great bodily effects, 157, &c. that they cause persons to abound in religious talk, 160, &c. that persons did not make them themselves, 163, &c. that they come with texts of scripture, 168, &c. that there is an appearance of love in them, 171, &c. that they come in a certain order, 177, &c. that they dispose persons to abound in duties of worship, 189, &c. that they dispose persons to abound in external praise, 192, &c. that they make

persons exceeding confident, 194, &c. that they beget great charity in others, 208, &c.

Affections gracions, arise from a spiritual influence, 229, &c. are founded in the excellent nature of divine things, as they are in themselves, 267, &c. primarily founded in the moral excellency of divine things, 281, &c. arise from spiritual understanding, 294, &c. from a spiritual conviction of the judgment, 320, &c. attended with evangelical humiliation, 340, &c. attended with a change of nature, 370, &c. attended with the lamb-like, dove-like temper of Christ, 375, &c. effect a Christian tenderness of spirit, 389, &c. in a beautiful symmetry and proportion, 396, &c. attended with spiritual appetites and longings, 420, &c. have their exercise and fruit in Christian practice, 427, &c.

Affections of hypocrites, all from self-love, 280. disproportionate and monstrous, 183, &c. unstable, 291. flow most before company, 294. why sometimes so high, 186, &c.

Appetites. See *Longings*.

Application particular, of promises, what is, and what is not spiritual, 250, 251.

Assurance, is ordinarily attainable, 194. a true one not enjoyed in corrupt frames, 201. cannot be maintained only on old experiences, 205. not desirable in ill frames, *ibid.* how to be obtained, 220. goes not before a faith of dependence, 248. a true one, its concomitants, 396.

Attainments in religion, the higher not without the lower, 400.

Attributes

A T A B L E

Attributes of God, natural and moral, how distinguished, 283.

Awakenings. See Convictions.

B.

B*acksliding*, what kinds of it are evidences of hypocrisy, page 422.

Belief of the truth of divine things. See Conviction. From education only, vain, 324. from history and ancient monuments only, insufficient, 332. what may arise from impressions on the imagination, 337. what may arise from a false hope, 340.

Benevolence, the character of all true Christians, 384, 385.

Bodily effects through the affections of the soul, 123, &c. no sign to distinguish affections, 157, &c.

Baldness for Christ, true and counterfeit, 380. holy, in prayer, a false notion of it corrected, 391.

C.

C*ALL* of Christ inward, a false notion of it refuted, 248.

Change of nature, attends gracious affections, 370.

Children. See Little.

Christian spirit, wherein it especially consists, 375, &c.

Clear work of grace, what is, and what is not justly so called, 188.

Common illumination, how it differs from spiritual understanding, 304, &c.

Communion with God, what the phrase imports, 227. a false notion of it, as though carried on by impulses, 250.

Confidence, strong, no sign to distinguish affections, 194, &c. why so great in hypocrites, 199. false, its boisterousness and violence, *ibid.* often arises from im-

pulses and supposed revelations, 200. is maintained in hypocrites in wicked frames and ways, 201.

Conversion, why called a being born again, created anew, raised from the dead, &c. 229, &c. how often renewed, 373.

Convictions, precede comfort, 177. some are counterfeit and only from imagination, 181. and terrors, not the same, 182. no certain sign of conversion, 186. increased by grace, 199. how from the Spirit of God, 233. why when great seem small, 363.

Conviction spiritual of truth, what it is, 325, &c. attends gracious affections, 320. its counterfeits, 323, &c.

Corruption more than grace in the best saints, 353.

D.

D*evil*, his subtilty in mingling his works with God's, page 147.

Discerning certainly the state of others, none have such a gift 209.

Discoveries, of God's glory, when true, begin with a sense of the beauty of his moral perfection, 285. In what respects natural men may have great discoveries of God, 290. how common discoveries of God may excite joy and praise, 293. true, reveal the corruption of the heart, 354. false, hide corruption, 200. spiritual, all transforming, 370. and illuminations, the ill consequence of judging chiefly by them of others state, 388.

Divine, how gracious qualities are so, 226.

Divine nature, how saints are partakers of it, 227.

Doubting of saints concerning their state, what are often the causes of it,

it, 210. not the same with the sin of unbelief, 211. profitable in ill frames, *ibid.*

Duties of worship, no sign to distinguish affections, 189, &c.

E.

E *Arrest of the Spirit*, what it is, 264.

Earnestness in religion necessary to salvation, 418.

Enthusiasm, wherein it consists in all its varieties of operation, 314.

Error may be the occasion of a gracious exercise, 216.

Evidence of the truth of the gospel, internal, what, 320, &c. external, its use, 338. that which is the ground of a saving belief is more than a mere probability, 334. and is as it were intuitive, 321, &c. and is chiefly internal, 189, &c.

Excellency of divine things as in themselves, the first ground of gracious affections, 267, &c.

Exercises of grace, immanent and practical, 458, &c.

Experience Christian, not properly distinguished from practice, 486, &c. how the best evidence of a good estate, *ibid.*

Experimental religion, spiritual practice most properly so called, 488.

Extremes, how the devil drives to them, 146.

F.

F *AITH*, is never without spiritual light and sight, 202. and *sight*, how they differ, *ibid.* is not a believing our state to be good, 205. is not a believing the promises are made to us in particular, 250. false, makes Christ the minister of sin, 390.

Fear of God, the temper of true

Christians, 393. attends a true Christian hope, 395.

Fear servile, and love, one decays as the other prevails, 207, &c.

Feelings, inward, 163.

Feeling others talk of their experiences, no certain sign of their grace, 211.

First work, many hypocrites live upon it and indulge their sloth, 423, &c.

Forgiving spirit, the spirit of all true Christians, 385.

Fortitude Christian, the nature of it, 380.

Frames, living upon them, 208.

Fruit, is that by which chiefly we must judge of others, 213. See *Practice*.

G.

G *OOD*, See *Moral*.

Grace, counterfeit, its great resemblance of true, 209. saving, differs from common in nature and kind, 232. in what respects it does so, 236. true, the nature of it to think itself comparatively small, 350. less than corruption in the best, 355. how an abiding principle of nature, 370.

Graces all have their counterfeits, 171, &c.

Gratitude, sometimes merely from natural principles, 271, &c. gracious, how it differs from common, 275.

H.

H *Ardness* of heart, irreligious consists much in it, 143. an effect of false affections, 389, &c.

Holiness, the immediate object of a spiritual sense and appetite, 287. the primary objective ground of gracious affections, 284, &c. the beauty of all intelligent beings, 286. the beauty of all nature

A T A B L E

ral perfections, 287. the beauty of all divine things, *ibid.* of God, in scripture, comprehends all his moral perfections, 285, &c.

Hope true, assaulted by Satan, 199. discovers corruption, *ibid.* increases conviction of sin, *ibid.* has greater influence to make the conscience tender than fear of hell, 391. attended with godly fear, 397. prevails and decays with love, 207.

Hope of hypocrites, not assaulted by Satan, 199. hides the corruption of the heart, and puts an end to convictions, 200. not shaken by their wickedness, 201. emboldens them in sin, 389. often from impulses, 198.

Humiliation legal, usually precedes the first comfort, 177. its nature, and how it differs from evangelical, 341. there are counterfeits of it, 181. why persons under this work, seldom know it in the time of it, 364.

Humiliation evangelical, (see Humility,) what it is, and how it differs from legal, 341. attends all gracious affections, 340, &c. the most difficult part of self-denial, 344. hypocrites make great pretences to it, but make an awkward shew of it, 345.

Humility, (see Humiliation) the notes of it, 350. disposes persons to think their grace small, 352. especially disposes persons to think their humility small, 365, &c. a humble behaviour described, 367.

Hypocrites, their great resemblance of true saints, 171, &c. often very forward and positive in determining others state, 213. of two sorts, by some called *legal* and *evangelical*, 200. why they talk much about themselves and their experiences, 279. their reli-

gion disproportionate and monstrous, 397, &c. their instability, 416. deficient as to secret religion, 418. their earnestness in seeking Christ and grace abates after their supposed conversion, 423, &c.

I.

I*magination*, what it is, 242. by this only Satan has access to the soul, 317.

Impressions on the imagination, what they are, 242. they are nothing spiritual, 242, &c. not above the power of Satan, 247. often mistaken for spiritual discoveries, and why, 243. sometimes attend spiritual experiences, 248. often cause great affections, *ibid.*, &c. cause counterfeit convictions of sin, 181. affections founded on them not gracious, 248, &c. there is nothing of the nature of spiritual light in them, 296. all kinds of enthusiasm consist in them, 315. by these mainly the devil confounds happy revivals of religion, 317. what persuasion of the truth may arise from them, 338, &c.

Impulses, or seeming revelations, no spiritual effects, 253, &c. often seem to reveal things that persons are most fondly desirous of, 200. the ground of the hope of many hypocrites, *ib.* &c. occasion high and tumultuous affections, 251, &c. they that follow them, tho' coming with texts of scripture, add to the word of God, 252. with texts of scripture, no more spiritual than others, 255, &c. affections founded on them not gracious, *ibid.*

Indwelling of the Spirit, 232.

Joy of the hypocrite, in himself, and how, 279. without reverence, 288. without mourning for sin, *ib.*

Joy of a saint, not primarily founded in an apprehension of
God's

of the CONTENTS.

God's love to him, 276. attended with godly fear, 394. attended with godly sorrow, 394, &c.

Judging positively of others state, the best of men insufficient for it, 208, &c.

Justification by faith alone, what use of works is, and what is not inconsistent with it, 492, &c.

K.

K *Knowledge*. See *Understanding*. *Knops* and flowers in the golden candlestick, 434.

L.

L *AMB-like*, dove-like spirit attends gracious affections, 375.

Law, a work of it precedes comfort, 177.

Leading of the Spirit, the nature of it, 309.

Legal doctrine, a wrong notion of it corrected, 492, &c.

Legal spirit, some that exclaim most against it are the most guilty of it, 346. what it is, 344. a subtil thing, 345.

Little children, in what respects the faints are as such, 350, &c.

Lively Christians, what are the proper evidences of such, 497.

Living by faith, not by sight, 202.

Living on experiences and frames, and not on Christ, a false and mischievous notion of it, 202, &c. when persons may truly be said to do so, 202, &c.

Longings religious, strangely disproportionate in hypocrites, 402. Affections of hypocrites extinguish them, 424. in faints are higher as their attainments are higher, 420, &c. gracious, how distinguished, 426.

Love, the sum of all religion, 133. how all other religious affections flow from it, 134, &c. is the spirit of adoption, 207. appearances of it without grace,

171. all is not from self-love, 267. and fear cast out one another, 207. drawn out to another as a saint, no certain sign he is so, 211.

Love to God, true, not originally from self-love, 268, &c. how natural men have some kind of it, 269, &c. in the faints, not first founded on a persuasion that God loves them, 273, &c. True, is primarily for God's holiness, 281, &c. attended with love to men, 399. is more powerful to promote earnest seeking of God and grace, than legal fear, 425.

Love to men, the temper of all true Christians, 279. attends love to God, 399. in hypocrites partial and confined, *ibid.* True, is to both soul and body, 400.

M.

M *Ajesty* and greatness of God, there may be a great sight of it and nothing spiritual, 292.

Meekness, the temper of every Christian, 375.

Melancholic persons, why, remarkably subject to Satanic suggestions, 318.

Mercy, the temper of all true Christians, 385. gracious, is exercised both to mens souls and bodies, 399.

Method of experiences. See *Order*.

Mocking of God, how hypocrites are guilty of it, 464.

Moral good and evil, how distinguished from natural, 282. Excellency. See *Holiness*.

N.

N *atural*. See *Temper*. *Natural* and moral perfections of God, how distinguished, 282.

Natural good and evil, all that is seen in common illuminations and convictions, 304.

Natural men, who are so called in scripture, 229, &c. how they

A T A B L E

may experience that which is new and surprizing, 239. how they may love virtue and hate vice, 305.

Natural perfections of God, there may be a great sight of them without grace, 292, &c. Saints see them in a better manner than natural men, 294. A sight of them causes legal humiliation, 341.

O.

Obedience of the saints, universal, 427, &c. of hypocrites, not universal and persevering, 436, &c. See *Practice*.

Order of experiences, no sign that distinguishes them, 177, &c. Want of sensible distinctness in it, no certain sign that persons are not converted, 187, &c.

P.

Perseverance in Christian practice, in all true saints, 427, &c. All natural men fail of, 434, &c.

Pharaoh, his behaviour like that of hypocrites, 439.

Poverty of spirit, the nature of it, 367.

Power of godliness, wherein it appears, 125, &c.

Practice, is that chiefly by which we must judge of others, 212.

Practice Christian, the nature of it, 427, &c. a sign of gracious affections, *ibid.*, &c. consists not only in negatives, 430. the work a Christian is devoted to, *ibid.* Saints persevere in it, 431, &c. closely connected with grace, 432 found only in true saints, 436. the chief sign of grace to others, 208, &c. Arguments to prove it the chief sign of grace to others, 441. how it is to be taken as the chief sign of grace to others, 447. how far it may be visible to others, 453. can be no infallible sign of grace to others, 455. a sure evi-

dence of grace to mens own consciences, *ibid.* in what sense it is so, 456, &c. the chief evidence of grace to the conscience, 461. external and internal, 457. grace made perfect in it, 470, &c. an evidence of grace chiefly insisted on in scripture, 472. spoken of as the greatest evidence in scripture, 474. the chief evidence made use of at the day of judgment, 477. the chief sign of each particular grace, 481. the best evidence of the degree of grace, 487. how Christian experience does especially consist in it, *ibid.* the great consequence of insisting much upon it as a sign of grace, 496, &c. See *Works. Obedience*.

Praising God with the mouth, being much in it no sign to distinguish affections, 192, &c.

Preaching pathetic, profitable, 149.

Pride spiritual, how hard to be mortified, 344, &c. the same with a legal spirit, 347. commonly attended with a great conceit of, and pretensions to humility and self-emptiness, 348, &c. how secret and subtil, 349. how it may be discovered, *ibid.* makes persons apt to think highly of their attainments in religion, *ibid.*, &c. Many hypocrites take it up in exchange for profaneness and sensuality, 344.

Principles spiritual and natural, what intended thereby, 231.

Profession of Christianity, what belongs to it, 448. how far to be made use of in our judging of others goodness, 447, &c.

Professors bright, often come to nothing, 210.

Promises, the manner of their coming to the mind, not the ground of true faith, 247. absolute, made to a particular person
not

not the ground of the first act of faith, 249. how spoken to particular saints, 252.

Quintessence of spiritual affections entirely diverse from all that natural men can conceive of, 231. R.

Relation of experiences, no certain manifestation of another's state, 208, &c. how far requisite in order to others charity, 451.

Religion false, its bad consequences, 149.

Revelations. See *Impulses.*

Reverence. See *Fear.*

S.

Sanctification progressive, how a continued work of conversion, 372.

Satisfying nature of spiritual enjoyments explained, 422.

Scripture, does not reveal to particular persons their good estate, except by consequence, 204, &c. a confused notion about its spiritual meaning confuted, 307. how strictly to be regarded as our rule with respect to signs of grace, 474, &c. See *Word of God.*

Seal of the Spirit, what it is, 258. See *Witness.*

Secret religion, the delight of all true saints, 418.

Seeking and striving after Christ and grace abates in hypocrites after supposed conversion, but increases after true conversion, 423.

Self-denial, wherein it consists, 443. Sincere godliness very much consists in it, 430.

Self-examination, not the chief means of assurance, 227.

Self-love, not the foundation of all other love, 268. not the first ground of gracious affections, *ib.* &c. The way in which it may be the ground of a sort of love to God

ib. how it may have a hand in true love to God, 273. how it may have a hand in the joy of true saints, 276.

Sense a new spiritual one, in the regenerate, 230, the beauty of holiness its immediate object, 287.

Sense of heart, how it differs from speculative knowledge, 300.

Slibboleth, what is the true one to distinguish saints from hypocrites, 214.

Signs of grace, what is and what is not to be expected from them, 224, &c. None will satisfy saints that are low in grace, and in ill frames, 204, &c.

Sin, its infinite evil, 356.

Sorrow for sin, attends the comforts of true saints, 397. when true is chiefly for mens own sins, 401.

Spirit and temper persons are of, we should judge more by it of the state persons are in, than by illuminations and discoveries, 388.

Spirit of bondage and adoption, what they are, 207. how they cast out one another, *ibid.*, &c.

Spirit of God, how it influences the minds of natural men, 231, &c. is the sum of the inheritance Christ has purchased, 263.

Spiritual, what the ordinary meaning of the epithet in scripture. 229, &c. how the saints and their peculiar qualities are so called, *ibid.*, &c.

Spiritual meaning. See *Scripture.*

Spiritual, supernatural, and divine influences distinguish gracious affections, *ibid.*, &c.

Spiritual pride. See *Pride.*

Supernatural, how gracious qualities are so, 236.

Symmetry and proportion in gracious affections, 396.

T.

TALK, much and earnest, no sign to distinguish affections,

160, &c. of experiences, there is an excess in it, 162. of hypocrites, why so much about themselves and their own experiences, 179.

Taste of the mind, spiritual, its immediate object is the beauty of holiness, 288, of actions, 311. natural, what it is, *ibid.*

Testing the love of Christ, what is falsely so called, 243, &c.

Temper natural, the effect of grace with respect to it, and what allowances must be made for it, 371, &c.

Tenderness of heart, how much true religion consists in it, 143. how a sign of gracious affection, 389, &c.

Terrors, not the same with *convictions*, of conscience, 182. great, no sign of true comfort following, *ibid.*

Texts of scripture coming suddenly and remarkably to the mind, no sign to distinguish affections 168, &c. This no spiritual effect, 249. Affections founded on this effect not gracious, 250, &c. Affections founded on this way of the coming of texts, not properly excited by the word of God, 252. High affections sometime arising hence, 250. the manner in which many are deluded by this, 252, &c. this is no immediate testimony from God, *ibid.*

Travailing for souls, when to be suspected, 399. in true saints is chiefly in secret places. 405.

Trials, what they are, 432. why the difficulties of religion are so called, 464, &c. professors in general meet with them, 433, &c. the main proof of the state of professors, 464, &c.

Trusting God in the dark, 202, &c. in Christ for salvation, the true notion of it, 483.

U.

U*nderstanding*, spiritual, there is such a thing, 298. wherein

it consists, *ibid.* difference between it and common illumination, 304, &c. does not consist in a revelation of new propositions, 307. does not consist in opening the mystical meaning of the parables and allegories of scripture, 308. does not consist in immediate revelation of duties required, *ib.* the foundation of all gracious affections and exercises of mind, 202, &c. the various counterfeits of it, 315. how it differs from speculative knowledge, 302. causes a person to think he knows but little, 353, &c. the importance and extent of it, 304. of the scripture, its nature, 308.

Union vital, between Christ and believers, its nature, 229.

W.

W*itness of the Spirit that we are the children of God*, falsely supposed to be of the nature of a revelation, 202, &c. what it is, *ibid.* Vain affections from a false notion of it, 255, &c. what is said of it, Rom. viii. 16. explained, 264. especially given in spiritual practice, 269.

Witness immediate of God's love to a particular person, not the ground of first faith, 248.

Witnesses of the truth of the gospel, how the saints are so, 334.

Word of God, added to by those that follow impulses, though with texts of scripture, 251, &c. See *Scripture*.

Works. See *Practice*. What improvement of them is inconsistent with grace, and what is not, 492, &c.

Worship. See *Duties*.

Z.

Z*EAL*, Christian, the nature of it, 383. chiefly against mens own sins, 384. false, not against sin in general, 297.